

THE MAGUS ERA

BOOK 19

Blood Red

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Magus Era

(巫神纪)

by

Blood Red

(血红)

Synopsis

Long ago, there were people who stood upon the earth with their heads held high. They never bowed to anyone because of their indomitable spirit. They were capable of controlling wind and lightning, and conquering dragons and serpents. They seemed strong enough to split the earth and shatter the stars with their fists. They traveled throughout the land and called themselves Magi. Eventually, one of them would become a Supreme Magus! These men are the ancestors of human beings. Their blood is what we all share today.

Qing Long is the former strongest man in the world. He traveled through space and time and was reborn as Ji Hao in the Fire Crow Clan of the Southern Wasteland. It's a complicated world. Forces from both inside and outside of the clan want this young and talented boy to die. Under great pressure, Ji Hao makes a deal with a mysterious man, who resides in his spiritual space, never showing his real face. He gains two drops of blood from a dragon and phoenix. Afterwards, Ji Hao becomes increasingly more powerful.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Law @ Qidian International

Translation Edit by Hitesh_ @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1801: Dragon and Devil Together

"Amma, shall we catch him up?" Shixin put his mouth near Dragon Mother's ear and asked extra carefully.

"Catch your life!" This time, Dragon Mother didn't hit Shixin with her hand. Instead, she kicked on Shixin's lower leg and generated a loud 'crack'. The scales on Shixin's lower leg shattered immediately while his leg curved into a very strange shape.

Ignoring Shixin, whose face was twitching in pain, Dragon Mother turned around and smilingly gazed at Pu Ban City, then said, "Boys, follow me. We can't fight with nothing in return. They need to give us all that we deserve."

In the air, hundreds of dragon elders, countless dragon warriors, and the vast troop of water-kind warriors tremblingly kneeled on the clouds and kowtowed to the Dragon Mother. She smilingly nodded, seeming to be in a good mood. She glanced at those water-kind warriors and waved her hand while saying, "Hmm, you all are good boys... good... Later on, pick the fleshiest dragon whale, slice it finely, dress with wasabi and old vinegar, and then serve it to me. How many years has it been since I tasted that?"

The dragon elders and dragon warriors were shocked, and the faces of all water-kind warriors paled. Countless shrimp and crab warriors tremblingly turned around and glanced at the group of dragon whales, who were very outstanding among water-kind warriors because of their giant bodies.

Since the ancient time, dragon whales had been serving as high-grade commanders in the dragon army, because they were enormous in size, especially strong, and having great defensive powers. They were respected and admired by uncountable water-kind warriors.

Nevertheless, Dragon Mother actually liked to eat them!

The group of Dragon Whale commanders raised their heads, their faces awfully paled. With panic, they cast their eyes to those dragon elders. 'Fleshy'? Every dragon whale was strong enough to be labeled as 'fleshy'...These dragon whale commanders nearly fainted when they saw those dragon elders nod hurriedly!

Dragon Mother chuckled and pointed at the group of pale-faced whale dragon commanders, then laughed, "Remember, slice the meat finely and then serve it to me. As for the heart, liver, marrow, brain, and other parts, these nine boys of mine each have their preference. You cook it well, then serve those parts to my boys...Eh, dragon whales are shrinking with each generation. Look at these dragon whale boys, so skinny, huh? They don't look like their ancestors at all, do they?"

Turned around, she trod on the golden cloud and flew swiftly towards Pu Ban City with her nine boys.

The dragon elders shouted resonantly and marshaled the dragon army, followed behind Dragon Mother and her boys. In this formidable army, the faces of all water-kind warriors had paled, especially those dragon whales. They looked around with dazzling eyes, seemingly preparing to run away at any time.

Under the order of a dragon elder, a group of dragon warriors showed up around these dragon whale commanders and silently followed them, eyes filled with coldness and mercilessness. The hearts of these dragon whale commanders were cold as ice.

Earlier, Ji Hao slaughtered a big half of the group of priests on the scene. At the moment, the surviving priests also followed behind Dragon Mother. Waves of soul energy had been shuttling between them, as they had been communicating through a secret magic. Their faces were all badly darkened. They clearly hated Ji Hao to the bone, and were coming up with a plan.

In Emperor Xun's palace, the moment Dragon Mother walked down from her golden cloud, Emperor Xun walked up and

welcomed her with a bright grin.

He was wearing a peacock feather skirt, having his upper body bared and looking like a ruttish pheasant. Grinning from ear to ear, Emperor Xun reached his hands to Dragon Mother and said, "Elder, welcome, welcome... Our humankind..."

Before he finished, his arms were suddenly broken. Hearing the clear bone-cracking noises, the numberless human ministers in the palace changed the expressions on their faces. Emperor Xun shrieked hoarsely in pain and fell to the ground, rolling and crying as loud as he could, his face covered in tears.

Dragon Mother smiled while looking at Emperor Xun, who was rolling on the floor, and said slowly, "You evil little thing, how dare you think about me in that way? You fragile little snake, can you even survive me? Hah, you human beings have also been getting weaker and weaker with each generation. In the ancient time, some of you were remarkable. But, how come the current human emperor is such a loser?"

A Gong Sun Family elder walked out and looked at Dragon Mother with a frown as he hollered, "Dragon Mother, anyhow, Emperor Xun is the human..."

Boom!

No one clearly saw Dragon Mother's moved, but the Gong Sun Family elder's head suddenly exploded. Blood and brain splashed all over the ground. While slowly licking the sticky blood on her fingernails, Dragon Mother said, "Ah, because he's the human emperor, I didn't kill him. But you little things...You aren't human emperors, and killing you is no trouble!"

The palace fell into a dead silence. Emperor Xun was frightened so badly by this sudden and unreasonable slaughter that even a half of his body turned numb.

Emperor Xun gingerly stood up and tremblingly looked at

Dragon Mother as he squeezed a smile out of his face and said, "Elder, you..."

Dragon Mother ignored Emperor Xun. Instead, she waved her hand and said, "Cut the crap. Old friend, I'm here, so why're you still hiding?"

"In the old days, I fought a bloody war for you when you were sealed. If I didn't help you that time, that old b*stard Dragon Ancestor wouldn't have his mind made up to imprison me for so many years. How come you don't even dare to show your face now?"

Emperor Xun's eyes suddenly turned dark. Strands of evil power were released from his pores, while a stream of dark mist rose from his head. The dark mist gathered into a black, mushroom-shaped cloud, as Original Devil's upper body popped up from the cloud.

"Dragon Mother, long time no see. You're as brutal as before..." He nodded to Dragon Mother and began talking with a dry, hissing voice, "I suddenly have a good idea. The dragon ancestor may be dead, or gone somewhere. You're alone now, and I have never married. Why don't we make a couple...Hehe!"

Dragon Mother curved her red lips downwards, threw a glimpse at Original Devil, and said, "I have no interest in a 'man' like you who hasn't even found all pieces of his own body...The dragon ancestor is hateful indeed, but you're truly no better than him. Cut the crap. The three 'Peng' and you spent so many efforts to free me because you wanted me to do nothing more than that small thing."

Snorting coldly, dragon mother continued blandly, "I'll set you free from the humankind, but you, Original Devil, have to promise me that, we, dragons, will rule the world from this day on. I, Dragon Mother, will be the supreme being in Pan Gu world, and I will dominate all the other creatures...On this one condition, we can negotiate anything. But, if you don't accept it...

Original Devil laughed and responded with his dry voice, "Dragons rule the world, good! Why wouldn't I want that? Dragons, human beings, phoenixes are all my descendants. Any of them can rule this world!"

Dragon Mother raised her right hand, and so did Original Devil, then clapped their hands loudly.

Along with a thunderous boom, Emperor Xun's palace vanished silently. Dragon Mother slightly trembled, while tens of small holes suddenly appeared on Original Devil's body. They exchanged a glance and both laughed out loud.

Chapter 1802: Dragon Mother's Story

In heaven, Ji Hao and Mr. Crow had been walking quickly through a series of paths and corridors. About ten Gold Crow guards followed closely behind him while looking around curiously.

The palaces in this area were designed in an ancient style. Every tile and brick seemed to be telling the long history of the heaven. A faint divine light shone from the brickwork joints. Every inch of space in this area was filled with countless secret divine seals, that any outsider would die immediately if he or she approached it.

Ji Hao was a divine god, and had powerful treasures like the golden bridge, but still, he was only allowed to walk with his feet in this area, without daring to fly through the space. After all, this was the most important, core area of the heaven. The palace in this area was called 'Wisdom Star Palace'. All scriptures, history books, annals, and secret records were kept in this place.

"I've read almost every secret record in the Magi Palace and found nothing about Dragon Mother and her nine sons." While pushing open the front gate of the Wisdom Star Palace, Ji Hao laughed to Mr. Crow, "I guess, same like the records about Priest Hua and Priest Mu, their records are only open to a very small number of top-grade human leaders, or have been destroyed by some ancient human leaders on purposes."

"But, since the world was created and the heaven was formed, everything that happened in this world is recorded in this Wisdom Star Palace." Ji Hao walked into the palace. While moving between the thousands of meters tall bookshelves, he swiftly scanned across the jade name tags on each shelf with his great spirit power. "Dragon Mother was so powerful. There has to be a record of her in the heaven."

Dragon Mother moved as fast as lightning, that even Ji Hao

couldn't see her movements clearly. Her strength was terrifyingly great, that even the Pan Gu bell was pressured by her. She was brutal and vicious, as she could even beat her own sons to half-death. She was exceptionally powerful, without a moral bottom line. Ji Hao had to figure out her history; otherwise, he wouldn't be able to stop worrying.

Qiu Niu and Ao Bai disappeared after returning to the heaven. Ji Hao searched through a small half of the heaven but failed to find even a trace of theirs. Ji Hao guessed that they were preparing some secret plan. Afterward, Ji Hao came directly to the Wisdom Star Palace to look for an answer.

With his spirit power, he read countless name tags. Since the world was created, many great events had happened, and numberless remarkable living beings emerged. The heaven kept a record of everything and everyone. The divine files in the Wisdom Star Palace were like a boundless ocean, and these name tags were even more than the natural stars in the sky.

The deeper Ji Hao walked into the palace, the older files he found. When he almost reached the ends of the bookshelves, he stopped abruptly and picked up a faintly golden, rolled-up divine page from a shelf. The page was made from an unknown material, as thin as cicada's wings. Layers of mists and clouds had been rolling inside the page, making it look like a tiny world, with endless secrets hidden in it.

Small silver divine characters were densely written on this page, telling many stories. The first line on the first page read, 'Before the world was created, in the Chaos, a linden tree sprouted an unknown period of time ago...'

This page was a record of Priest Mu. Ji Hao curiously read a few lines, then nodded and conveniently put this page into his sleeve. Soon, he found the record of Priest Hua from the next shelf, and also put it in his sleeve.

He focused his spirit power on the shelves in this area. With surprise, Ji Hao found out that back in the ancient time, tens of thousands of powerful beings were equally famous as Priest Hua and Priest Mu, but no human being knew the name of any of them.

"Maybe they have fallen, or..." Looking at those faintly glowing divine scrolls on the shelves, Ji Hao sighed in shock.

Suddenly, his eyes swept across a name tag, marked with Peng Ju, Peng Zhi, and Peng Jiao.

"The three 'Peng'?" Ji Hao recalled what the mysterious man said about being careful of the three 'Peng'.

"Peng Ju, Peng Zhi, Peng Jiao? The three 'Peng'? The 'Three Corpse Gods'?" Countless thoughts immediately popped up in Ji Hao's mind, all related to 'Cut the Three Corpse and become a saint!'

Without thinking, he picked up this divine record, but before he read the contents, he saw a name tag of 'Chaos Dragon' right next to the three 'Peng'. He put the three 'Pengs' record into his sleeve and picked up the record of the Chaos Dragon.

As he thought, this was a record of Dragon Mother. He read it carefully, and his heart began thumping.

At first, the dragon-kind didn't exist in Pan Gu world. Saint Pan Gu created the world, then countless Chaos monsters attacked him and attempted to steal Pan Gu world. Among these Chaos monsters, two were Chaos dragons. They were twins, a brother and a sister.

Saint Pan Gu crushed millions and millions of Chaos monsters. The male Chaos dragon died under Saint Pan Gu's axe, and the female dragon was injured severely, also by the axe. She almost died, but luckily fled away from the battleground, and wasn't killed by Saint Pan Gu right on the spot.

Numberless Chaos monsters died, and Saint Pan Gu fell. His

tremendous spirit blood energy was gathered by the power of creation of Pan Gu world, and was ready to generate an incredibly powerful creature, which would inherit Saint Pan Gu's nearly invincible body.

But, the world was young, and the power of creation wasn't mature. This creature would have Saint Pan Gu's strength, but what would it look like? Even the God of Wisdom who wrote this part of the record didn't know what exactly happened back then. Therefore, the descriptions were vague. Simply speaking, at last, this spirit blood energy 'copied' the male Chaos dragon and generated the dragon ancestor.

According to the God of Wisdom's guess, among all Chaos monsters who attacked Saint Pan Gu, the two chaos dragons had the greatest strength. Therefore, Saint Pan Gu's spirit blood energy decided to 'copy' the body of the powerful male Chaos dragon, and hence, the dragon ancestor was created.

After being born, the dragon ancestor naturally had a favorable impression of the male Chaos dragon, who looked almost exactly the same as himself. He saved the female Chaos dragon, who was dying, and protected her, allowing her to survive in the dangerous ancient Pan Gu world.

Because of the passion, or the love that came in time, later on, they became a couple and had quite a few baby dragons.

Ji Hao read the record slowly and carefully. This record of Dragon Mother was quite detailed. Dragon Mother was born ferocious, that she often lost her temper and became hysterical, causing countless troubles. If the dragon ancestor weren't so powerful and strong, perhaps Dragon Mother would have been beaten to death by the ones who hated her.

But at last, according to this divine record, Dragon Mother was sealed and imprisoned by the dragon ancestor because she was 'atrocious and merciless', and caused a great 'misfortune'. The nine

sons of hers, who inherited her ferociousness, were imprisoned in unknown ocean eyes as well.

What scared Ji Hao even more was that the dragon ancestor wasn't able to overpower her alone. He asked Donggong, Ximu, and Netherworld Priest to help, and only then finally managed to capture her alive and imprison her in an ocean eye.

"This old woman is so powerful!" Ji Hao gasped in shock. By now, he had a direct estimate of Dragon Mother's power.

Chapter 1803: Deep In the Chaos

In the starry void, natural stars emitted eye-dazzling lights while spinning slowly in the boundless void, causing rumbling noises that sounded like hundreds of bursts of thunder in the soul. A relatively weaker soul would be crushed immediately by the scary noises in the starry void.

Numberless, tremendously powerful, starry void creatures had been flying 'slowly' in the void, from one corner to another, chasing after the stars, the storms, and all kinds of energy crystals. Occasionally, a great war would happen between these creatures for small reasons. Even the natural stars would be shaken because of their combat.

Tens of thousands of frog-like starry void creatures floated in a dark cloud of dust, eyes fixed directly on a giant creature which looked like jellyfish with thousand-miles-long tentacles. These tens of meters tall frogs were all drooling.

This enormous creature, which was glowing with a beautiful blue light, didn't know that it had already become a target. It slowly moved its long tentacles and unhurriedly flew across the void, crushing a few flying meteoric stones. Then, it abruptly rolled up a dazzling fire-red crystal with a tentacle and quickly put it into its mouth.

At this moment, the tens of thousands of frogs suddenly leaped up and pounced on this enormous jellyfish, which was sinking in its delicious snack. They left shreds of dark hazy shadows behind as they crossed over ten-thousand miles within a moment while letting out shrill roars.

The jellyfish screamed and waved its tens of long tentacles as it tried to cast these frogs away.

Countless frogs climbed onto the jellyfish's body, widely opened their large mouths, and bared their sharp teeth. They bit and tore

the jellyfish's transparent body, as the thorns on their tongues sank deep into the jellyfish's body, injecting a dark-green venom.

A bright golden light flashed across the space. This tens of thousands of meters wide beam of golden light was measurelessly long and splendid. Wherever it flashed across, numberless shooting stars were crushed, and the drifting stardust was pushed away to create a broad path. Sky fires, dark ices, thunderbolts, void gales, nothing could stop this mighty golden light.

That was the golden bridge. Ji Hao stood on the golden light and saw the tens of thousands of frogs hunt their prey. "The starry void is so magical! We, human beings in Pan Gu world, haven't even explored our own starry void...But the boundless Chaos...!" He sighed.

The starry void was vast. These frogs and that giant jellyfish he saw were completely strange to him. He failed to recognize these creatures, having never heard of these creatures despite the fact that he had read every single book in the Magi Palace.

The starry void of Pan Gu world was so beautiful and magical! In here, Ji Hao suddenly felt relieved. Earlier, he had a conversation with Donggong, after which, he had been in a sulk. But at this moment, he felt much better.

Nine days ago, after leaving the Wisdom Star Palace, he directly went to Donggong and asked about Dragon King. But, Donggong hesitated in speaking, and no matter how many times Ji Hao asked, he never gave a clear answer about Dragon Mother. Ji Hao could tell that Donggong was hiding something.

Ji Hao was quite angry at Donggong's attitude, but he had no way to channel his anger. Donggong showed him a lazy and careless face, as if saying, 'I won't tell. Kill me if you can'; Ji Hao couldn't really kill Donggong, could he?

Helplessly, Ji Hao recalled something told by the mysterious man. The mysterious man said that a calabash full of 'good stuff'

existed in a secret place, and that could give him a huger amount of saint power!

A huger amount of saint power!

Thinking of this, Ji Hao could no longer stay in his palace. In a haste, he told his people to manage the heaven well and told Ji Xia to control the overall situation, guard the heaven no matter how. Afterward, he and Mr. Crow left the heaven for a journey to that secret place.

This was the first time that Ji Hao came to the starry void with his own power. According to the star map given by the mysterious man, he proceeded along a series of natural stars, which were 'space marks'. With the golden bridge, he could cover hundreds of millions of miles in a second, but still, he hadn't approached the destination after spending nine days.

Without the golden bridge and the giant amount of saint power which was a 'gift' from Priest Mu, Ji Hao could never possibly reach here without spending a million years.

This place was merely the starry void of Pan Gu world, and Pan Gu world was merely one of the countless great worlds in the Chaos. What were things like in the boundless Chaos? Ji Hao couldn't imagine that. Those powerful human beings such as Emperor Fuxi and Emperor Xuanyuan had left Pan Gu world for the Chaos. How did they feel? How many fabulous scenes had they seen?

He kept moving forward. The golden bridge created a straight path in the void and flew past countless natural stars in the starry void. Twenty days later, Ji Hao suddenly saw five natural stars in a circle.

Ji Hao flashed across the space and directly rushed into the central area of the circle formed by the five stars. This was directed by the mysterious man's star map.

There, Ji Hao sang in a strange tone. Hearing his voice, the five natural stars, which were over ten-million-miles-wide, glowed with a dim light simultaneously. Afterward, the space around Ji Hao began waving like water, and he was teleported away.

Next, Ji Hao realized that he was standing on top of a hill.

Surrounding him were utterly disordered Chaos power streams. The strong Chaos power transformed into beautiful lights and clashed with each other. The thin light beams bumped against each other and generated world-shaking energies. Sensing the tremulous energy waves, even Ji Hao had his face paled.

Fortunately, this hill was shielded by an invisible seal. The seal remained perfectly unmoved, no matter how violently the Chaos power struck.

Ji Hao glanced around and quickly discovered a thumb-sized light spot in the Chaos. The moment he saw the light spot, a strange feeling told him that it was Pan Gu world.

The vast Pan Gu world now looked as tiny as a thumb, glowing softly. Clearly, this hill was unspeakably far away from Pan Gu world.

Ji Hao released his spirit power and quickly scanned across this tens of thousands of meters tall, hundred-miles-wide hill. With surprise, he found that this hill was a small independent world, despite its small size.

This hill was covered in rare plants and herbs; every grain of sand on this hill could be labeled as a great treasure.

What surprised Ji Hao even more was that a sphere of light was beating inside this hill, breathing like a living being. It absorbed the Chaos power, then released the powers with different natures. Because of this light, this hill became so full of vigor, and these herbs could grow easily.

Artificial or natural, this hill was a miracle.

Chapter 1804: The Jade Board With A Priest Sealed in It

The air on the hill was clean, making Ji Hao feel natural and refreshed.

Every single one of the luxuriant green grasses treading udder his feet looked like a decoration carved out of jade. He could even see the glowing green juice inside the grasses. When Ji Hao walked across, he broke some grass blades, then drops of green juice oozed out of the broken grass blades, emitting a refreshing aroma.

Mr. Crow widened his eyes and curiously followed behind Ji Hao, walking down the hill. Abruptly, he picked a fist-sized red fruit from an eight-foot-tall tree, which had coiling, twisted branches, then took a bite. A sweet aroma erupted from the fruit. Mr. Crow popped out his eyes and exclaimed, "Sweet, good!"

"Eh?" Ji Hao glanced at the fruit and gasped with surprise.

Judging by the fruit's shape, color, aroma and its strong fire power, this was a 'six sun fruit', a top-grade divine fruit with a nature of fire. Every ripe 'six sun fruit' contained an especially strong and pure sun power. 'Six sun fruits' were the best food choice of the creatures with a nature of fire. By eating 'six sun fruits' daily, the innate powers of fire creatures could be improved, and their strengths could grow rapidly.

Back in the ancient time, some magical creatures named 'fire oysters' existed in Pan Gu world. Newborn fire oysters needed to eat a large amount of 'six sun fruits', so that they could grow healthy and activate their nature-given powers. Later on, the family of fire oysters offended the family of fire Luan birds, which was a vassal of the phoenix-kind, and ended up being destroyed. In that great war, 'six sun fruits' disappeared. People in Pan Gu world hadn't seen a 'six sun fruit' for many years.

"Six sun fruit... Mr. Crow, I've read about it in a book from the Magi Palace. It's good! Bring it back and plant it in our divine garden. In the future, the baby crows in our clan will have the luck to taste these. These fruits are treasures!" Ji Hao grinned delightedly.

The family of fire oysters was destroyed many years ago, and six sun fruits had disappeared from Pan Gu world for long. However, just then, Mr. Crow found some six sun fruits on this hill. Based on this, Ji Hao had an idea of this hill's age.

Mr. Crow cawed happily, then cast a serious glance at the six sun fruit tree, to make sure that he had memorized its shape. Afterward, he continued following Ji Hao down the hill.

On the way, they saw many strange plants and herbs growing thrivingly, well-spaced. The number of each type of herb was small, because this hill was merely hundreds of miles in radius. However, the age of each plant was shockingly high, especially some trees. From these trees, Ji Hao felt something that belonged to an extremely long period of time ago.

"Weird! These herbs are so old... They should have become spirit creatures." Ji Hao curiously touched a tree nearby. The trunk of this tree was covered in moss. This tree had an amazing density, containing a tremendous amount of green power. In Pan Gu world, a tree like this would definitely have become a tree man already.

But in here, it seemed that a strange power in the space had been suppressing the spirits of these plants, disabling them from becoming spirit creatures.

Ji Hao carefully spread his spirit power and faintly sensed the source of this strange surprising power. He moved forward warily and bypassed the mountainside, then saw a dimly glowing cave under a cliff.

Ji Hao covered the entire hill with his spirit power, but it failed to 'see' this cave. He discovered the cave only when he walked to it

and saw it with his physical eyes.

A mysterious magic seal in this hill blocked his spirit power, surprising Ji Hao. Remaining careful, he cast tens of testing small seals in all directions, but found nothing strange. After that, he activated the Pan Gu bell to shield Mr. Crow and himself, then walked into the cave step by step.

Looking from the outside, this cave glowed merely with a faint light, but on walking in, Ji Hao found its inner space to be especially beautiful.

Transparent stalactites were hanging on the ceiling, with a beautiful luster and a smooth texture, looking like pearls or jade. A fist-sized pearl was inlaid on top of every stalactite, glowing brightly, illuminating and warming the cave.

The inner space of this cave was in a round shape, about a hundred miles in radius. Nine strong stone pillars stood in a nine-grid formation, supporting the ceiling. An oddly shaped powerful weapon existed inside each of these nine transparent stone pillars. From time to time, these weapons would sparkle with a frosty light, and the Pan Gu bell would buzz slightly, seeming to warn Ji Hao that these were all greatly powerful supreme treasures.

Under the central pillar was a jade table, and placed on the table was one small flag and two calabashes. These three simple objects had no glow or clouds rising from them. The small flag seemed to be made from the cheapest cloth, and the two calabashes looked just like any calabash in an ordinary human being's yard.

Ji Hao immediately scanned these three objects with his eyes. According to the mysterious man, the thing in a calabash could give Ji Hao a greater amount of saint power. The calabash mentioned by the mysterious man should be one of these two.

Ji Hao carefully walked to the jade table and picked up the pair of calabashes. One of them was weightless, but the other one was especially heavy. Ji Hao had a Pan Gu body and a tremendous

strength, yet he actually needed to put forth all his strength to lift the heavy calabash.

He didn't spend any time to look at the pair of calabashes closely, but put them carefully into his sleeves. Next, he picked up the small flag and took a look at it.

The small flag was even weirder, as its weight had been changing constantly. Sometimes, it was too light to be felt, but suddenly, it turned much heavier than even the heavy calabash. The moment Ji Hao picked it up, its weight changed abruptly, nearly breaking his arm.

"Tai-Yi magnetic force flag!" Ji Hao gripped the flag with a frown. A dim light suddenly shone on the flagpole, within which, five tiny characters swiftly flashed across, but were grasped by his eyes.

Ji Hao was curious about the history of this tiny flag. As he prepared to build a basic connection between the flag and himself with a regular treasure-cultivation method, a jade board behind the jade pillar, which stood behind the jade table, caught his attention.

The jade board was tens of meters wide, white and flawless, looking like the moon. Inside the jade board, clouds and mists had been rolling.

Within the rolling clouds and coiling mists, an exquisite palace could be seen. On a balcony in the palace, a man in a red robe was leaning against a jade bed. He looked like an ancient being, eyes slightly bulged like those of a goldfish, and his hair were red as blood.

The man seemed to feel Ji Hao's gaze. He abruptly raised his head and looked at Ji Hao.

Crack!

Earlier, Ji Hao's embryo of Dao had absorbed a measureless amount of soul shreds and had grown stronger by at least tenfold,

but at this moment, blood gushed out of his eye, nose, mouth and ears because of just a glance cast by the man in a red robe. While shivering, Ji Hao couldn't stop shambling backward, as if he got an electric shock.

"Little thing...how did you enter this Feng Dao Mount?" The man in the jade board suddenly stood up. The entire jade board was filled up by this body, as he widely opened his eyes and stared at Ji Hao.

Chapter 1805: A Man Who Lived for Booze And Meat

Ji Hao shook his head. The blood he shed flew back into his body, and the burst blood vessels were all healed. But, he still felt oppressed. His embryo of Dao seemed down, and his body was aching and limp, as if an elephant had just trampled upon him. Ji Hao took a few deep breaths in a row and finally freed himself from this discomfort.

He immediately raised head and looked at the man in the jade board.

This ordinary-looking man seemed to have a giant mountain hiding in his eyes. Merely through the quick eye-contact that happened between him and Ji Hao, he made Ji Hao feel like being crushed by the mountain. Ji Hao didn't manage to react.

Ji Hao glanced at the coiling Chaos power streams around his body. He made an eye-contact with the man in the jade board and exchanged spirit powers with that man. This was just like sending out his spirit power to take a beating, because the Pan Gu bell shielded his body, but could not the spirit power that he sent out on his own initiative.

He needed to be more careful. After all, numberless powerful beings existed in this world, and Ji Hao didn't want to get himself hurt again, and then regret over his carelessness.

Ji Hao cautiously warned himself for a few times in his head, then raised his head and carefully restrained his spirit power, without daring to release the bright shine of his eyes anymore. Through the Chaos power, he swiftly glanced at the man and said, "Elder, you have a great power, a great ability."

The man in a red robe gave a faint smile, then carelessly shook his head and responded, "What power? What ability? I've been

resting my spirit day and night, and the light in my eyes accumulated like the water in a dam. The accumulation was rich, and then you cast your eyes on me. Naturally, my excessive spirit power poured straight down like a dam bursting. You're weaker than me, so surely you got hurt. I didn't do it on purpose. Otherwise, your soul would have been collapsed and you'd be dead already!"

Ji Hao frowned. He pondered shortly, and found that the man was right.

This man lied in the jade board, doing nothing but resting his spirit, without leaking even a trace of his spirit power. His spirit power accumulated in his eyes for long, naturally making his eyes powerful. Ji Hao suddenly broke in and disturbed this man, causing a burst of the spirit power in his eyes. Ji Hao was far weaker than him, and naturally, got injured.

This man was clearly extra powerful, as he managed to injure Ji Hao through a mere exchange of glance.

Ji Hao carefully took another glance at this cave. The nine weapons inside the nine stone pillars sparkled with a sharp cold light, and the nine stone pillars clearly surrounded this jade board. The red-robed man lived in a broad, magnificent palace in the jade board, but no other living being was in there except him. The palace was all empty, without even a grass; it was an extremely lonely place.

This was a strange seal. The red-robed man was sealed in the jade board.

Ji Hao was shocked again. Through the jade board, the red-robed man still managed to hurt him easily. This red-robed man was already immeasurably powerful, but who had the power to seal him in here?

The red-robed man sharply sensed the shock in Ji Hao's eyes. He scratched his head and sighed heavily, "Hm, shameful...I don't

know how long I've been sealed in Feng Dao Mount for. You're a human being. When I was sealed, Fuxi was just elected as the human emperor by the elders from human clans."

"Ah, you're a great elder! You had already attained your Dao back in Emperor Fuxi's years!" Ji Hao seriously bowed to the red-robed man.

"Wrong. I attained my great Dao way earlier than Fuxi kid." The red-robed man sighed again. Then his body, which had filled up the entire jade board, shrank slowly. He sat back on the jade bed, then looked at Ji Hao and helplessly frowned. "Whose disciple are you? How did you find Feng Dao Mount? Are you here for those three treasures of mine?"

Snorting coldly, he murmured, "Those old things, they said that they sealed me for all living beings in the world, not for my treasures. So, instead of taking them away, they left my three spirit treasures directly in here...It seems that they were lying. See, now they sent a disciple here, didn't they?"

"Pan Luo? Bian Xue? Hua Zhang? Da Lao? It can't be Qingying. That girl values nothing more than her face. She wouldn't be shameless enough to send a disciple here for my treasures, not even if you're her favorite disciple!" The red-robed man looked at Ji Hao and said while shaking his head, "Pan Luo? Bian Xue? Hua Zhang? Da Lao? Tell me, which one of these four is your Shifu?"

Ji Hao stared at the red-robed man, stunned. He had never heard of the five people that this man mentioned.

In the Wisdom Star Palace, he had indeed seen the name 'Pan Luo' on one tag, but that had nothing to do with Dragon Mother's history that Ji Hao had been searching for. Therefore, he just glimpsed at it and then forgot about it.

"Elder, I'm afraid that no one in the world knows their names anymore." Ji Hao coughed slightly and shook his head towards the red-robed man.

The man opened his mouth, looking at Ji Hao in astonishment. Remaining silent for long, he began talking with confusion, "No one knows their names? It's not possible! If I am well alive, how can they die? At their level, how can death be such an easy thing? You can chop off their heads, split their limbs, cut them into pieces, then seal them piece by piece, but they wouldn't die, would they?"

"You must be ignorant, or your position among human beings isn't high enough. That's why you don't know their names!" The red-robed man pondered for a while, then laughed abruptly, "Hah, kid, tell me, how did you luckily find Feng Dao Mount?"

"I am a current divine emperor. They are something in the world that I don't know yet, but not much." Ji Hao looked at the man and said in a bland tone, "So, if even I don't know their names, they truly haven't shown up in the world for a very long time."

The red-robed man was astounded. He stared at Ji Hao for long, then rubbed his head and murmured to himself, "No wonder you have a great natural rewards power, and you are protected by the divine light from the heaven...I thought you're a star king, but you're a divine emperor...Divine emperors are truly getting weak with each generation. How can you be so weak? How can a divine emperor like this rule the world, and enforce the natural law on behalf of the world itself?"

Ji Hao gave a dry laugh. "So, I came to Feng Dao Mount for the calabash full of treasure which can improve my power."

The red-robed man looked at Ji Hao with dazzling eyes. A while later, he smiled, then nodded and said, "You can take my treasures, but my treasures aren't for free...Did you bring any booze and meat? Pay for my treasures with enough booze and meat."

Sighing slightly, the man pointed his finger at the giant palace behind him, "I've been sealed in here forever. Back in my days, I loved nothing more than booze and meat. My great appetite caused

me a lot of troubles. Look, this palace is completely empty, without even a blade of grass growing. I can't bite bricks and pillars, can I?" The man even drooled a little.

Blinking quickly, the red-robed man fixed his eyes on Ji Hao and said impatiently, "Come on, give me booze and meat, the more the better! I'm so starved!"

Chapter 1806: Tong Jiong's Three Treasures

Ji Hao didn't have a habit of carrying food everywhere...But, Mr. Crow brought quite a lot!

Mr. Crow took out a potful of wine, which was stored in the divine cellar for countless years. The red-robed grinned once he took a glimpse at the pot, saying, "Green jade green wave, nice wine, hah! Come on, throw it in!"

Ji Hao saw the glistening saliva hanging on the man's mouth corners, and the eagerness in his eye.

Smilingly putting the pot on the ground, Ji Hao took out a hassock for himself to sit on, then unhurriedly took out a piece of white jade. As he slightly crooked his fingers, a streak of essence sun fire rose from between his fingers, burned the white jade into four wine cups.

He carefully opened the wine pot, spooned a cupful of green, nicely scented wine with a jade cup, then handed it to Mr. Crow. Mr. Crow took it over and poured the wine into his mouth, then shook his head while sighing in satisfaction. "Nice wine indeed! Much better than the papaya wine that our Gold Crow Clan produced in Southern Wasteland jungle."

Cawing with laughter, Mr. Crow sat down beside Ji Hao and looked at the red-robed man with his pair of golden-red eyes as he laughed, "We don't have many hobbies, but we do like drinking when we have nothing to do. The divine cellar doesn't have much wine stored in it, but I bought all, hah!"

Mr. Crow laughed brightly and loudly. He turned around his palms and threw a grilled buffalo to the ground. The buffalo was grilled to a dark golden color, emitting a savory aroma. Ji Hao had no idea about when Mr. Crow took this grilled buffalo with him. The giant grilled buffalo was put on dark-green plantain leaves, which served as a foil to its golden color, making it look even more

delicious.

The red-robed man swallowed saliva as he looked at Ji Hao, eyes showing a trace of anger, "Little thing, you're doing this on purpose, aren't you? Hm, tempting me with some wine and grilled meat...What do you want? Just say it... Don't play these lowly little tricks..."

Then, this man angrily slapped on his own forehead, and snorted weakly, murmuring to himself, "But, these lowly little tricks can just get me...So shameful, eh? But, I haven't tasted any meat or wine for so many years, little thing..."

Shaking his head, the red-robed man looked at Ji Hao honestly and said, "Before I get mad, give me the best booze and meat you have. Whatever you want to take or know from me, we can talk. I am sealed in this jade board indeed, but if you make me angry, I might do something to you, and with your poor cultivation, you will suffer."

Ji Hao looked at the red-robed man and nodded, then picked up the wine pot and threw it at the jade board.

A colorful mist flashed across the jade board, after which, the red-robed man had a wine pot in his hands. He grinned and nodded to Ji Hao, then impatiently raised the pot and poured the wine into his mouth. The full potful of divine wine was emptied by him within a few breaths.

The man burped in satisfaction, then raised his head and sighed aloud towards the ceiling, "Fantastic! I feel alive again. I, Priest Tong Jiong...sank into this place. This is really...Never mind. My face, till now, what do I need that for?"

He smashed the wine pot on the ground, then reached his hands towards Ji Hao and said, "Little thing, booze, wine, meat, give me all. Whatever you want to ask me, or anything you want from me, you can just tell me now. But, I have to tell you this first, I am not longer that old Priest Tong Jiong from back in the ancient years,

and I don't have much to give you anymore."

Ji Hao asked Mr. Crow for another couple of potfuls of good wine. After throwing the pots in, he sent the grilled buffalo, some other meat, and some fruits all into the jade board. He and Mr. Crow sat in front of the jade board while Priest Tong Jiong sat inside it, and the three of them actually began eating and drinking together.

A while later, until Priest Tong Jiong's mouth was already covered in oil, Ji Hao asked, "Elder, you're so powerful, but how did you end up being sealed in here?"

Tong Jiong's face blushed instantly. Holding a white jade wine cup which was sent into the jade board by Ji Hao, he remained sinking in a daze for a while, then gave a bitter smile, shook his head, and responded, "You've seen how I eat. Can't you answer the question yourself? Hah, a potful of fruit wine with secret recipe...Qingying, Qingying, I treated you as my bosom friend. Hah..."

"Caw!" Mr. Crow screamed, "Were you drugged?"

Ji Hao and Mr. Crow exchanged a glance. Such a powerful being was actually taken down by drug? And, the enemies of this powerful being actually drugged him. Who would ever know if Tong Jiong didn't say it out?

"You don't know how good she is." Tong Jiong looked at Ji Hao with a dark face while saying slowly, "She knows the effects of all kinds of herbs in the world. The ointments she made were true treasures, even to us. We're all powerful, that our primordial spirits have merged with the great Dao of nature, but we always want the drugs she made, and not every one of us had the chance to get some. Sure, I could be drugged and weakened by her secret recipe. Is that a strange thing?"

Ji Hao nodded slowly. He took out the small flag and the pair of calabashes, putting them on the ground.

Before Ji Hao asked a question, Tong Jiong pointed his finger at the flag and said, "Tai-Yi magnetic force flag. It can cover the space hundreds of millions of miles radius, and contains a measureless, ever-changing magnetic power. Nothing in the world can be free from the restriction of natural magnetic force. You can use it to capture your targets, seize some other people' treasures, or form a formation to guard your place... It's multi-functional."

He then pointed at the weightless calabash and said, "The dead calabash contains the first trace of 'killing power' in the world. It can lock on its targets through their powers, then kill them, even from millions of miles away. Only pre-world supreme defensive treasures with a nature of 'karma' can rival this calabash. The saints who have indestructible souls with their primordial spirits merged with the great Dao of nature may be able to hold off its power, but they would certainly suffer severe injuries and a cultivation degradation."

Snorting coldly, Tong Jiong looked at the dead calabash and sighed, "In my hand, this dead calabash can...even drag a saint down from the level of saints and turn him or her back into a mortal being, if he or she weren't prepared. This is a good treasure!"

Ji Hao looked at Tong Jiong in shock. Was this dead calabash truly so powerful?

"But, you have to be careful. Everything that happens in the world has causes and effects. The dead calabash is powerful indeed, but it can also generate a destructive counterforce. If you can't take the counterforce, haha...!" Tong Jiong pointed at his own chest and smiled bitterly while continuing, "In my days, I used it too much. Look, look what happened to me! I am sealed in here forever and ever. I'm not dead, but what's the difference between my life and death?"

Sighing again, Tong Jiong pointed at the heavy calabash and said, "As for this one, living calabash, it contains the first trace of

life-force in the world. It has been absorbing the essence natural powers and turning those into a holy stream inside it. The spring can nourish everything in the world, and can easily bring the dead ones back to life. Every drop of the spring can serve as a cure-all drug. It can also largely improve your power and cultivation, with no side effects at all."

Tong Jiong laughed bitterly, pointing at the pair of calabashes as he said, "These two calabashes, one dead, one living... It's said that a measureless secret power was hiding in them, that the one who unlocked the secret would be amazingly benefited. But, I didn't have that luck."

Ji Hao fixed his eyes on the living calabash, his heart thumping.

Chapter 1807: The Three ‘Pengs’ Story

Dead calabash, living calabash.

Priest Tong Jiong named this pair of calabashes quite simply. But indeed, ancient powerful beings preferred to handle things in natural and straightforward ways, and followed nothing but their own hearts.

While fiddling with the pair of calabashes, Ji Hao had been handing more wine and meat to Tong Jiong, who happily enjoyed this banquet. Ji Hao asked many questions, and he gave all answers that he could give. Some secret ancient stories seriously opened Ji Hao's eyes.

"I've read some records about the three 'Peng' in the Wisdom Star Palace, but the records are quite vague. I'm pretty curious about their stories. Have you ever heard of them?" When Tong Jiong had almost finished all the food and drink that Mr. Crow brought, Ji Hao finally threw this question out in a careless tone.

Tong Jiong immediately stopped gulping. He dropped the wine cup, raised his head with a weird smile, then slowly glanced at Ji Hao while saying, "The heaven has a record about the three 'Peng', which is reasonable. After all, they've left some traces back in the ancient time...But little thing, you suddenly asked about them, hah!"

Tong Jiong blinked and nodded, then continued, "Hm, have they started to take some serious actions?"

Ji Hao gave a bitter smile. As he thought, in front of an ancient powerful being like Tong Jiong, any kind of concealment would be useless. He merely mentioned the three 'Pengs', yet Tong Jiong immediately guessed out his true purpose and figured out that the three 'Pengs' had taken an action and Ji Hao was trying to do a background research about them.

"Let me see their record from the Wisdom Star Palace!" Tong Jiong reached his hand to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao threw the divine record about the three 'Pengs' into the jade board. Tong Jiong spread the scroll and laughed, "As I expected, only their names were recorded specifically. Their background is stated vaguely, and the author just guessed that they have something to do with the few great events that happened in the ancient time, hah!"

Ji Hao cupped his hands to Priest Tong Jiong and said, "Elder, please tell me what you know about them."

Tong Jiong frowned. While using the sheet of record as a hand fan, he said, "The three 'Peng', they're mysterious, brutal, but prefer to do things in a 'soft' way. They can totally be on top of your 'cannot offend' list in Pan Gu world...But, I'm not afraid of them now, as I'm sealed in Feng Dao Mount. I wouldn't fear them even if they can break this jade board.

Snorting coldly, Tong Jiong looked at Ji Hao and continued, "Do you know that the moment you mentioned their names, they've already known about it?"

"Are they really so powerful?" Ji Hao stared at Tong Jiong, stunned.

Tong Jiong nodded. He raised his head and said slowly, "Unless you're a saint, who can defeat the 'three corpses' by killing them with your primordial spirit power, burning then with essence fires, or casting them out of your body and then sealing them in the Chaos...Anyway, they can read the thoughts of all Pan Gu world creatures but saints."

"It's better that you know nothing about them. You don't mention them, don't think about them, so they can sense nothing from you. Added with your strong heart of Dao, you will be able to keep your thoughts from being read by them as long as you don't talk about your thoughts."

"But you mentioned their names to me. As you said their names, they can naturally follow your voice here. In other words, at the moment, you..." Looking at Ji Hao, Tong Jiong nodded, pointed at the Pan Gu bell, and said, "This bell is made from a part of Pan Gu's body. It can protect you, added with your great natural rewards power. Besides, Fen Dao Mount is sealed, as this place is isolated from the great Dao of nature. Therefore, you can mention them as many times as you want in here. They can't hear us."

Breathing deeply, Tong Qiong carried on with a deep voice, "But, when you return to Pan Gu world, do not mention them, and do not think about them. You shall restrain your thoughts, calm your desires and emotions, and relax your heat of Dao, making it as still as a ten-thousand years old iceberg. You cannot get angry, or be happy, or sad, or worry. All in all, you can't have any emotion. Otherwise, they will read every thought of yours."

Ji Hao felt his fine hairs stand straight up. Were the three 'Pengs' truly so powerful?

"Where exactly are they from?" Ji Hao forcibly calmed himself down and asked.

"This...You should ask Pan Gu!" Tong Jiong scratched his scalp. He picked up the cup, emptied a cup of wine with a frown, then said, "Pan Gu created this world. Back then, I stood in a distance away and watched him do that. I'm far smarter than those idiots. Pan Gu was such a powerful being, yet they attempted to seize the original Dao of Pan Gu world and occupy the entire Pan Gu world. Wasn't that suicide?"

"In that great war...Or, in that slaughter, heads rolled everywhere, and blood flowed into oceans..." Clicking his tone, Tong Jiong continued, "Only the smart ones like us survived. The ones who had the guts to make a move all died." He smiled, as if he took pleasure in others' misfortune.

"But eventually, Pan Gu failed to attain his Dao through strength

and make the final step. So, he fell as well." Tong Jiong sighed and said with shock, "The three 'Pengs' are three gods who flew out of Pan Gu's body once he died."

"Gods... Gods... They're not the same kind of Gods as the Fire God, Earth God, Gold God, Water God, Green God, and other original natural gods in Pan Gu world. Those gods were generated from natural powers based on the great Dao of nature, but the three 'Pengs' weren't. Gods... They were gods. They were born before the world, with immeasurable powers...They're the real gods to 'people' like us." Tong Jiong frowned while saying, "We don't understand their relationship with Pan Gu either. After Pan Gu died, they immediately came out of Pan Gu's spirit, blood, and Qi!" While speaking, Tong Jiong pointed at his forehead, heart, and lower abdomen.

"So, they're Pan Gu's descendants as well..." He continued with a deep voice.

"Pan Gu was a troublemaker. Too many strange beings came out of his body, including Priest Jun's three disciples, that evil priest, the ancestors of the dragon-kind, phoenix-kind, and humankind, and the three 'Pengs'. So, they're all Pan Gu's descendants." Unsurely, Tong Jiong gave Ji Hao a bitter grin.

"However, the three 'Pengs' have away been so mysterious. They hardly showed up in the mortal world. No one knew what they had been thinking or doing. No one even knew where they lived.

"But, I can tell you for sure that they caused the sudden death of the four world spirits of earth, water, fire and wind." Tong Jiong clicked his tongue again. "The first generation of Cyan Dragon, White Tiger, Rosefinch, Black Tortoise...They were peeled, had their blood drained, and tendons pulled out. They all died such a miserable death!"

Ji Hao knitted his brows. The three 'Pengs' were 'gods' who flew out of Pan Gu's body?

"So, they're evil, aren't they?" Ji Hao asked straightforwardly.

"Evil? Perhaps?" Tong Jiong looked at Ji Hao, shaking his head. "Who can tell? For example, I think I'm a good guy. But, am I not sealed in here?"

Chapter 1808: Tong Jiong's Guess

Ji Hao remained silent. 'A good guy'?

Looking at Tong Jiong's oily mouth and hands, Ji Hao felt that he was a sentimental person. But, were all sentimental people good? No.

Tong Jiong believed that he was a good guy, but perhaps, he had done something that caused severe harm to other people. If that were true, could he still be counted as a good guy? Ancient powerful beings were mostly strange-tempered, and usually, they followed nothing but their own hearts. The things that they believed were right might not fit the sense of morality of ordinary living beings.

"But, you said that if anyone mentions their names, the three 'Peng's will know. Why?" Ji Hao quickly changed the topic.

Tong Jiong frowned, his face showing confusion. Clearly, he had the same question in mind. Pondering shortly, Tong Jiong picked up his wine cup, took a sip, then pointed at Ji Hao's forehead, heart, and lower abdomen, while saying, "The 'three corpses' can hide in your body, and the bodies of all human beings, dragons, phoenixes, and all Pan Gu world creatures which are able to cultivate themselves."

"The 'three corpses' are traceless, good at reading people' hearts. They are the three 'Pengs'..." After pondering for quite a while with his eyebrows knitted, Tong Jiong said, "Calling them clones will be inappropriate. Every 'three corpse god' is an independent individual, and has its own thoughts. But, if you say that they're not the three 'Pengs' clones, that would also be wrong, because they do share the same names and minds..."

Spreading his hands, Tong Jiong continued helplessly, "The three 'Pengs' are very mysterious anyway. Before, they existed inside Pan Gu's body, and now, they exist in the bodies of all Pan

Gu creatures. They can read every thought in your mind and hear every word you say."

Ji Hao frowned while baring his teeth, his heart filled with puzzles.

"And, the stronger a creature is, the greater attention it can draw from the three 'Pengs'." Tong Jiong laughed, "The three 'Pengs' are definitely the most well-informed beings in the whole world. They know everything, but you can't find a trace of them, neither do people know where they are or what they have been doing. So, everyone is afraid of them."

Ji Hao was so upset. Before, he knew nothing about the three 'Pengs', but now, he knew how they existed, and he knew the fact that they are hiding inside his body in some mysterious way. He just felt a wave of unease.

It was like one suddenly had three 'renters' in one's home. They were invisible, but one clearly knew that they existed. How strange would that be? Plus, the fact that these three 'renters' had been sneakily watching every move of oneself; knowing this would only make one feel even more uncomfortable.

"Don't be angry. Don't worry. Don't feel depressed. Don't have any mood swings." Seeing Ji Hao frown, Tong Jiong hurriedly reminded him, "Normally, the 'there corpse god' just hide in your bodies, but once you have violent mood swings, they can feed on that and grow stronger. Once they reached a certain level of strength, perhaps, even your mind will be controlled by them..."

"Like a puppet?" Ji Hao was startled.

"Maybe worse?" Tong Jiong pondered briefly and said with a complicated feeling, "Turning you into a puppet means killing your mind and controlling your entire body...But, the 'three corpse gods' will imperceptibly affect your emotions and lead you to the decisions that you wouldn't have made. By then, you would feel that your every thought still came from your true heart, but in

fact, your mind would have already been affected!"

Hearing Tong Jiong, Ji Hao even wanted to vomit blood.

Tong Jiong spread his hands and smiled to Ji Hao, "Are you upset? Feeling like vomiting blood? Is your heart of Dao shaking as if your cultivation is going down? You see, in my happy and free days, people wouldn't tell their disciples about the three 'Pengs'."

He sighed and then grinned bitterly before continuing, "Their existence is too hard to explain, and people never had a clue about what they had been doing. Rather than letting their disciples know about the three freaks, then spending extra efforts to protect their disciples, people just chose to simply not tell their disciples about those three weird fellas."

"If you don't know about them, you wouldn't think about them, nor mention them. If you don't think about them or mention them, they won't notice you." Tong Jiong smiled at Ji Hao and said slowly, "Since you managed to find Feng Dao Mount, you must be powerful and knowledgeable...But, even you don't know where exactly they're from. I'm afraid that the most of their stories have been erased from Pan Gu world long ago, right?"

Ji Hao nodded. Wasn't he right? The Magi Palace kept no record about the three 'Pengs', and even the record kept in the Wisdom Star Palace in the heaven only had a few lines about them. Yu Yu had told Ji Hao many ancient secrets, but never mentioned the three 'Pengs'.

If those strange priests didn't show by Emperor Xun's side, and if the mysterious man didn't warn Ji Hao to be careful about the three 'Pengs', how would Ji Hao ever think of them?

"But, you asked me about them, which means they've shown up to make some serious troubles. Otherwise, how would you know that they exist in Pan Gu world?" Tong Jiong looked at Ji Hao, then smiled and said with absolute certainty, "I barely met them, but based on my observation, every time they showed up to make

troubles, they picked critical moments when the natural fortune changed drastically, and the whole world was facing a severe change."

"It seems like every action they took was aimed on Priest Jun, wasn't it?" Tong Jiong narrowed his eyes and said, "Priest Jun is the embodiment of Pan Gu world's soul...More specifically, he was a piece of the original great Dao of Pan Gu world which fell off when Pan Gu created this world. Luckily, he absorbed the power of creation and became Priest Jun."

"So, Priest Jun is like the manager of Pan Gu world. He controls everything, and can do everything." Narrowing his eyes, Tong Jiong snorted coldly while saying, "I even suspect that Priest Jun has something to do with me being sealed."

"Every time the three 'Pengs' made a move, Priest Jun was their target...Are they trying to kill Priest Jun and take his place to control the whole Pan Gu world?" Tong Jiong tilted his head and murmured while pondering, "Hmm, they're so brave and have great plans...If they succeed, hehe, interesting shows would be staging in Pan Gu world.

With a slight excitement, Tong Jiong gave a long sigh, "That will be one helluva battle. I won't be able to witness it, but I can imagine how dangerous it will be...Little thing, Pan Gu world is not peaceful right now, is it?"

Ji Hao paused and gave a dry laugh while shaking his head. 'Not peaceful'? How could one describe the present Pan Gu world with these two simple words?

Chapter 1809: The Non-humankind Dispatches Troops

While Ji Hao was drinking and talking in Feng Dao Mount with Priest Tong Jiong, things happened in Liang Zhu City.

On the square, the people from top-grade Pan Yu world families had still been scrambling for power and wealth, as if they would never be bored with it. People stealthily moved across the crowds of nobles and made all kinds of promises, contracts, and oaths, as they came up with countless evil plans.

By now, these high-grade nobles from Pan Yu world had forgotten about what exactly they had been going after. They were like drunk people, releasing their natures and following their desires. They were designed to strive for power and wealth, to intrigue each other, and to use dark and evil plans. They had immersed in this enormous 'carnival' without being able to pull themselves out.

Every time when a mentionable noble being died from assassination, when a force under a family's direct command suffered great losses under a surprise attack, and when a small family tore a contract and decided to follow a large family, these high-grade nobles would be thrilled. They would quiver, both their souls and bodies going numb, as if strong electric currents were going through their bodies. They never felt better.

These Yu Clan nobles managed to turn this dirty war into a revelry. One had to admit that they had a special gift for that.

On this particular day, Yu Huo's clone stood on the high stage, which was located in the middle of the square, waving his hands while shouting hoarsely. As loud as he could, he was telling everyone how beautiful Pan Gu world was, "Feel it... Right under this land, feel the boiling, thriving earth meridians, feel the mines right inside these mountains around Liang Zhu City, which have

amazing reserves... Look at these human slaves..."

With shining eyes, Yu Huo's clone pointed at the group of human maids and slaves who stood motionlessly in the crowd and laughed, "Look, beautiful young girls, brave warriors...This is a species with such a potential. If we can conquer them and enslave their descendants generation after generation, how happy will we be? We, Yu Clan people, should stand above the universe! We should enslave all the other creatures!"

"Enslavement is addictive!" Yu Huo's clone laughed loudly, "Pan Gu world is such a fleshy juicy piece of meat! Taking one bite, the oil will ooze out!"

Yu Huo's clone laughed so delightfully that he even squeezed his eyes into a pair of curved lines. He had lost into this crazy atmosphere way too much.

So many top-grade families had gathered together, and so many high-grade nobles were mingling, plotting against each other, trying to hurt each other. Every day, the people with noble bloodlines would fall, and a large number of warriors would die or get injured. He had been having a rich harvest of souls. As a clone of Yu Huo, his power had been raised unwittingly by at least a hundred percent!

Not to mention all the negative emotions which were released from the fallen ones before they died... These negative soul energies with fear, despair, anger, and all kinds of negative emotions had become the best replenishments for Master Spirit-Slaughter.

Master Spirit-Slaughter and Yu Huo were two devils who were both soul hunters. These days, they had been fanning the flames of disorder in Liang Zhu City, and had never been happier!

Disorder, they wanted more disorder, the more chaotic the better! They wanted those stupid nobles to kill each other, and they wanted this giant potful of thick 'soup', which was cooked

from 'desires and emotions', to boil harder and become even more complicated. Yu Hu's clone even wanted this situation to continue forever.

Therefore, Yu Huo's clone described the wonderfulness of Pan Gu world countless times and aroused the deepest greed in everyone's heart. However, he had only been leading these nobles to a higher level of chaos, but would never solve any puzzle for them.

Thud! A stone flew out of the crowd and hit on the forehead of Yu Huo's clone.

Yu Huo's clone growled in rage as blood sprayed out from his head. He staggered back for a few steps and nearly fell down from the stage. Covering his head with a hand, Yu Huo's clone pointed where the stone came from and hollered, "Who? Who was it? Do you want to be an enemy of my Yemo Family?"

"Yemo Family? A lowly poor family which isn't even qualified to own a family emblem... I want to be your enemy, so what?" Surrounded by hundreds of colony world nobles, Yu Meng split the crowd with his head held high.

Hearing him, the shouting and yelling Yu Clan world nobles immediately shut their mouths. In a great shock, they stared at Yu Meng and the hundreds of colony world nobles who had melted their erect eyes and now looked just like the human beings in Pan Gu world.

The erect eye of a Yu Clan man was his most important source of power, and a lock on his soul. Melting the erect eye meant freeing himself from this lock, and stepping into a higher grade. In Pan Yu world, the top-grade family members would have a qualification to strive for the positions of 'crowns', 'seals', and 'staffs' once they melted their erect eye!

The hundreds of colony world nobles around Yu Meng didn't have high positions in the Yu Clan society, but their powers were real!

Earlier, Ji Hao performed a slaughter in Liang Zhu City, killing a large number of 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs'. Since then, their leaders in Pan Yu world hadn't sent new true power-holders into Pan Gu world, Yu Meng and these colony world nobles were absolutely powerful enough to control Liang Zhu City!

"Yu Meng!" Yu Huo's clone stared at Yu Meng with wrath and asked, "What do you want?"

A cloud of sand spiraled up from around Yu Meng's body. He flashed across the air and brought a wave of sand up from the stage, then walked out from the sand and stood firmly on the stage. He also raised his golden staff and gave Yu Huo's clone a heavy bash.

Yu Meng showed no mercy when making this move. The golden staff broke the chest bones of Yu Huo's clone and sent him down the stage, flying hundreds of meters away.

While vomiting blood, Yu Huo's clone looked at Yu Meng. He couldn't believe this — 'How dare Yu Meng do that?'

"I will only say two things!" Standing on the stage, Yu Meng growled, "First, Pan Gu world is a fleshy piece of meat indeed, but if you don't move your knives and forks, the meat will not fall into your mouths. So, we need to start swallowing Pan Gu world."

"Second, about the division of profits, in one year, the one who earns the largest credit will be responsible for conquering Pan Gu world, and be in charge of the final division of profit! Anyone disagrees?" Yu Meng raised his golden staff high and roared harshly.

The hundreds of colony world nobles who followed Yu Meng into this meeting place burst into bright cheers in one voice.

The leaders of a large number of colony world families raised their weapons and roared thunderously. Following their voices, numberless colony world warriors from the boundless military

camps outside the city all roared like beasts.

"No objection!" Yu Meng smilingly looked at those stunned Pan Yu world nobles and said, "Alright everyone, we will dispatch our troops in at most half a month. Our target is ...Yao Mountain City! First, let's take out the divine emperors in this world and control the heaven!"

Chapter 1810: Associate With the Evils

A torrent of flowing sand came windingly from the north and brushed across the edge of Pu Ban City, roaring towards Yao Mountain City. Treading on the flowing sand and rushing with giant steps were numberless beast-headed colony world warriors, holding all kinds of oddly shaped staffs. In the desert environment, these desert worlds warriors moved as fast as the wind. Shreds of afterimages were left behind each of them.

Large groups of meters tall scorpion warriors existed among these beast-headed warriors. Their upper bodies were of muscular men, but their lower bodies were of dark scorpions. These strong creatures carried heavy long spears with their muscular arms. While running, they wielded the spears from time to time and caused muffled swishing noises.

While passing by Pu Ban City, these scorpion warriors wielded their long spears to display their strengths to the human warriors who were guarding the border of the city. Their heavy spears penetrated the air and generated waves of white air blasts, which spread for hundreds of meters, rustled these human warriors' clothes, and made their armors clank.

Before, when facing such a challenge, these human warriors would have rushed directly up and minced these scorpion warriors. After all, this was Pu Ban City, the capital of the alliance of human clans, the center of the human society, and the holy realm in the heart of every human being. Any non-human creature who dared to challenge the humankind in this place would end up being chopped into pieces.

But at this moment, these human warriors were looking at the scorpion warriors expressionlessly and dumbly. Their weapons were dropped on the ground or leaned against rocks and trees, while they stayed motionless, watching these non-human warriors trample across the territory of the humankind.

They still had the courage to fight, but they had already lost their goal and direction.

The leadership of the humankind was in disorder; the human society was chaotic and messy. The human leaders didn't just make a mess for themselves, they had suppressed the spirit of the entire humankind to an extreme degree. Human warriors didn't know what they wanted anymore, or whose command should they follow; they didn't even know who to listen to!

When Emperor Shun was here, even though some large family people were double-faced, all human beings were united and shared one goal of defeating the non-humankind. But, after Gong Sun Xun became the emperor, the spirit of the humankind collapsed thoroughly. Human warriors suddenly turned into a piece of tofu from a severely-hammered steel block. They were frustrated, without any fighting will. Their bodies remained alive, but as warriors, they were already dead.

In a palace of Emperor Xun, an extravagant party was taking place. It was an ambiance of dance and music; countless naked young human girls were singing and dancing a dance of sky devils. The palace was suffused by a decadent atmosphere that could truly make people fall. Emperor Xun, the human leaders in the palace, as well as Yu Meng and his people who came to visit, all had a strange pinkness on their faces.

Laughing with a hissing voice, Emperor Xun tremblingly handed a light-green ointment to Yu Meng and said, "Master Yu Meng, come, try this, try this. It's 'five spirits ointment', made from the essence of 'spirit-fading blossoms', 'soul-losing grasses', 'spirit-dying veins', 'mind-falling trees' and 'soul-missing leaves', all Southern Wasteland plants. It's wonderful, too wonderful for words!"

Emperor Xun's face was ruddy. He even had a three-centimeters-long stream of saliva hanging on a corner of his mouth when he was talking. "Try, try it... Hah, you take it, then find the youngest

girls to do it. That feeling...It's like you're about to squirt your marrow out of your bones... So wonderful! You'll feel like you are in heaven!"

Yu Meng took over the ointment, stared at Emperor Xun in shock, as if he was a ghost.

White Flower Skylark Family had conquered a whole hundred desert worlds. In any of these worlds, a vast large one or a small one with a single piece of continent, the world's owners fought like real warriors. They and their people showered in blood and fought against the invaders as hard as they could.

Nevertheless, as the highest leader of human beings, who were chosen by the natural fortune of the great Pan Gu world, Emperor Xun actually invited the leader of the invaders to enjoy a drug called 'five spirit ointment' together!

Throwing the ointment to the ground, Yu Meng looked at Emperor Xun and laughed happily, "Emperor Xun, if the recent three generations of human emperors were all like you, my White Flower Skylark Family would have been able to destroy the humankind and dominate the entire Pan Gu world all by ourselves."

The palace immediately fell into a dead silence. All dancing and singing girls paused, not daring to move. The group of human leaders stood up with dark faces as they stared at Yu Meng fiercely. In their eyes, dark mists and blood-red lights were interleaving, while a strange energy had been spreading from their bodies. They looked like bloodthirsty beasts, with no spark of wit on their faces.

After shaking his head, which was heavy because of the drug, Emperor Xun's eyes shone brightly. Abruptly, he pointed at Yu Meng and laughed out loud, "What did you say? Destroy humankind? Hah, Yu Dynasty tried for so many years, but still failed...Hah!"

Shaking his head again, Emperor Xun glanced at the ointment on

the ground and sighed heavily, "That's a good thing. Why don't you cherish it?"

Emperor Xun chuckled and ripped off his shirt, then smiled at Yu Meng and continued, "Alright, alright, let's not mention these words which might hurt our friendship. We're families, families...Especially Master Yemo Tian and I, we're old friends, old friends!"

While talking and laughing, Emperor Xun waved his hand towards Yu Huo's clone, who had mingled in the crowd, saying, "Master Yemo Tian? Why don't you come here? Hah, this time, you came to ask me to join you, right? No problem, absolutely no problem. For Master Yemo Tian's sake, I can do anything!"

Emperor Xun stood up and carried a pure golden wine pot as he shambled to Yemo Tian. While walking, he laughed, "March armies, march armies! Eh, call all warriors in You Chong Mountain area back! With that bloody cauldron standing there, we can't break the clan anyway. Call them all back, and let them attack Yao Mountain City! Hah, I'll cut off Ji Hao kid's head. He has two nice girls, doesn't he? Get the two girls back to serve me!"

Emperor Xun raised his head and burped, then grasped Yemo Tian's hand and chuckled, "Alright, Master Yemo Tian? I ordered them to do so only for your sake!"

Abruptly, he turned around and yelled harshly at the group of clan leaders on the palace, "March armies! Have you heard me? Gather all your clansmen, everyone who can wield a weapon! Gather them and make them attack Yao Mountain City! Attack the heaven! I, Gong Sun Xun, don't want to be the human emperor anymore. I want to sit on a divine throne too!"

Emperor Shun hollered insanely, and the group of human leaders laughed insanely. They raised their arms and twisted their feet, then staggeringly rushed out of the palace while giving out their orders.

Yu Meng and his people looked at Yu Huo's clone with suspicion.

Yu Huo's clone looked at them quite proudly, 'You didn't think that Emperor Xun is completely under Yu Huo's control, did you? You colony world bumpkins better be careful when attacking Yao Mountain City!'

Chapter 1811: Everyone Has A Plan

In a secret hall that was hiding inside a mountain behind Emperor Xun's palace, Dragon Mother sat in an armchair, lazily leaning against a chair arm. A few beautiful oyster girls with silver shells had been attentively giving her a massage.

In the hall, nine large jade tables were placed in a straight line, covered with delicate dishes and the best wines. Shixin and his brothers each sat by a table, wolfing the food and gulping the wine with bowls. The wine flowed to their chests through their mouth corners, then dripped on the ground. Each of them had a large puddle under their feet, and the secret hall was suffused by a strong scent of alcohol.

Hundreds of dragon elders who determinedly followed Dragon Mother's lead stood in the hall, passionately looking at Dragon Mother and her nine boys. In their eyes, Ao Bai, Niu Qiu and their brothers were too mild and steady-going to be their leaders. Instead, Dragon Mother and her boys, who were brutal, cruel, and ferocious, who followed nothing but their instincts and never hesitated when killing people, fit their moral standard more.

Dragons should stand above the world, be brutal and violent, and bully the weak creatures as much as they liked. If they don't, their strong bodies passed down by the dragon ancestor would be wasted, wouldn't they?

About ten priests, who could be disciples of the three 'Pengs', stood before Dragon Mother's chair. They and Dragon Mother had all been looking at a giant water mirror. The mirror was sparkling, and through it, they saw every move of everyone in the palace. They saw every change of expression on the faces of Emperor Xun, Yu Meng, and Yu Huo's clone. Everything happening in Emperor Xun's palace was under their close watch.

"So, it turned out that this kid luckily ascended to the throne

because someone controlled his soul and spirit, right?" Dragon Mother threw a sideways glance at Emperor Xun though the mirror and chuckled coldly, "Not only him, these clan leaders too. Are you sure that they'll listen to you?"

A white-bearded priest gave Dragon Mother an affirmative smile and responded, "Elder, please don't worry. Even though this non-humankind being has sneakily controlled Emperor Xun's mind, his every move is under our control."

Narrowing his eyes, this white-bearded priest laughed, "Now, we just let them help these non-humankind beings in attacking Yao Mountain City and the heaven with all his power. It's best if they shatter the sky and sink the ground. What's even better is if these Pan Yu world saints and the few powerful beings in the heaven fall an internecine war!"

"You wish!" Dragon Mother grabbed a fruit from a jade tray aside and smashed it on the white-bearded priest's face. The juicy fruit exploded, splashing the juice all over the priest's face. "How can everything in the world follow your plan? How can things be so easy?"

The priest raised a finger and germinated a stream of clear water, cleaning the juice off. He didn't get angry, or he dared not to get angry. He just smilingly bowed to Dragon Mother and said politely, "Elder, because not everything can go as our Masters planned, our Masters asked you for help!"

"Elder, you're so powerful. In the whole world, only a couple of people can rival you. Since our Shifu has already allied with Original Devil, this..." The priest chuckled and fawned on Dragon Mother.

A golden light suddenly shone out of Dragon Mother's eyes as she straightened her body and said slowly, "Original Devil? Is that the evil spirit that Pan Gu cut out of himself back in the old time? Which means, we have five people on our side who are equally

powerful..."

Pondered shortly, Dragon Mother laughed with a cold hissing voice and said, "But, your three masters are eccentric, and Original Devil is the most unreliable one. If I ally with them, I would need to worry about the lives of my nine boys!"

"That is not possible. After all..." The priest gave a dry laugh and said.

Dragon Mother snorted coldly and interrupted the priest in a frosty tone, "That is very possible. Your three Masters and Original Devil are all awfully unreliable. I would trust them only if my brain had turned into water."

Dragon Mother suddenly stood up and laughed, "We've started this, so we need to finish this. In the old days, I had a couple of old friends. We got along well with each other. Since I'm already out, I shall let them out too. Hmm, let me think... The most reliable one is..."

The expression on the white-bearded priest's face changed slightly. "Elder, please..." He said hurriedly.

Dragon Mother moved swiftly. She raised her right hand and slapped down. A thunderous 'boom' could be heard as she turned the priest into a meat pie, splashing blood and flesh pieces to tens of meters away. Dragon Mother's eyes suddenly turned blood-red while sneering through gritted teeth, "I do whatever I want. Do you little things have the right to tell me what to do? In the old days, the dragon ancestor always, always restrained me. I couldn't defeat him, so I gave up...But, what do you think you are? You don't get to talk to me!"

"Amma, I say we don't ally with them. Let's kill all these little things and then eat them while they're still warm. No matter what they want Emperor Xun to do, we dragons are strong enough...We can just kill everyone, Hah!" With a vicious grin, Shixin raised his head and said.

Shigu stood up to applaud. "Amma, big bro is right! We're not good at playing dirty tricks, but we're good at killing! Why do we waste time talking to them? We dragons are going to rule Pan Gu world, and we can just kill everyone who disagrees!"

A frosty light shone out of Dragon Mother's eyes while a fierce power spread from her body. With her teeth clenched, she sneered and said, "You little scums, I haven't seen you for years, but you have improved, huh? That's not a bad idea. Why should we dragons play dirty tricks with them?"

An aura of killing rose straight from Dragon Mother's head, forming a cloud of blood mist, looming on the entire hall. The group of priests was scared to death. Among them, the one with light-silver eyes hurriedly shouted out loud, "Elder, please don't kill us! There is one thing that we haven't gotten the chance to tell you yet. It's very important! Our masters were going to talk to you about it face to face. Do you wanna know?"

Dragon Mother giggled. Looking at the priest, she gave a twisted smile and said, "Tell me, what's so important that can even save your lives? Tell me now. If it's truly useful, I'll spare your lowly lives. But, if it's not, you will become a nice meal for my boys!"

The priest took a deep breath and then said quickly, "Perhaps, the dragon ancestor didn't fall, and neither did he leave the world for the Chaos. Maybe, he is not missing. Instead, he has isolated himself for the cultivation of 'Hibernated Dragon Nine Death' method...same as Qiu Niu and his brothers...Dragons don't have souls and spirits. A dragon only has one dragon pearl, which gathers all its spirit power. The 'Hibernated Dragon Nine Death' can change this. It's said that through this cultivation method, a dragon can break the dragon pearl and attain an embryo of Dao, after finishing nine rounds of life and death..."

The expressions on Dragon Mother and her boys' faces changed. "The old b*stard..." Dragon Mother hollered.

Dragon Mother slightly opened her mouth. Then abruptly, she laughed out loud with a frosty voice, "It seems that I do need to ask my old friends for help."

Chapter 1812: Shocking Encounter

In the wilderness, a dead tree stood by a slowly flowing winding river.

Emperor Shun sat on a rock by the river, under the tree. His body was stooping, looking like an old withered tree which had lost its tree heart. Strands of dark mist had been rising from his eyes. He fixed those eyes on the water, on the few foot-long fishes which stayed on the bottom of the river, and stayed motionless.

A golden light had been shining out of his body. That was the light of natural reward power. Every gleam of natural reward light was wrapped in a dense dark mist. The dark mist was generated from the great evil power of Pan Yu's brain, which was a pre-world supreme treasure, and controlled by Yu Huo. Because of Pan Yu's brain, Emperor Shun let Emperor Xun take his place and brought a disastrous thunderstorm to the humankind.

The golden light of natural rewards had been flowing out of his body in streams. Emperor Shun's face was twitching, his eyes filled with pain.

He was trying his best to fight against the power of Pan Yu's brain by consuming his natural reward power that he accumulated over most of his lifetime. Yu Huo was still trapped in the defensive great formation in Priest Mu and Priest Hua' peaceful world, and had no spare energy to control Emperor Shun. Therefore, the evil power inside Emperor Shun's body was shaken slightly. By consuming his natural rewards power, Emperor Shun managed to keep himself half awake and half sleep.

"The non-humankind...Monsters...I wish I could...kill all of you..." Emperor Shun isolated himself from the crowd and crouched in the desolate wilderness, quietly enduring the pain and silently struggling.

He was not only suffering from the evil power of Pan Yu's brain.

As his heart was shaken, the seed of devil had sprouted in his heart. He bit his tongue over and over again to stimulate his spirit with an unbearable pain, and to forcibly suppress the devil seed which was roaring inside his heart.

"Devil? I'm a human being, not a devil." Emperor Shun showed a faint, simple, and honest smile on his twitching face. "I'd rather die than become a devil. So, stop murmuring...I'll definitely die before I become a devil!"

Suddenly, a faint man-shaped silhouette flashed across Emperor Shun's forehead. Next, all kinds of desires and emotions were aroused in his heart, growing like weeds. Aside from the Sky Devil, another strong force was quietly generated when Emperor Shun's heart was unbalanced. Emperor Shun snorted in pain, then a stream of blood flew out of his mouth corner.

"Not Pan Yu's brain, not Original Devil...Ah, you..." Emperor Shun closed his eyes while enduring the pain inside him, which was as strong as a boiling lava. "We human beings, how calamitous our life is? Can't we just live peacefully without worry?"

"We, human beings don't have sharp teeth and claws. We walk upright; we can't run as fast as the wild beasts. We don't have wings, so we can't fly. Our eyes can only see what's in front of us, but some wild beasts can look around at the surrounding environments without turning their necks. In forests, we're the best prey that can be attacked from the back so easily."

"We were born so weak. Our life was never easy. We don't have much ambition. Generation after generation, led by the wise ones among us, we just wanted our bloodline to pass on and our culture to continue developing."

"We respect the heaven and earth, gods and ghosts; we worship the souls of our ancestors with reverence...We follow laws and rules; we talk carefully, and work cautiously. With our fragile bodies, we fought against hurricanes, floods, and diseases."

"We don't pursue immoral lives. After we die, ashes to ashes, dust to dust. We're created by nature, so we will return to nature after death. We came to the world to appreciate the beauties of this world and to develop our bloodlines, then we would leave with no regrets."

"We're so weak and insignificant, but why won't you leave us alone? Why are you forcing us to start wars, to fight each other? Why do you want us to grow discord? Why do you want our brothers and sisters to become enemies?"

Emperor Shun curled up on the rock, his eyes closed while mumbling to himself, "I am an old man. I have never lived an extravagant life. I have no wild wishes about delicate food; I only drink the cheapest grain liquor. I'm so old, yet you leeched on me, disturbed my soul and body."

"You, have pushed us too far..." Took a deep breath, Emperor Shun squeezed a few words out of his tightly clenched teeth. "We, human beings, are weak indeed, but how can you trample over us? I wish I could pull out my sword and kill every one of you."

An evil voice chuckled inside Emperor Shun's body. That was the voice of Original Devil. "Kill every one of us? Can you still do that? Emperor Shun, just follow your heart. Fall, let yourself fall. Why're you fighting back? Does your skin feel comfortable under coarse clothes? Is steamed brown rice tasty? Is the flavorless grain liquor good? You're still with the old lady in your house, but why don't you look at all those beautiful young human girls who have been waiting for you?"

"You're the human emperor! You should release your desires and emotions. But look at you... You cast all your desires and emotions away from your souls. You made yourself live like a puppet with flesh and blood...Is living such a life fair to yourself?"

Emperor Shun's body twitched intensely. He smiled faintly and responded, "Me living this simple life is fair to all human beings!"

A bright light suddenly shone from the edge of this wild area. Wherever the warm light shone upon, all plants thrived. Abruptly, colorful wild flowers bloomed all over this wild land. When the light landed on the dead tree by Emperor Shun's side, the tree was brought back to life. Leaves grew out from the withered branches, and the tree quickly turned vigorous.

Surrounded by the light, a tall figure slowly moved to Emperor Shun.

It was a godlike man who had a human body and a snake tail, with a xylophone carried on the back and a long ruler held in the left hand. The warm light was emitted from his body. This man with a majestic face moved across the wildland and came to Emperor Shun.

"Shun, I spent quite some time to find you. You do know where to hide!" The man smiled and pressed a hand on Emperor Shun's shoulder. A warm and natural force flooded into Emperor Shun's body. Inside Emperor Shun's body, Original Devil, who had just arisen from Emperor Shun's heart, cursed with extremely nasty languages before the warm force instantly destroyed him.

Next, a faintly audible howl could be heard from Emperor Shun's body. The power of Pan Yu's brain that lingered in his body was suddenly gone, turning strands of grey mist that dissipated in the air.

A strange light sparkled simultaneously on Emperor Shun's forehead, heart, and lower abdomen. Next, three beams of light flew out of his body, flashing into the sky. But, as the snake-tailed man gently wielded the ruler in his left hand, a shrill scream could be heard, and the three light beams were dimmed.

Emperor Shun opened his eyes and blinked, looking at the snake-tailed man. He was stunned.

"You...are back!" Emperor Shun stood up, then solemnly kneeled and kowtowed to the snake-tailed man. "How have you been?"

The man smilingly looked at Emperor Shun, then gently patted his head and responded, "Everything is good...Not only me, but the ones who should be back are also all back. The Praying and Sanctification altar is finished. We should start working."

Chapter 1813: Dragon Mother's Old Friends

In Feng Dao Mount, the foods were eaten up and the wine was drunk to the dregs.

Priest Tong Jiong raised a wine pot and shook it for quite a while. After the last drop of wine fell into his mouth, he cast his eyes on Mr. Crow with disappointment and said, "Little crow, is this all you have? You don't come here every day, so why didn't you bring more?"

Mr. C7row blinked and spread his hands.

He came here with Ji Hao to look for treasures, not for a picnic. He brought these foods and wine because he was an eater. In the journey, these foods and wine could satisfy his cravings. Before the journey started, how could he know that in a place called Feng Dao Mount, a gluttonous priest named Tong Jiong was actually be sealed in a jade board?

Sighed slightly, Tong Jiong dropped the wine pot and filled the jade board up with his face while looking at Ji Hao pitifully and saying, "Will you come to visit again? If you come again, can you bring more meat and wine? You bring me ten-thousand potfuls of wine from the heaven, and I'll give you one lecture. How's that?"

Ji Hao blinked his eyes, looking at Tong Jiong. "May I ask about your cultivation level?" Said Ji Hao with a dry laugh.

Tong Jiong laughed and hurriedly responded, "My Dao is the great Dao of natural magnetic force. My soul has already merged with the great Dao of nature. I will never die as long as this world exists. Am I qualified to give you a lecture?"

"A saint?" Ji Hao stared at Tong Jiong in shock.

Tong Jiong was a little embarrassed. He scratched his scalp and pondered, then slowly nodded and said, "My soul can never die or be destroyed, so you can call me a saint if you insist. But, a true

saint can merge his or her soul with the great Dao of nature, as well as split his soul from the great Dao of nature. A true saint should be able to freely come in to and get out of the great Dao of nature, as easily as reading his or her own palm prints. That's what a true saint can do."

"I sent my soul into the great Dao of nature, but my soul can't come out. Or in other words, in the vast great Dao of nature, my soul has to stay extra careful to keep itself from being assimilated by the great Dao of nature. Otherwise, I would become a puppet of the great Dao."

Pondering carefully for quite a while, Priest Tong Jiong smiled at Ji Hao and continued, "I think I can be counted as a ninety-five percent saint, right?"

Ji Hao understood what he said. Looking at Tong Jiong, he asked another question, "Then, the ones who sealed you..."

Tong Jiong narrowed his eyes and said blandly, "Seventy percent, eighty percent, ninety percent, but all weaker than me. Because they were weaker than me, they needed to drug me and seal me in here."

"It has been so many years. I wonder what level these old friends are at now." Tong Jiong gave a long sigh.

"Were they really too ashamed to take your treasures?" Ji Hao asked curiously while fiddling with the pair of calabashes. The surface of the calabashes was smooth and lustrous, looking like the best white jade.

Tong Jiong looked at Ji Hao with laughter. Having laughed for a while, he gave a reply slowly, "It's possible for the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag. It can turn the space upside down, disorder the universe, and mess up the time and space. Being trapped in it, even a saint would need to spend a lot of time to free him or herself. This is a great treasure, indeed."

Smiled faintly, Tong Jiong then pointed at the pair of calabashes and continued in a mild tone, "But, if I don't tell, who could know which one of these two is the dead calabash and which one is the living calabash? Without a proper method, anyone who opens the dead calabash would immediately suffer the first intent of killing from the world. Only saints might survive that, and they too have a fifty percent chance of dying directly!"

Ji Hao's face darkened a little. He took out the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag and smiled bitterly while asking, "If they dared not to take the pair of calabashes, this flag..."

Tong Jiong smiled even more brightly. "This Tai-Yi magnetic force is one of my three spirit treasures. It's a reasonable thing that I merged the powers of these three treasures together. So, once this flag is separated from the pair of calabashes for more than ten thousand miles, it would immediately gather the natural magnetic forces and set a great formation to trap the enemies. Then, the dead calabash would fly over to kill the ones trapped by the flag."

Tong Gong squeezed his eyes to Ji Hao and continued, "They were weaker than me, so they couldn't break the seal on these three treasures, and dared not to destroy the seal with violence. And, they couldn't split the treasures evenly. Therefore, they left these treasures here...Far from eyes, far from the heart. These are genuine treasures. If they take these, and look at them everyday without being able to use them, wouldn't that be a tremendous suffering? Would that be frustrating? Wouldn't that shake their hearts of Dao?"

Ji Hao paused in shock. He looked at the three treasures and silently wondered which one was the dead calabash and which one was the living calabash. If he wrongly opened the dead calabash, he would have to take a strong strike from it, wouldn't he? And, since these three treasures were tightly connected, would the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag remain unmoved while the dead calabash launched a severe strike?

"Elder, you've eaten a ton of food that we brought!" Ji Hao looked at Tong Jiong with a fake smile.

"But my little friend, I've told you quite some ancient secrets, haven't I?" Tong Jiong was also wearing a fake smile on his face. "Especially the story about the three 'Pengs'. In the present world, how many people can tell you about them? Isn't my story-telling worthy of a nice meal?"

Having remained silent for quite a while, Ji Hao raised the pair of calabashes and said, "The human beings are facing powerful enemies. I should use the power of the living calabash..."

"Oh, oh, someone knowledgeable guided you here." Tong Jiong said quickly, "The first trace of life-force in the living calabash is absorbing essence natural powers and generating a magical spring that can boost up your power and cultivation. And, your increased power and cultivation will be especially pure, like the power of a saint. Good idea, good plan! I've been trapped in here for countless years, and indeed, a measureless amount of spring has accumulated in the living calabash, but..."

"Letting you out will be impossible. Elder, can you change to another condition?" Ji Hao said immediately.

Tong Jiong frowned and remained silent. His face filled up the entire jade board and his eyes blinked, fixed on Ji Hao.

Suddenly, Tong Jiong turned to the entrance of the cave and said, "Crazy woman? Why're you here? How did you find this place? And you, ah, oh, Bitter Bamboo Mountain Master. Old bamboo, that time you bloomed and grew so many seeds, but phoenixes dropped on you and took ninety percent of your seeds, almost collapsing your foundation of Dao. You disappeared since then. How come...Do you now have the guts to come out?"

Ji Hao was startled. He slowly turned around and saw Dragon Mother standing by the entrance, her face filled with excitement. Standing beside her was a tall and scrawny priest, whose face was

covered in a faint green mist.

"Hah, I was right! I was in the starry void, passing by this area, and I sensed your smell. Hah, I followed the smell. Then you're...You're Priest Tong Jiong, aren't you? You took one thousand, three-hundred and seventy-two dragon eggs from our dragon-kind, and ate them all. Boiled, fried, steamed, grilled, you ate them all! Have you enjoyed that meal? Were you happy? Were you satisfied?" Dragon Mother even trembled excitedly.

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. Dragon Mother truly had an...acute sense of smell.

Ji Hao then couldn't help but take a glance back at Tong Jiong. As he thought, this old Priest Tong Jiong was truly not an easygoing one!

Chapter 1814: Lazy Tong Jiong

"Eh? Ah, yeah, I ate over a thousand dragon eggs. Those were really good, much tastier than phoenix-eggs, peafowl eggs, rosefinch eggs, pheasant eggs, sparrow eggs, and any other kind of egg!" Tong Jiong gave a bright grin, curving his eyes into a pair of lines. "Not only your dragon eggs, I've also eaten that Dark Sand Dragon King, who was guarding the Dark Sand Abyss..."

A tremor went through Dragon Mother's body. As she burst into a raging roar, a few golden sharp tusks reached out of her mouth.

"Dark Sand Dragon King was my grandson...He was my oldest grandson, and he was even more talented than Shixin and his brothers. If he weren't missing..."

Dragon Mother stared fiercely at Priest Tong Jiong, her eyes shining with a blood-red light.

"Oh, he wasn't missing. He's right here!" Tong Jiong looked at Dragon Mother grinningly and patted his own belly. "Crazy woman, you know me. All my life, I have loved nothing more than good food. That day, I passed by Dark Sand Abyss and saw Dark Sand Dragon King bathing in the water. His muscles were so strong and his skin was really smooth that I just wanted to bite him the moment I saw him!"

Dragon Mother quivered slightly, and her face was blushed.

Ji Hao silently took two steps towards one side of the jade board. He dared not to stand right in front of the jade board anymore, because Dragon Mother seemed about to lose her temper and launch a strike at any moment. Ji Hao didn't want to get himself hurt in the crossfire.

"You know me. Back in the old days, I was famous for doing whatever I wanted. So, I took Dark Sand Dragon King. Hmm, he was really delicious." Tong Jiong's eyes were even glowing. "I even

ate his pair of dragon horns. I softened those horns in divine yak butter, then seasoned them with a whole thousand kinds of spirit herbs..."

Dragon Mother gave a sonorous roar. She moved, marching straight to the jade board while leaving thousands of shreds of afterimages behind. At that moment, Ji Hao activated his eye of Dao as much as he could, but still failed to see her movements clearly. He saw nothing but beams of golden light flashing all over the air, then gathered on the jade board at last.

Dense clouds of colorful mist rose from the jade board. The warm glowing clouds exploded like fireworks and caused a series of muffled booms, which gave Ji Hao a piercing ear pain. The nine weapons inside the nine pillars in the cave simultaneously emitted a frosty light. Next, along with a loud clank, a blade shadow flew out of the jade board and landed heavily on Dragon Mother's body, which suddenly appeared before the jade board.

Dragon Mother shook her head. The blade shadow landed on her foot-tall, luxurious crown. The pearls, diamonds, and gemstones inlaid on the crown released countless beams of fiery light, which then condensed into a meters wide dragon head above Dragon Mother's head. The dragon head bit the blade shadow and wrestled it.

All of a sudden, a cold wind blew across Ji Hao's face, and he immediately activated the Pan Gu bell. Following a rumbling bang, Dragon Mother, who was fighting against the blade shadow just now, abruptly showed up before his face, with her claws pierced into the Chaos power streams released from the Pan Gu bell. The Chaos power streams kept Dragon Mother's sharp fingernails away from Ji Hao. The golden fingernails penetrated layers of Chaos power and nearly touched Ji Hao's skin.

"Elder, take revenge for your grandson first!" Ji Hao looked at Dragon Mother and gave a dry laugh. "We did have a conflict, but we don't have to kill each other for that, do we? We're not there

yet. Priest Tong Jiong ate your grandson!"

To be honest, Ji Hao didn't want to fight Dragon Mother face to face.

She was crazy, and her behavior was unpredictable. A second ago, she was bashing the jade board, fighting against the blade shadow. But all so suddenly, she turned around and launched a lethal attack on Ji Hao. Ji Hao truly didn't want to fight such an ever-changing powerful being.

A fiery light shone out of Dragon Mother's crown. Above her head, the enormous dragon head moved suddenly. Following a series of cracking noise, the blade shadow and the dragon head both shattered into incalculable pieces. Dragon Mother glanced at the Pan Gu bell, then turned back and sneered at Priest Tong Jiong, "Finally, I know what happened to my grandson."

The jade board was no longer filled with Tong Jiong's face. Tong Jiong showed his whole body, hands resting on the waist, with his chest puffed out. "Yes, I ate him. I, Priest Tong Jiong, have the courage to admit the things that I've done. I won't lie. I just did it. I'm right here, crazy woman. Come on, break this jade board! Beat me, curse me, torture me, trample on me!"

With a strong excitement, Tong Jiong ripped open his red robe, extended his neck as much as he could, and slapped it loudly. "I did it, I admit it. I ate your grandson. Come on, my head is right here. Come cut it off!" He yelled.

Dragon Mother's face twitched with wrath. She slowly bent her body and gasped heavily. Strands of hot power rose from her head, raising the temperature rapidly.

She was going ballistic.

Tong Jiong had still been twisting his body in the jade board, slapping his neck and grinning to Dragon Mother while yelling, "Come on, come beat me, will you? You can't beat me, can you?

Ah, you're so angry!"

Tong Jiong laughed and leaped around. At last, he directly turned back and wagged his butt towards Dragon Mother while shouting, "Come on, come on... Come beat me, will you? Crazy woman, aren't you the best children protector? Black Sand Dragon King had shown your bloodline, not the dragon ancestor's. That means he was a true descendant of yours. What a pity, what a great pity that I ate him."

Dragon Mother was so angry that her eyes were even unfocused. Also because of the anger, blood foam began oozing out of her mouth corners. She gasped deeply and raised her golden glowing hands, seeming ready to pounce on Tong Jiong.

Right at this moment, Bitter Bamboo Mountain Master began talking slowly. "Dragon Mother, my old friend, don't fall into his trap. Tong Jiong is clearly sealed in this jade board by some other people because he has done too many evil things. If you break this jade board, he'd be free. Tong Jiong is a master of magnetic force. His power affects everything in this world. If he gets out, it wouldn't be so easy to deal with him."

Dragon Mother was enlightened. She slowly straightened her body and smiled at Tong Jiong, who was stunned in the jade board. "So, you're sealed in here, aren't you?" Dragon Mother clicked her tongue and said, "Let me see... Ah, indeed, this is a sealing formation. These nine pre-world supreme treasures...Some people were actually willing to seal you with nine pre-world supreme treasure!"

Tong Jiong's face immediately turned dark and wrinkled. He helplessly gave Bamboo Master a bitter grin while saying, "Is this fun? Why? Why? Bitter Bamboo, Bitter Bamboo, you have always been standing aloof from the worldly affairs. Why did you tell her my secret?"

"That year, I bloomed, but my seeds were mostly robbed by

phoenixes. My friend Dragon Mother drove away those feathered monsters and saved my life. So, I need to return this favor." Said Bamboo Master slowly.

Tong Jiong remained silent shortly, then nodded. "Dragon Mother, do you remember your tenth son, who was also a dark-skinned one? I ate him too!"

Both Ji Hao and Bamboo Master smiled bitterly, while Dragon Mother went hysterical. She lost the control of herself and bumped straight into the jade board with her head.

Chapter 1815: Priest Sadness

A quick, shrill series of clanks and clinks could be heard from the cave. Head strikes, kicks, punches, scratches, all kinds of violent moves made by Dragon Mother landed on the jade board like a storm.

The jade board was glowing splendidly. Strands of mist spiraled up from it, strongly defending against Dragon Mother's attacks. The weapons inside the nine pillars had been releasing shreds of sharp and cold shadows...Blade shadows, sword shadows, axe shadows...Fierce forces burst from the jade board from time to time and struck heavily on Dragon Mother's body.

Since this jade board had trapped Priest Tong Jiong for so many years, without a doubt, it must be incredibly strong. Dragon Mother bashed madly, but failed to leave even a mark on it.

Tong Jiong stood inside the jade board, laughing at Dragon Mother, "Try harder! Carry on! Come to beat me! Come to kill me! Don't hesitate! I ate your tenth son, so what? That's how ancient Pan Gu world was!"

"You kill me, I kill you; you eat me, I eat you. Large fishes eat small fishes, small fishes eat shrimps. But, every time big fishes grew fleshy and adorable, you dragons would eat them before me! Dragons can eat other creatures, so why can't I eat dragons? I'm priest Tong Jiong, not a human being, not a dragon, nor a phoenix. I'm not one of you, so I can surely eat you!"

"Eh, tell you what? I've tried almost all creatures in the ancient Pan Gu world, but of all, dragons were the chewiest ones, especially their tendons...Their crystal, elastic, strong tendons... Ahyaya, I am such a great cook. Back then, I made a sour soup with the water from the Bitter Ocean eye. Boiled in that soup, the dragon tendons turned soft and mellow...That's called delicious!"

Dragon Mother was infuriated. Red-edged dark scales grew out of

her skin and straightened up. Every single scale was sharp as a dagger. She roared like a beast and bumped into the jade board over and over again, causing rumbling noises and making the nine pillars sparkle eye-dazzlingly.

While Dragon Mother was crazily striking the jade board, Ji Hao silently turned around and walked straight away.

Regarding which calabash was dead and which was leading, Ji Hao believed that unsolvable issue didn't exist in the world. In the worst case, he could give up on boosting up his power and cultivation with the spring in the living calabash.

Rather than focusing on the problem of differentiating the living calabash and the dead calabash, he believed that he should leave this place as quickly as possible now. Dragon Mother was already driven to madness, yet Priest Tong Jiong had still been stimulating her. If she failed to break the jade board and decided to vent on Ji Hao, he would seriously suffer.

Ji Hao told himself to leave now. He and Mr. Crow moved silently towards the entrance of the cave, but Bamboo Master made a sideways step and blocked their way. Bamboo Master smiled and shook his head to Ji Hao while saying, "My friend, please stay. You are Emperor Ji Hao, aren't you? Before we came, Dragon Mother said that she has to peel you and pull out your tendons. So, my friend, you can't leave now."

Ji Hao halted briefly. "Elder, are you going against the heaven? Attacking divine emperors is a heavy offense." With a bitter smile, he said to Bamboo Master.

Bamboo Master grinned brightly and said, "It will be a heavy offense indeed. But the heaven can't do anything to me. Divine Emperors are in high positions indeed, but we are beyond the noisy world. We can kill divine emperors, no big deal. Emperor Ji Hao, you have no idea how many divine emperors died a mysterious death since the heaven appeared, do you?"

Ji Hao took a deep breath. He waved the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag and the pair of calabashes in his hands, then asked, "Elder, are you really going to stand in my way?"

Bamboo Master smilingly glanced at the three treasures in Ji Hao's hands, threw a question back, "Emperor Ji Hao, do you really have the courage to use these treasures? Priest Tong Jiong's temper…You're young, my friend. I'm afraid you don't know much about him, do you?"

Bamboo Master's smile was getting warmer and warmer. He wielded the green bamboo stick in his hand and spread shreds of afterimages. Next, a boundless bamboo forest appeared around Ji Hao. A breeze blew across and rustled the bamboo leaves. Bamboo Master gradually disappeared from the bamboo forest while saying, "Priest Tong Jiong's three treasures were well-renowned back in the ancient time. Tong Jiong has eaten many things that he shouldn't eat. Without these three treasures, he would have been beaten into a meat pie by the dragon ancestor and phoenix ancestor!"

"So, elder Tong Jiong has truly tasted phoenix eggs, hasn't he?" Ji Hao recalled what Tong Jiong said earlier.

"What hasn't he tasted? Perhaps, human beings?" Bamboo Master's voice came from all directions, disabling Ji Hao from locating him through voice. "In the ancient time, you human beings were slovenly. You were dirty, really dirty. My friend Tong Jiong is edacious indeed, but he is scrupulously clean. He would never touch any dirty or stained food."

Ji Hao laughed. Back in the ancient time, human ancestors probably lived in caves or bird nests, and wore bloody hides. Perhaps, they wouldn't take one shower in half a year…Tong Jiong was a neat freak, which meant he wouldn't touch even a hair of human beings.

"Great, I like that." Said Ji Hao smilingly, "If Tong Jiong had

eaten our human ancestors, I would have to avenge them...But, it seems that I can't rival him, so that would be quite embarrassing!"

Before his voice faded, tens of shreds of bamboo shadows flashed quietly towards Ji Hao from all directions.

The bamboo shadows were faint, seeming to be completely powerless when flying towards Ji Hao. But in fact, every single shred of bamboo shadow brought a tremendous force and struck on the Pan Gu bell. It was like a giant whale from the deep sea silently bumping against a ship. Every strike of bamboo shadow rippled the Chaos power streams released from the bell, and vibrated Ji Hao's body slightly.

"Elder, you have such a great strength!" Ji Hao said blandly, "But, I have quite some strength too, and I'm protected by a supreme treasure made from Buzhou Mountain. Elder, you have underestimated me. These little tricks can't hurt me."

"A supreme treasure made from Buzhou Mountain?" Bamboo Master exclaimed, "Saint Pan Gu's spine...Did you pull it out to make a treasure? No wonder the great Dao of Pan Gu world was disordered earlier...You daring little scums..." Bamboo Master clicked his tongue, "If I knew, I should have done it before you!"

Ji Hao gave a larger grin. "My Shifu is Priest Yu Yu, a true Pan Gu descendant. He had the guts to forge my treasure with Pan Gu's spine, and no one could say a word about it. Elder, can you do the same?"

"Eh." Bamboo Master immediately fell into silence. The boundless bamboo forest faded silently. Bamboo Master showed his face again, helplessly shaking his head towards Ji Hao while saying, "Priest Yu Yu? I'm afraid of him. I can't defeat him, and can't afford to offend him. So, you can go!"

Ji Hao was delighted. He bowed to Bamboo Master and prepared to leave, but suddenly, he heard a cold voice.

"What about Priest Yu Yu? I, Priest Sadness, am not afraid of him. Divine Emperor Ji Hao? Today, I will slaughter a divine emperor!"

Chapter 1816: Priest Sadness Cries

Priest Sadness was short, fat, and bald, with a circle of glistening red hair on his head. His body was in an awfully unattractive shape, yet he had an indescribably majestic look on his face.

He had round eyes, round nose, round mouth, and even his pair of protruding ears were round. The best word for a face like this was 'cute'. However, the expression on this 'cute' face was imperatorial, serious, and inviolably sacred. Ji Hao was a divine emperor, but not even he had that kind of a look.

Priest Sadness was wearing a yellow robe, and carrying a pair of longswords crossed on his back. The swords were even longer than his body. With that serious face, Priest Sadness made some effort to put his hands behind his body, then walked into the cave.

Looking at Priest Sadness, who was merely reaching the height of his waist, Ji Hao really wanted to ask him, 'Can your two hands touch each other behind your back?'

Priest Sadness's expression turned more and more serious, as if he sensed the curiosity and desire to laugh from Ji Hao's eyes. His face looked just like a millstone, with dust constantly falling off it. That was exactly how Ji Hao felt about Priest Sadness. Priest Sadness had tightened his face too much, to the extent that his face now looked like a piece of bread that was left overnight, with crumbs falling off. Looking at Priest Sadness's face, Ji Hao couldn't help but laugh out loud. Next, Mr. Crow cawed with laughter. Apparently, Priest Sadness's serious, round face made Mr. Crow laugh as well.

Bamboo Master's face twitched with pity. He covered his ears with hands, then a strand of green light was vented from his palms to seal his sensations. Afterward, he lightly took a few steps backward.

The air in the cave quaked, sending Bamboo Master's voice into

Ji Hao's ears. "Priest Yu Yu...I really can't afford to offend him. That year, we had a fight. I created billions of bitter bamboo to cover three-hundred million miles, but he cut all the bamboo roots with one single sword move, only leaving a small bamboo shoot..."

Bamboo Master sighed, sounding frightened, "His sword takes lives. I really can't afford to offend him. So, I can't afford to offend his disciples either. He is overprotective of his disciples...He's even more overprotective than Dragon Mother!"

Priest Sadness threw a glance at Bamboo Master, then suddenly burst into cries.

Ji Hao and Mr. Crow were laughing because of Priest Sadness's weird-looking face, but hearing Priest Sadness cry, a tremor immediately went through their bodies. They felt like a Coptis chinensis soup, which was boiled ten times and mixed with the bitterest brine, was pouring directly into their hearts through their eyes, mouth, nose, and ears.

An unspeakably bitter feeling gushed directly into their brains. Looking at the Priest Sadness's hilarious face and hearing his cries, which were quite unpleasant to hear, Ji Hao and Mr. Crow felt an endless bitterness erupting from their hearts, as if they were both suffering the saddest things in the world, that one could never bear to mention to anyone else. Suddenly, they couldn't help but begin crying.

Tears and snot gushed out of Ji Hao's eyes and nose, streaming down his face.

His tears were hot, and his cries were loud. His body moisture all turned into tears, flowing out of his eyes ceaselessly. His internal organs were twitching, and muscles were cramping. Ji Hao felt like a lemon which was cut open, and had been squeezed by a giant.

Why would he cry?

He suddenly recalled so many bitter things. When he was a little

boy, he climbed up the Gold Black Mountain for the first time because he wanted to catch a young fire crow to be his mount. But as a result, he was scratched by a naughty young crow and nearly lost one eye.

That was such a sad experience. So sad! He had to cry for it!

He then thought of another thing. When he was little, he knew a little boy next door. That was such a strong little boy. At five, that boy rushed into the jungle and killed a leopard all by himself. But one day, the boy pissed off a boa in the jungle, and became the boa's mid-afternoon snake!

That was such a nice little boy, but he died. So sad, so sad! He had to cry!

He also thought of that year, back in Southern Wasteland, when a small vassal clan of Gold Crow ran out of food. The starving clan leader and his people ate unripe cassavas, and were all poisoned. Fortunately, Ji Hao's mother, Qing Fu was there in time. She saved them, then Ji Xia hunted tons of beasts for them to help them through the food crisis...

That clan had nearly ten-thousand people, but they nearly all died because of cassavas. Could he not cry for such a miserable thing?

Ji Hao cried heartbreakingly. Over and over again, all kinds of sad and miserable things that he had experienced flashed across his mind. These same memories filled up Ji Hao's heart and flowed in his heart like water, also like the bitterest herb roots, dropping into Ji Hao's heart. A strong bitterness was released from his every single pore, making him cry unstoppably.

Because he was laughing a second ago, this sudden cry made him feel extremely awful. The flow of his blood was disturbed, and the blood surged up to his heart...For many reasons, Mr. Crow, whose cultivation was at a far lower stage than Ji Hao's, let out a mouthful of blood. Mr. Crow cried so hard that his blood vessels

were directly broken.

Ji Hao paused for a second, then pointed his finger at Mr. Crow and cried, "Mr. Crow, how can your life be so miserable? You're so old, yet not a single female bird likes you! Ah, you don't even have one child to take care of you when you get old!"

The moment Ji Hao finished, both he and Mr. Crow cried even louder. This time, they both vomited blood.

The Pan Gu bell rang by itself. The bell ring quieted the cries of Ji Hao and Mr. Crow, appeased their boiling blood, and eased the strong bitterness gathered in their hearts. They glanced at each other, then Ji Hao pointed at the bell. The bell released a strong Chaos power and shielded both of them.

"Priest, what evil magic did you cast?" Ji Hao raised his head and shouted at Priest Sadness. His face was still covered in tears.

Priest Sadness looked at Ji Hao with that majestic look, while responding coldly, "As a divine emperor, you can't even take one cry of mine. The heaven is getting weaker with each generation. What do we need the heaven for then? Back in the old days, I had said that the heaven is like a dagger put upon our head by the great Dao of nature. It can't hurt us, but it disgusts us. When we kill the five divine emperors, then thoroughly destroy the useless heaven, the world would finally be quiet!"

Snorting coldly, Priest Sadness continued slowly, "I am Priest Sadness. Emperor, haven't you heard my name? That year, with one cry, I made thirty-million divine thunder warriors vomit blood. I made them take off their armors and flee desperately. How can you not know my name?"

Ji Hao breathed deeply and took a glance at Dragon Mother, who was still trying to wreck the jade board.

Where did this crazy woman find these freaks?

Chapter 1817: Besieged by Three

"What are you looking at? Anything interesting?" Priest Sadness was still wearing his extremely serious poker face. Expressionlessly, he snorted coldly to Ji Hao and said, "That year, I made some troubles. Even though I repelled the pursuing forces from the heaven a couple of times in a row, the ancient heaven did have a few powerful beings. I was nearly captured, but Dragon Mother saved me."

Giving another cold snort, Priest Sadness continued slowly, "It's not like she saved my life, but I do owe her a big favor. So, this time, she asked me for help, and I had no reason to refuse."

After looking at Ji Hao from head to tie, Priest Sadness slowly nodded delightfully and continued, "I didn't think that I would run into a divine emperor today...Divine forces seized me quite a few times. Today, I finally have a chance to collect this debt."

Standing aside, Bamboo Master chuckled. While waving his bamboo stick and creating shreds of afterimages, he said, "Sadness, in that way, you will offend both Priest Yu Yu and the heaven. We haven't come out for years. We don't know how powerful the heaven is now, so we shouldn't offend the heaven."

Priest Sadness puffed out his belly and snorted scornfully. "Why should I be afraid? Who should I be afraid of? I am a breath away from sending my soul into the void, merging myself in the great Dao and becoming a saint. Once I become a saint, who would I be afraid of? Priest Yu Yu? He knows nothing but hacking people with his sword. The heaven? They can do nothing but sending out armies to encircle their targets."

Looking at the confident Priest Sadness, Ji Hao prepared to remind him about what happened to Tong Jiong, who was a ninety-five percent saint. But suddenly, he heard a shrill scream from behind. With a frown, Ji Hao hurriedly slapped the Pan Gu

bell.

The bell rang, and a wave of Chaos power spread out in all directions. Ji Hao and Mr. Crow turned around, saw Dragon Mother's sharp fingernails penetrating thousands of layers of Chaos power. The Chaos power streams flowing upon the bell's surface rippled, while Dragon Mother had been reluctantly taking back her claws.

Seeing Ji Hao looking at her, Dragon Mother laughed, "Priest Tong Jiong is trapped in the jade board. He can't go anywhere. I'll eventually find a way to deal with him. But, you are evil too. We should finish you first. Hah, since you're on the side of that old b*stard and his nine useless sons, you can't be a good one."

Ji Hao pulled out the Pan Gu sword and crooked a finger, gently tinkling the sword edge. Following the buzzing of the sword, Ji Hao said coldly, "Ao Bai and Qiu Niu are your..."

"They don't have my Chaos dragon bloodline." Dragon Mother smiled in an exceptionally twisted and weird way. Feet long beams of golden-red light shone out of her pair of eyes, while she fixed those eyes on Ji Hao and said, "They have the old b*stard's bloodline. They have nothing to do with me."

Breathing deeply, she proudly shook her head and continued, "My nine good boys are Shixin and his..."

In the jade board, Tong Jiong laughed out loud, "Ten! Sadly, one of them was captured alive by me, and I happily ate him. Hehe, that chaos dragon was really tasty, especially his pair of dragon eyes..."

Dragon Mother's straightened scales shook slightly and tinkled against each other. She clenched her teeth and forced herself to not look at Tong Jiong, but continued staring at Ji Hao. "Even we didn't know that Tong Jiong was sealed in here. But little kid, you managed to find this place. Hah, do you have Tong Jiong's treasures already?" She snorted and said.

"Eh?" Priest Sadness immediately took a step towards Ji Hao with his eyes sparkling.

"Oh?" Bamboo Master took two steps towards Ji Hao as well. Layers of bamboo shadows drifted out of his body and quickly extended into a boundless bamboo forest that covered the entire cave, turning the entrance and edge of the cave both invisible.

Bamboo Master showed a great interest. He fixed his eyes on Ji Hao and said, "Among Tong Jiong's three treasures, the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag doesn't fit my Dao, so I don't want it. The dead calabash is too dangerous, and is useless to me. But, it's said that the living calabash contains the most nourishing thing in the world to plant lives. To me, it's really a matter of life and death."

Bamboo Master stared straight at Ji Hao, then smiled and continued, "My little friend, please let me take a close look at the living calabash, can you?"

Dragon Mother laughed loudly, "Old bamboo, why are you still looking at him? Kill this kid, and all treasures are ours. Tong Jiong has three treasures, and we can each get one. Perfect, right? You will surely have the living calabash!"

Priest Sadness cried out loud again. "What a poor divine emperor! He hasn't enjoyed his life, but now he's gonna die in here. So poor, so poor, so poor!" Pitifully, he cried at Ji Hao.

Priest Sadness drawled and cried in a strange voice. Hearing him, the fading sadness was immediately aroused again in Ji Hao and Mr. Crow's heart. They trembled and nearly cried again.

The Pan Gu bell rang and broke Priest Sadness's evil magic. The expressions of Ji Hao and Mr. Crow both changed. Mr. Crow cawed sonorously and raised the Fuso staff to bash Priest Sadness.

Priest Sadness again gave a cold snort. He scornfully pulled out his swords and unhurriedly lunged them towards Mr. Crow's staff. His magic was evil, and his sword art was strange; the sword

moves were especially simple and stiff.

Following a thunderous bang, a raging fire was generated. Mr. Crow's Fuso staff was transformed from the Fuso tree. The staff bumped against Priest Sadness's sword and raised puffs of fire parks. Priest Sadness trembled, and immediately took a few steps back.

A flame flake landed on Priest Sadness's sleeve. Priest Sadness screamed, then swung his sword down and cut off that burning part of the sleeve. He then raised his head in shock as he stared at Mr. Crow's staff and hollered, "Old Fuso? Is this your real body? Where...Where is your soul?"

Mr. Crow widened his beady eyes as much as he could while shouting at Priest Sadness, "Soul? In Sun Palace of course...Eh, as for what he has been doing there, I surely won't tell you that! Crying fatso, take this!"

Before finishing his sentence, Mr. Crow raised the staff again to hit Priest Sadness. This time, Priest Sadness clearly had a much more serious attitude. That staff was transformed from Fuso tree; no one who had lived through the prehistorical era and heard of Fuso tree's name dared to take a strike from that staff.

Bamboo Master helplessly looked at Ji Hao and said, "For the living calabash, inevitably, I'll offend Priest Yu Yu. Little friend, you shouldn't cast your eyes on these treasures!"

Along with a slight sigh, countless shreds of bamboo shadows flashed to Ji Hao from every direction. Among the bamboo shadows, Dragon Mother transformed into a golden beam of light and marched towards Ji Hao along with a deafening swish.

Chapter 1818: Tong Jiong's Suggestion

Buzz! Buzz! Buzz!

The Pan Gu bell vibrated at a scarily high frequency. The muffled bell rings sounded like countless saw blades rubbing against each other, giving Ji Hao a sharp earache.

Along with the buzzing of the bell, Priest Sadness's bitter cries could be heard from time to time. Hearing his cries was as uncomfortable as spreading a handful of burning mustard powder on one's ear, or putting some sharp iron sands into ones heart. That uncomfortable feeling would drive one crazy.

Ji Hao and Mr. Crow had no energy left to fight back. Ji Hao controlled the Pan Gu bell with all of his power to shield Mr. Crow and himself. Mr. Crow had shifted back into his Gold Crow shape, claws sunk into Ji Hao's shoulder and wings extended. His golden feathers were straightened, as sharp as blades, and burning ragingly. The blood had been flowing out of his beaks and eyes.

Dragon Mother, Priest Sadness and Bamboo Master had joined hands. At the moment, they were striking at the Pan Gu bell unhurriedly.

Dragon Mother's attacks were like a thunderstorm. Within a second, she sent billions of extremely thin golden light beams to Ji Hao. The thin light beams contained a tremendous penetrative power. Each strike launched by Dragon Mother caused a terrifying, high-frequency oscillation, which was strong enough to shatter all kinds of metals in the world.

If the Pan Gu bell were an ordinary defensive treasure, it would have been broken by Dragon Mother's swift and violent attacks already. But, the Pan Gu bell was made from Saint Pan Gu's spine. That wasn't the entire spine of Saint Pan Gu, but after all, that was the strongest bone in Saint Pan Gu's body. No matter how crazily Dragon Mother tried, she could not break the bell.

Bamboo Master's attacks were soft and unhurried, giving a feeling of Dao. Clear shreds of green bamboo shadows descended slowly. One strike released a wave of thunderbolts, the next strike generated electric currents, and the third green bamboo shadow brought gusts of sharp wind, which roared shrilly as they cut through the space.

Bamboo Master's moves seemed to be slow, yet he had been casting all kinds of magic which could be based on green power. The magic powers burst from his hands like blooming flowers.

Bamboo Master seemingly had a special ability, that every time his bamboo sticks nearly fell on the Pan Gu bell, Ji Hao saw shreds of green shadows flash through the space, leaving waves of ripples. For quite a few times, the bamboo sticks almost poked on Ji Hao's body.

After being nearly hit for a few times, Ji Hao carefully observed Bamboo Master's moves. He found that Bamboo Master's bamboo sticks didn't only penetrate the space, but also went through time. His attacks were based on both space and time.

Fortunately, the Pan Gu bell dominated the area around Ji Hao. Streams of Chaos power extended and shredded the spacetime like a vortex, turning the space around Ji Hao's body into Chaos and blocking Bamboo Master's attacks.

Bamboo Master was patient. He lunged his bamboo stick towards Ji Hao and launched one strike after another while slowly walking around him. He looked like an old man who was taking a walk in a forest with his old dog after dinner. His easygoing manner even made the others jealous.

Compared to Bamboo Master, who seemed to be so carefree, Dragon Mother's attacks were fierce and formidable indeed, but were at a lower level. Bamboo Master looked like a well-cultivated man, while Dragon Mother looked like an old vixen who had stripped herself and was making a scene on the street!

As for Priest Sadness, he was like a meatball, squatting in a corner of the cave with his beady eyes fixed on Ji Hao. Occasionally, he put on his poker face and then gave a shrill cry...

Priest Sadness's cries vibrated Ji Hao and Mr. Crow's internal organs, squeezing blood out of their mouths, ears, eyes,, and noses. The injuries weren't serious, but they were injured indeed, even though they had been under the Pan Gu bell's protection. Each time Ji Hao and Mr. Crow focused on defense, Priest Sadness would suddenly give went to a loud cry. It was like a man walking in a graveyard who had someone suddenly scream out loud right behind him. The scream might not scare this man, but it would surely disgust him!

While defending against the attacks from all directions, Ji Hao slowly sat down and crossed his legs, then pulled out the Pan Gu sword and put it on his knees.

Bamboo Master immediately slowed down. He looked at the Pan Gu sword, seeming to be afraid of it.

"Old bamboo, why you scared? Why sacred? Eh? This boy is Yu Yu's disciple, not Yu Yu...You're not getting afraid of everyone with a sword after being cut by Yu Yu, are you?"

"Poor Bitter Bamboo, my friend...hehe...Your great reputation...Hehe...But a little kid scared you...hehe..." Priest Sadness cried out sadly.

Bamboo Master's face darkened. He took a deep breath, then suddenly transformed into a green whirlwind that gusted around the Chaos power released from the Pan Gu bell. Within this moment, Bamboo Master lunged his bamboo stick eighteen times in a row, causing a series of swishing noise.

The Pan Gu bell quaked slightly, then a strange noise could be heard, that sounded like shattering crystals. All of a sudden, eighteen green bamboos penetrated the space and approached him slowly. A sizzling noise lingered around Ji Hao's ears. The Pan Gu

bell cracked the space and disordered the time. When the eighteen bamboos were less than three-inch away from Ji Hao's body, he suddenly wielded the Pan Gu sword.

An arc-shaped sword light flashed across the air, as all eighteen bamboo sticks were cut broken by Ji Hao with one sword move.

"Old bamboo, you know how to fight, don't you? Go on, fight harder. You can kill this kid!" Dragon Mother shouted.

Ji Hao trembled slightly, and the Chaos power streams released from the bell were disordered for a moment. With the Pan Gu sword, Ji Hao cut the eighteen bamboo sticks, but Bamboo Master was far more powerful than him. He quivered intensely under a great counterforce, as if he were suffering an electric shock. He opened his mouth and let out a stream of blood.

"He's not powerful enough...Sad, so sad, so, so sad...My friend Bitter Bamboo, you can wear him out!" Priest Sadness cried again.

Ji Hao's face paled slightly. Indeed, he wasn't powerful enough, and when facing these old monsters, this was his biggest weakness. If they aimed at this weakness of his, Ji Hao could really be worn out by them. By then, he wouldn't be able to activate the Pan Gu bell anymore, and could only defend himself with his own body...

In the jade board, Tong Jiong had his eyes fixed on Ji Hao all the time. "Emperor Ji Hao, we're fair-weather friends after all. How about this? You can have what's in the living calabash...as long as you promise to release me from this jade board and then make me the Heaven Master...to assure my freedom. What do you say?" Tong Jiong laughed abruptly.

"Good!" Ji Hao raised his eyebrows and growled without hesitation.

Chapter 1819: Heaven Master Tong Jiong

Heaven master, heaven master, as this title simply stated, Heaven Masters were the masters of the heaven.

The heaven could have an indefinite number of heaven masters. Heaven masters were usually revered powerful beings with measureless powers and abilities, selected by the five divine emperors. They had no specific duties, and only showed up around divine emperors. They were usually close to and trusted by divine emperors.

Heaven masters stood at higher positions than divine gods, lower than no one but divine emperors. In the heaven, heaven masters weren't true power holders, but they were always respected and highly influential. Normally, they didn't have much of work to do, but they were protected by the natural fortune of the heaven. No natural disaster or danger or risk could ever fall on their heads. The life of heaven masters was free and easy.

But occasionally, when divine emperors or other divine gods 'begged' them, depending on their mood, these powerful heaven masters might take some action, then earn a greatly high payback and reverence.

All in all, heaven master was a divine official post with very little to do. They were paid well, but they had little responsibilities. Every heaven master was protected by the natural fortune of the heaven. Therefore, anyone who wanted to attack a heaven master would have to suffer a counterforce from the natural fortune. Taking up a post of heaven master was the perfect way to hide from enemies and mitigate risks.

Ji Hao understood what Tong Jiong wanted. Under the current circumstances, he had no time to hesitate, but immediately accepted Tong Jiong's suggestion.

Tong Jiong chuckled and prepared to say something. But, Ji Hao

shouted harshly, "But elder Tong Jiong, you have so many enemies. Your enemies were all weaker than you, but only slightly. If you join the heaven and stay under my command, I would have to shoulder the hatred from the five, or even more of your enemies, for you."

Tong Jiong paused and knitted his brows. Ji Hao was right. If he joined the heaven, he would never listen to Ji Hao's orders. Frankly speaking, this was just a deal. Tong Jiong offered to give Ji Hao the spring in the living calabash to boost up the latter's power and help him through this difficult situation. In return, Ji Hao would shield Tong Jiong with the heaven.

The heaven could scare away many evil beings, but in the eyes of those ancient powerful beings...Based on Priest Sadness's attitude to the heaven, one should know that the name of the heaven wasn't quite useful sometimes.

"You...What else do you want?" Tong Jiong felt a little painful for what Ji Hao might take away from him. But, he only weighed for one in ten-thousand of a second before he made the decision. He was sick of this bloody Feng Dao Mount. He had to seize this opportunity and get out. He had to leave, even if he needed to pay an extra price. He wanted to leave, at any cost, as long as he could afford the price.

Ji Hao gripped the Pan Gu sword with both hands and again cut broken Bamboo Master's bamboo sticks. As a tremendous power vibrated Ji Hao's entire body, thin green thunderbolts drilled out of Ji Hao's body and left small cracks on his skin.

Breathing deeply, Ji Hao said in a harsh tone, "First, you need to follow the rules of the heaven. You don't work, fine, but you can't cause the heaven any trouble, or make more enemies."

Tong Jiong remained silent shortly and then laughed, "Alright. The heaven will pay me well, and I will have as many delicious foods as I want. The wine in the heaven is world-famous too. As

long as I have good foods and wine, I won't go out to make troubles."

Ji Hao nodded. He wielded his sleeve and let out the three treasures of Tong Jiong. Picking up the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag, Ji Hao said, "I'll take this flag as my payback. I'll beg my Shifu to turn it into a magic formation blueprint, and thus, my own sword formation will be completed. It won't be as powerful as my Shifu's sword formation, but I believe it will be quite strong, right?"

Tong Jiong raised his eyebrows, then sighed and praised Ji Hao loudly, "Eh? Good idea! My Tai-Yi magnetic force flag controls the pre-world magnetic force, and it can cover the area tens of millions of miles wide in a moment. Pre-world magnetic force controls everything in this world, even including the space and time. Nothing can be free from it. If you truly turn it into a magic formation blueprint...you'll be able to slaughter anyone who falls in it, won't you?"

Tong Jiong, Dragon Mother, Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness glanced at Ji Hao's Pan Gu sword simultaneously. While being trapped by the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag, who could survive a lunge of the Pan Gu sword?. How many people or magic treasures in the world could survive a strike from the Pan Gu sword? Earlier, even Bamboo Master's bamboo sticks were cut broken by Ji Hao.

Those bamboo sticks were made from Bamboo Master's real body. Perhaps, only the top-grade defensive treasures possessed by the real saints of this world...No, Pan Gu sword was especially sharp. With this sword, Ji Hao even had a chance to break the defensive treasures which belonged to saints, if he were strong enough!

It was like a strong man defending himself with a wooden shield against a baby who was holding a holy weapon. Without a doubt, the baby couldn't break the wooden shield with the holy weapon. But, once the baby grew into a kid, the holy weapon would become a threat to the strong man with a wooden shield. If the kid grew

into a young man, breaking the wooden shield with the holy weapon would no longer be difficult.

If the young man grew into a strong man, he would be able to break the wooden shield effortlessly.

Pan Gu sword was powerful. If Ji Hao's cultivation wasn't so much lower than the cultivation of these ancient powerful beings, which one of them could take one strike from the Pan Gu sword without dying?

"Hehe, good, good, good!" Tong Jiong nodded. "I've already merged myself into the great Dao of magnetic force, so this Tai-Yi magnetic force flag is useless to me now. I planned to give it to my first disciple as a defensive treasure...Sadly, my disciples were slaughtered by them...Never mind, never mind. Emperor Ji Hao, the Tai-Yu magnetic force flag is yours now!"

Through the Jade board, Tong Jiong drew a few lines towards the flag, then cast a spell with a low voice. The Tai-Yi magnetic force flag immediately vibrated in Ji Hao's hand. A strand of light rose from the small flag and flew into the jade board.

Seeing this, the eyes of Dragon Mother, Priest Sadness and Bamboo Master even turned green. Tong Gong had actually taken back his soul seal from the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag, which meant the flag was ownerless at the moment! This flag was a cherished treasure of Tong Jiong, that back in the old days, he depended on it!

Numberless powerful creatures were trapped in the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag, and eventually became Tong Jiong's food.

Before Dragon Mother and the other two took action, Ji Hao bit his tongue and let out a drop of spirit blood. The blood quickly merged into the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag. At this moment, the original great Dao contained in Ji Hao's blood fit the great Dao of Pan Gu world perfectly. Therefore, the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag didn't fight back, but immediately accepted Ji Hao as its new

owner.

The Tai-Yi magnetic force flag emitted a bright light. Whoosh! The entire cave was covered by a twisted and violent magnetic forcefield.

Ji Hao laughed out loud and activated his divine emperor seal. The seal glowed eye-dazzlingly and flew to the jade board.

Tong Jiong put his head forward to accept this glow. A divine talisman rose from Tong Jiong's head, in the colors of purple and gold, and shone with a strong, warm light. At this very moment, Priest Tong Jiong became Heaven Master Tong Jiong.

Chapter 1820: Free Tong Jiong

The moment the divine talisman rose from Tong Jiong's head, Dragon Mother's expression changed. "Together, let's kill his kid now!"

The expressions on Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness' faces immediately turned especially serious. Bamboo Master took a deep breath and stood motionlessly as he silently boosted up his power. He was clearly preparing for a thunder strike.

Priest Sadness dropped his mouth corners, with two streams of tears gushing out of his eye sockets. His eyes were crystal clear, but weirdly, his tears merged together in the air and generated miserable, sad, raging, or shrill cries.

Instantly, waves of ripples were stirred up from the Chao power streams released from the Pan Gu bell. Priest Sadness' power slowly penetrated the layers of Chaos power, and seemed to land on Ji Hao's body.

Fortunately, aside from the Pan Gu bell, Ji Hao had also activated the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag. This great treasure indeed had a vast power. The space in the cave was immediately filled up by the magnetic force field. The completely disordered and violent magnetic force streams were beating, spiraling, turning the surrounding area, which was already turned into Chaos by the Pan Gu bell even more chaotic.

Priest Sadness's cries were restrained by the magnetic force, then weakened by the Pan Gu bell. He had tried his best, but only faintly audible sound waves were sent into Ji Hao and Mr. Crow' ears. Compared to before, Priest Sadness's cries were way less harmful now.

The defensive power generated from the combination of the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag and the Pan Bu bell could be called as perfect.

The Pan Gu bell's defense was definitely strong and straightforward. It followed the lead of Saint Pan Gu, who believed that one would attain the great Dao with strength, and break any magic with strength. No matter which type of attack the enemies launched, the bell would directly take it and block it. Therefore, it had a high demand for Ji Hao's power.

Unlike the Pan Gu bell, the defense of the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag was based on the traceless, soft, but strong magnetic forcefield. It was like a layer of flexible materials which was added to the defense of the Pan Gu bell and perfected the Pan Gu bell's defense pattern.

The defense provided by the combination of these two supreme treasures was three times stronger than that provided by the Pan Gu bell alone. But, Ji Hao merely needed to consume the same amount of power!

What was even better, as the traceless magnetic forcefield filled up the space, everything within its coverage was under its control. Before, dragon Mother was a fast as lightning, that Ji Hao couldn't even see her moves clearly. But now, she was suddenly slowed down, as if she was walking in glue. Ji Hao clearly saw her every single move; he saw her slowly flying through the space, bringing up clear afterimages. Ji Hao even had the time to wield the Pan Gu sword and create a fierce strand of sword power by casting a secret Yu Yu's sword spell.

The dark sword power roared across the Chaos streams, but the invisible magnetic forcefield did not give the sword power any resistance. On the contrary, it pushed behind it strongly. When Ji Hao sent out the sword power, he could still see it clearly. But, after the magnetic forcefield momentarily accelerated the sword power, Ji Hao couldn't see its trail anymore. It became as fast as Dragon Mother without being affected by the magnetic force field.

Crack!

Before he made this move, Ji Hao had done the math. Based on Dragon Mother's moving speed, the sword power should strike right on her waist. But, after being accelerated by the magnetic forcefield, the sword power tore apart the space and flew across her body before she approached Ji Hao.

The sword power brushed across Dragon Mother's abdomen. Along with deafening tearing noises, Dragon Mother's luxurious golden and red dress blasted into pieces. A thin slash was left on her belly, which was thickly covered in triangular scales, with drops of sticky, purple blood oozing out.

If Ji Hao included the acceleration in his calculation, the sword power would have struck into Dragon Mother's body, shattered her scales, and drilled into her internal organs, injuring her severely.

Dragon Mother was choked, and so was Bamboo Master. Priest Sadness immediately stopped crying, while a tremor went through his chubby body.

"That's the smell of Pan Gu's axe!" Dragon Mother's face twisted. She glared at Ji Hao and screamed hoarsely, "Back then, I was injured so badly by him with that axe. This is the smell of that axe, this is it!"

Ji Hao smiled, cupped his hands to Dragon Mother, and responded, "Elder, like yesterday, you should be congratulated once more!"

Dragon Mother's face darkened in rage. She screamed sonorously while pouncing on Ji Hao, seeming to even risk her own life. She swiftly wielded her pair of arms and sent extremely thin beams of golden light to Ji Hao. However, he was largely slowed down by the magnetic force field. Before, her violent attacks could lay a heavy pressure on the Pan Gu bell. But now, she merely made the bell buzz slightly.

Ji Hao immediately found confidence. He looked at Bamboo

Master and asked smilingly, "Elder Bitter Bamboo, aren't you afraid that my Shifu might cut off all your bamboo roots?"

Bamboo Master was gathering his power, but upon hearing Ji Hao, his heart was shaken. A big half of the power which was concentrated on his bamboo stick instantly faded, and the well-prepared secret magic suddenly launched a counterforce on Bamboo Master. Suffering the counterforce, Bamboo Master's heart was even shaking, and he nearly vomited blood.

"Emperor Ji Hao, I didn't lie earlier on. The heavy one is the living calabash. You just take it out and drink what's in it. The living calabash's power is the most nourishing thing in the world, with absolutely no side effects." Tong Jiong laughed wildly out in the jade board.

Breathing deeply, Tong Jiong stared at Dragon Mother, then gave a sneer and said to Ji Hao "Emperor, please quake the seal inside this mountain with your divine emperor seal...That seal is the power source of Feng Dao Mount. The moment you take it back, I'll come out...Then, you can just leave this crazy dragon woman to me."

"Seal?" Ji Hao raised his eyebrows. He immediately drilled his spirit power into Feng Dao Mount and touched the sphere of light which was beating like a heart, absorbing Chaos power, and releasing natural powers.

Indeed, it was a seal created by the Green God, White God, and Black God from the ancient heaven!

What did Tong Jiong do to make these three ancient divine emperors join hands to seal him in here?

But, Ji Hao had already accepted Tong Jiong's offer, and was too lazy to eat his own words...Furthermore, the seal was made by three ancient divine emperors together. Ji Hao took out his own divine emperor seal and conveniently threw it to the ground. The seal swiftly sank into the mountain and fell on the light sphere.

"Unseal!" Ji Hao cast a deep growl. The light sphere exploded into an extremely strong wave of natural powers that spread out.

Inside the jade board, Tong Jiong trembled slightly, then locked his hands together and slapped on the jade board. Along with a series of noises, countless thin cracks appeared on the jade board.

Ji Hao immediately took out the living calabash, unplugged it, and poured the spring into his mouth.

A warm, water-clear liquid was poured into his mouth, emitting a faint aroma.

Chapter 1821: All Draw Back

As Tong Jiong said, absolutely no side effects.

A warm power stream burst inside Ji Hao's stomach. It was soft and nourishing, with a beautiful aroma. Ji Hao's embryo of Dao sighed in comfort, then crossed its legs in his spiritual space and began cultivating itself in coordination of this warm power, improving its power rapidly.

Ji Hao sensed that his power and cultivation was both soaring, without any difficulty or bottleneck.

Neither his physical body nor embryo of Dao sensed any pressure. When using other natural treasures for improving cultivation, the cultivator needed to suffer a great pressure from the treasure's power. If this cultivator failed to take the pressure, his or her body would be crushed and soul would perish. But, the spring in the living calabash was different. Inside the living calabash, the world's first trace of life-force absorbed essence natural powers, and generated this spring over a measureless period of time. Naturally, the spring contained a vast and pure life-force.

Ji Hao's cultivation and power both improved rapidly. Within the time span of every breath, a considerable amount of pure power, which equaled to the result of a million years of severe cultivation of a saint, would merge into Ji Hao's body. The improvement of cultivation that Ji Hao achieved with every breath since he drank the spring would have cost him years, even tens of years.

Waves of tremendous and mysterious power spread from Ji Hao's body. Ji Hao opened his three eyes, and the nine suns rose in his eye of Dao vented a scorching golden light. The space before his face was twisted and blurred, even burned into nothingness by the essence sun fire released from his erect eye.

The bamboo stick in Bamboo Master's hands quaked slightly, as Bamboo Master took two steps backward, gave a dry laugh, and said, "Alright...I...Dragon Mother, my friend, I won't be a part of this...At that time, he showed his mercy and didn't kill me. I should not offend Priest Yu Yu after all."

Giving a bitter grin, Bamboo Master stepped back further, seeming to be quite unconfident.

Priest Sadness opened his mouth, prepared to continue crying. But suddenly, a giant golden mill emerged from behind Ji Hao's head. A rumbling noise quaked the entire cave while a strong suction force was released from the mill. Priest Sadness only managed to give one cry before his soul was shaken slightly. The great suction force from the mill actually affected his soul and nearly dragged it out of his body!

Priest Sadness carefully looked at the mill and found that it was covered in an especially dense natural rewards power. Natural rewards power was the natural destroyer of Priest Sadness's evil magic. Under the protection of the golden natural rewards light, nothing could hurt Ji Hao...If Ji Hao had had a chance to activate the mill of Dao earlier, Priest Sadness would have given up already.

Priest Sadness observed the mill of Dao closer, then discovered in shock that one side of this mill was dark as ink and the other was bright. Apparently, this mill was composed of the great Dao of destruction and the great Dao of creation.

The great Dao of destruction and the great Dao of creation were extremely opposite, like Yin and Yang, black and white, life and death. As Priest Yu Yu's disciple, Ji Hao must have learned Yu Yu's Dao of sword. After reaching the peak of Yu Yu's Dao of sword, he would be able to generate the great Dao of destruction, which could kill and destroy anything. But, where was the great Dao of creation in his mill of Dao from? Did he have other supporters?

Priest Sadness began losing confidence. He wasn't a powerful

being with a good reputation. Instead, he was a famous evil being back in the ancient time. Otherwise, the heaven wouldn't have deployed the divine forces to suppress him so many times. At last, he survived the siege with Dragon Mother's help.

There was one bad thing about evil beings, that they were all quite good at adapting themselves to changing circumstances. When Ji Hao activated the mill of great Dao, Priest Sadness was startled by the tremendous natural rewards power on the mill, then he was frightened when he discovered the great Dao of destruction and great Dao of creation from the mill.

Shaking his head, Priest Sadness cupped his hands to Dragon Mother and said, "Dragon Mother, my dear friend, you invited me to Pu Ban City earlier...So I'm going now. I'm not good at flying or diving underground. I fly very slowly, and there is a long way to Pan Gu Motherland. I think I should leave for the city now."

Priest Sadness stomped his foot against the ground, then transformed into a bitter and cold wind, gusting towards the entrance of the cave.

Ji Hao hesitated shortly, then opened a crack on the magnetic forcefield to let Priest Sadness go.

Seeing Priest Sadness leave, Bamboo Master immediately transformed into a green bolt of thunder, flashing to the entrance. Ji Hao didn't want to keep him here, and let him out as well.

His power had still been rising quickly. Because of his soaring power, some magical changes had been happening to his physical body. Strands of mist rose from his head and slowly formed a cloud upon his head. Meanwhile, his embryo of Dao was sensing countless types of great Dao of nature. At the moment, Ji Hao didn't have the time to try to stop Priest Sadness and Bamboo Master from leaving.

Dragon Mother widely opened her blood-red eyes and glared at Ji Hao, then cast a fierce glance at Tong Jiong, who was punching the

jade board swiftly from the inside.

Dragon Mother hated Ji Hao and Tong Jiong so much. She traveled countless miles to the deepest area of the starry void, and even used the secret teleporting formations which were built in the starry void by the dragon-kind. Finally, he found Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness, who both owed her favors and had to help her.

Dragon Mother had a keen sense of smell. On the way back to Pan Gu Motherland, she suddenly smelled Mr. Crow and Ji Hao, then excitedly followed the smell to Feng Dao Mount with her two helpers.

She thought that she could take out two enemies at one time, especially Tong Jiong, who ate her little boy...

But this bloody Ji Hao actually broke the seal and released Tong Jiong!

At this very moment, Dragon Mother even began to hate the few powerful beings who sealed Tong Jiong here in the first place. How could they use a seal cast by divine emperors as the core of this sealing formation? Didn't they create a convenient condition for Ji Hao in this way?

Ji Hao was a current divine emperor, and the heaven was a strictly ruled organization. The current divine emperors had absolute control of the seals left by former divine emperors. Therefore, Ji Hao broke the seal effortlessly and ruined Dragon Mother's plan!

If Dragon Mother knew the ones who built this sealing formation, she would definitely hunt them to the end of the world!

Looking at Ji Hao, who was under the firm protection of the Pan Gu bell and the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag, Dragon Mother roared ragingly and then turned around, moving to the entrance of the cave in large steps.

Ji Hao silently deactivated the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag and let

Dragon Mother go. While paying a big half of his attention on his improving power, he looked at the cracking jade board and grinned. "Elder Tong Jiong, congratulations on regaining your freedom!"

The cracking noise could be heard without an end. Before long, the jade board shattered completely, and the nine pillars collapsed. The nine pre-world supreme weapons quacked, attempting to escape, but were suddenly wrapped by nine clearly visible strands of magnetic force and dragged into a broad red sleeve.

With a smile on his face, Tong Jiong came out of the broken jade board and unhurriedly walked to the Chaos power shield, which was released from the Pan Gu bell.

"Why did you let Dragon Mother go? I'm quite confident of keeping her here." He smiled at Ji Hao and asked in a mild tone.

Chapter 1822: Suddenly Turn Hostile

The cloud was hundreds of meters wide, floating above Ji Hao's head and slowly growing thicker and larger.

Extremely sharp light beams descended from the cloud like needles. The lights landed on the ground and sent up fire sparks that left countless deep tiny holes on the ground of this Feng Dao Mount cave, which was hard as steel.

Hearing Tong Jiong, Ji Hao smiled and looked at him through the Chaos power streams released from the Pan Gu bell, then shook his head and said, "It's better to let them go...If Dragon Mother stayed, I'd be worried."

Tong Jiong narrowed his eyes and grinned, then looked at Ji Yao and shook his head. "Worry? About what? Emperor Ji Hao, you're not worrying that I might join hands with that crazy woman, are you? That old woman is seriously insane. I killed her little boy, which means I can never make peace with her." He said.

"You can't make peace with her, that's true. But...About whether you and she would join hands or not...I'm timid and unconfident, so I'm careful and cautious, and dare not to make any careless mistake." Ji Hao continued smiling. Looking at Tong Jiong, he continued, "Elder, you're not someone with goodwill, but my Pan Gu bell and Pan Gu sword are both top-grade supreme treasures. Don't you want them?"

Bamboo Master even managed to conquer his fear of Yu Yu and launch offensives against Ji Hao for the living calabash, which was highly beneficial to him. The Pan Gu sword and Pan Gu bell were no weaker than the living calabash. In fact, the bell and the sword were way more powerful than the living calabash. Ji Hao didn't believe that Tong Jiong wasn't tempted by his sword and bell.

Bamboo Master looked quite like a well-cultivated being, a powerful being who was beyond the noisy world. But, Tong Jiong

wasn't like Bamboo Master. Based on what Ji Hao knew about him so far, he was definitely an evil being. Appointing him as a heaven master was just a stopgap that Ji Hao used. If not for the spring in the living calabash, how could Ji Hao ever accept his offer?

Tong Jiong frowned and gave a bitter laugh. "Emperor Ji Hao, your words truly broke my heart and hurt my feeling! You appointed me as a heaven master yourself...The divine talismans have a strong binding force for its owner. Would I dare to disrespect you?"

Ji Hao sighed. He looked at Tong Jiong and responded in an honest tone, "I appointed you as a heaven master because I want the spring in the living calabash. Under that situation, if I were killed by Dragon Mother and her two helpers, they would certainly try everything they could to torture you. You may survive, but you would suffer; even your three treasures would be taken away."

"So, in that situation, I needed to save my own life, and you needed to save me. Therefore, you told me which one was the living calabash and you let me have the spring in it!" Said Ji Hao frankly, "That was my only chance to get the spring safely."

"I immediately broke the seal and released you after I got the spring, because even though I've drunk the spring, I needed a certain span of time for my power to grow. Plus, I didn't know if I would be able to defeat Dragon Mother and her two helpers after that." Ji Hao looked at Tong Jiong smilingly and said, "So, I released you immediately to force them to leave."

Sighing again, Ji Hao continued candidly, "I didn't keep Dragon Mother here, because, as I just said...If you're alone, I have a chance to escape from you with my treasures. But, if Dragon Mother stays and you two join hands for my treasures, that would be bad!"

"For this reason, Dragon Mother and her helpers must leave, so you'd be alone. Elder, have I answered your question?" Ji Hao

smiled faintly.

Before Tong Jiong said anything, Ji Hao laughed and continued, "As for the divine talisman's binding force, it may affect the other divine gods, but not you. You're a half-step saint who has merged with the great Dao of nature. I really don't believe that you can be restrained by the divine talisman!"

"After all, the heaven is just like a representative of the great Dao of nature. How can the great Dao of nature be controlled by its representative?" Smiling at Tong Jiong, Ji Hao said seriously, "Elder, you're a ninety-five percent saint already, and you're like an embodiment of a part of the great Dao...If a divine talisman could control you, then it would be a joke!"

As Ji Hao finished his speech, Tong Jiong applauded and sighed sincerely, "Amazing, amazing. Yu Yu always solved every problem with his sword, but never used his brain, nor tried to bring out the facts and reasons. Interpersonal relationships and tactful plans were completely useless to him."

"But unexpectedly, he took a kid like you as his disciple!" Tong Jiong sighed, "You are really...How can you even have so many thoughts?"

Ji Hao grinned as he looked at Tong Jiong and said honestly, "Elder, if you really want to be a heaven master and live a free life, please swear to the great Dao of Pan Gu world...Then, send a half of your true spirit into my Pan Gu sword to be guarded...so I can believe that you really want to be a part of the heaven."

Tong Jiong smiled. He took a circle around the Chaos power shield, which was released from the Pan Gu bell, then abruptly gave a long sigh and said, "Kid, you're right. Hmm, if you kept Dragon Mother here, I'd surely join hands with her and take your sword and bell!"

Sighing again, Tong Jiong's eyes shone with a blood-red light. Staring at Ji Hao, he said coldly, "I don't want this bell. I control

the great Dao of magnetic force, and the magnetic force controls everything in the world. I have the strongest defensive power in the world, that ordinary people can't even approach me. So, the bell is useless to me."

Shaking his head, Tong Jiong cast a greedy glance at the Pan Gu sword and said, "But this sword...This sword can hurt saints, even kill saints...If I can have this sword..."

Ji Hao burst into a sonorous roar. Before Tong Jiong made a move, he wielded the Pan Gu sword and sent tens of strands of sword power towards Tong Jiong.

Tong Jiong roared out loud as well and pointed his finger at Ji Hao. Suddenly, the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag flew out of Ji Hao's sleeve. A strand of magnetic force wrapped up Ji Hao and Mr. Crow and next, Mr. Crow gave a caw while being dragged out of the Pan Gu bell's protection.

The living calabash and dead calabash appeared in Tong Jiong's hands. Tong Jiong gripped Mr. Crow's neck and pointed the dead calabash at Mr. Crow's forehead. He smiled and nodded, then said, "I had taken back my soul seal in the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag indeed, but I left something in it that allowed me to activate it for one time. With this one shot, this Gold Crow is my food now...Gold Crow soup, delicious, so delicious!"

Ji Hao immediately stood up from the ground, his eyes bulged out and glaring at Tong Jiong.

"Don't you dare..."

Ji Hao was going to threaten Tong Jiong, but he shut his mouth once he saw the fierce glow in Tong Jiong's eyes.

"Smart. Now, throw the sword out!"

Chapter 1823: The Evil One

Without any hesitation, Ji Hao raised the Pan Gu sword, prepared to throw it to Tong Jiong.

Tong Jiong chuckled as he stared at Ji Hao and watched every move of his. The Pan Gu sword was way too powerful, that not even Dragon Mother's scales survived its sharp edge. Tong Jiong was worried that Ji Hao might play a trick to hurt him, as he didn't have a strong physical body.

Mr. Crow cawed shrilly. He raised the Fuso staff with both hands and swung it towards Tong Jiong's head.

Tong Jiong chuckled. Layers of traceless magnetic force pressed down, disabling Mr. Crow from moving. A golden transparent fire was burning on the Fuso staff. The golden fire and the magnetic force clashed against each other and generated colorful flames.

Ji Hao's hands moved. But, when he was about to throw out the Pan Gu sword, he paused with surprise, looking at the man who suddenly showed up behind Tong Jiong.

The man was wearing a black robe, with a cold and serious face. His straight hairs looked even like tightened steel wires, that every single hair had been giving a cold and fierce feeling, which could freeze anyone's heart. Four black sword lights floated around him, rotating in a mysterious way as they drew a pair of Taiji diagrams, which had been spinning in opposite directions.

The black robe wasn't usual, but this man looked exactly like Yu Yu. His eyes were cold and deep, looking like a deep pool with countless sharp weapons lying in the bottom. These eyes were widely different from the eyes of that red-robed Yu Yu, the one Ji Hao was familiar with. But at first glance, Ji Hao knew that he must be Yu Yu!

"What?" Seeing Ji Hao pause abruptly, Tong Jiong shouted with

a frown, "Throw the sword out now."

"This suddenly occurred to me." Ji Hao looked at Tong Jiong seriously and said, "Elder, do you know my Shifu's name? Both this bell and this sword were forged by my Shifu and his two brothers. I'm afraid it would be inappropriate for you to just take them away."

"Inappropriate?" Tong Jiong laughed quite loudly, without knowing that a man was standing right behind him, and was looking at him from head to toe like a butcher looking at a chubby pig. "What's Inappropriate? Priest Yu Yu...Hah, everyone else is afraid of him, but I'm not. If I have your bell and sword..."

The black-robbed Yu Yu raised one finger and gently poked the back of Tong Jiong's neck.

Tong Jiong paid all his attention to Ji Hao, but he also worried that Dragon Mother might return to launch a sneak attack to him. Therefore, he shielded his own body with multiple layers of magnetic forcefields. Technically, any living being or any weapon which approached him would be intercepted by the magnetic forcefields. Therefore, average cultivators couldn't even touch a hair of Tong Jiong right now.

However, the black-robed Yu Yu's finger penetrated the layers of magnetic forcefields and sank into Tong Jiong's skin, as easily as cutting a piece of tofu with a steel knife. Yu Yu's fingernails were half-inch-long and well sharpened. Tong Jiong never cultivated himself with body-strengthening methods. Consequently, his physical body was quite fragile. With one poke, Yu Yu left a half-inch-deep wound on the back of his neck.

A stream of blood spurted out, startling Tong Jiong badly. While screaming, he hurriedly turned back and shielded himself behind Mr. Crow's body. Meanwhile, the dead calabash suddenly rose up from his hand, and the plug of the calabash moved slightly, seeming about to fly out.

The black-robed Yu Yu looked at Tong Jiong expressionlessly. The moment the dead calabash moved, he raised his left hand at lightning speed and gripped the dead calabash. Next, a dark sword light circled around the dead calabash and generated a loud 'crack', as if something inside the dead calabash was cut broken.

The dead calabash quietly fell in the black-robed Yu Yu's hand, while Tong Jiong let out a mouthful of blood.

"You!" Tong Jiong stared at the black-robed Yu Yu. "Why're you here?"

"You're not afraid of me, so why such a fuss?" The black-robed Yu Yu looked at Tong Jiong with no expression. He was beardless, but Ji Hao somehow felt that his face was actually covered in a straightened sharp long beard, like a fierce tiger which was preparing to pounce on its prey.

Coldly looking at Tong Jiong, the black-robed Yu Yu said, "A cultivator should have a phlegmatic temperament, so you can remain calm even when the sky collapses and the earth sinks...My friend, you're far, far from there!"

"You, you, you!" Tong Jiong glanced at the dead calabash with a heartache. He gave a resonant shout, then threw Mr. Crow to the black-robed Yu Yu, transformed into a traceless beam of magnetic flow, and flew to the entrance of the cave.

The black-robed Yu Yu pointed his finger at the entrance. Clank! Four dark beams of sword light rose from the entrance, then a sword formation flew out. The sword power filled up the entire cave while the sword lights flashed across the air, interweaving. Tong Jiong howled, then his body reappeared. Along with a series of puffing noises, seven to eight bone-deep wounds were left on his body, with blood spurting out.

"Yu Yu, my friend, this is a misunderstanding!" Tong Jiong screamed at Yu Yu, "This whole thing is a misunderstanding! I was kidding with your disciple...Emperor Ji Hao is a divine emperor,

and I am a heaven master. How can I..."

Another dark sword light flew out and cut off Tong Jiong's entire left arm, making him shriek.

As the sword light spiraled around the broken arm, the arm exploded into a cloud of blood mist. Tong Jiong's face immediately paled. "Yu Yu, what do you want?" He yelled.

The black-robbed Yu Yu looked at Tong Jiong with a dark face and responded in a frosty voice, "I came to release you. But now, you will die!"

Tong Jiong paused. With shock, he looked at Yu Yu and asked, "Release me? What do you mean? Eh? What on earth do you mean?"

"Pan Luo and her friends sealed you in here. Do you know why? That year, you attempted to capture my disciple, Gui Ling, to make a soup...I had no time to waste on you, so I asked Pan Luo and her friends to seal you here, letting you cultivate your mind and reform yourself in this place." The black-robed Yu Yu explained coldly.

With an awfully paled face, Tong Jiong looked at Yu Yu and murmured, "It was you, it was you...No wonder... They never liked each other, but they joined hands to plot against me!"

"Shifu!" Ji Hao cupped his hands and politely bowed to the black-robed Yu Yu.

The black-robbed Yu Yu turned around and glimpsed at Ji Hao, upturned his mouth corner with a solid effort and gave a faint smile, "Good disciple...The red-robed Yu Yu told me that you're good. You deserve to be my disciple...But in the future, you need to be more careful when dealing with these ancient scums."

Giving a cold laugh, Yu Yu continued with a bland tone, "I am the evil part of Yu Yu. He cut me out of his body, then I became Evil Yu Yu. Today, I'll get this Tong Jiong and make a good piece for you...

with him."

Before he finished, sword lights illuminated the entire cave.

Chapter 1824: Peel It off from the Great Dao

Ji Hao widely opened his eyes, looking at the sword lights all over the cave with shock and an endless despair.

Yes, despair.

Evil Yu Yu's sword made him feel an endless despair. His sword was filled with an intent of killing, had no mercy, and left no hope. His sword of Dao existed to destroy. The heart of everyone who saw his sword would be occupied by despair.

Ji Hao trembled, then forcibly braced himself up and carefully watched the dark sword lights flash across the air. The sword lights left deep marks on his heart. Behind him, strands of dark sword intent were growing inside the mill of Dao, preparing for an eruption.

The Dao of sword of destruction was one of the main branches of the great Dao of destruction. Evil Yu Yu launched a full sword strike in front of Ji Hao and allowed him to achieve a major improvement on his great Dao of destruction cultivation.

Destruction and creation generated and supported each other. As Ji Hao's great Dao of destruction improved rapidly, the great Dao of creation in the mill of Dao was also rising.

Strands of golden natural reward light flew into Ji Hao's embryo of Dao, helping it to understand Yu Yu's Dao of sword of destruction better and deeper. Ji Hao clearly saw every beam of sword light and every shred and sword shadow, then memorized each strand of sword power.

Gradually, the sword power which had been descending from the cloud above Ji Hao's head changed color, and began glowing with a dim, black light. The sword lights from the cloud turned shaper and shaper, and the holes they left on the ground grew deeper and deeper.

Evil Yu Yu wanted Ji Hao to learn. So, he slowed down his movements and carefully performed a powerful, destructive sword art. Within the dazzling black sword lights, Tong Jiong looked like a large frozen fish, floating in the air without being able to move, and watch the dark sword lights brushing across his body like swiftly swimming fishes.

Every beam of sword light left a clear slash on his body. The blood and flesh in the slashes weren't cut off, but directly vanished when the sword lights flashed across.

Not only did the sword light vanish Tong Jiong's blood and flesh, wherever the sword lights reached, the space and all natural powers were cut broken, shredded, and destroyed. Those were simple sword lights, but Evil Yu Yu's sword lights did have the power to destroy everything, just like Ji Hao's mill of Dao.

Ji Hao trembled all over. His fine hair stood straight up and pores opened, releasing a coldness.

Was this Yu Yu's true power? Based on Ji Hao's current power, he clearly sensed that the power contained in every single beam of sword light that Yu Yu created was stranger than the power of his mill of Dao by a hundred folds!

'Terrifying, terrifying, terrifying'; this kind of thought repeated in Ji Hao's mind over and over again. This was Yu Yu's true power. What had been displayed by the black-robed Yu Yu was the true power of a saint. And, the power which was shown by the other Yu Yu, the one that Ji Hao was familiar with, the natural and unrestrained, alcoholic red-robed Yu Yu, was just a tip of the iceberg, wasn't it?

Red robe, black robe, the personalities of these two Yu Yu were two opposite extremes.

"Yu Yu, my friend, my soul has merged with the great Dao of nature. How can you kill me? You humiliated me. I can't defeat you, but don't blame me for going after you disciples in the future!"

Tong Jiong suddenly burst into a hoarse scream.

"Didn't you go after Gui Ling already? If I weren't there in time, Gui Ling would have become a potful of turtle soup!" Evil Yu Yu gave an especially cold sneer and said, "I was merciful. I didn't kill you, and just asked my friends to seal you in here...Today, I came to release you, but you are again trying to hurt my disciple. You shall not blame me for having no mercy this time!"

Yu Yu laughed evilly and sounded quite like a powerful devil. "Merging your soul with the Dao of nature...Big deal, huh? After all, you're still a breath away from that level!" He said harshly.

Growling resonantly, Yu Yu released two beams of frosty black light from his eyes. The space before him quaked. Next, within the area hundreds of meters radius, the space began squirming intensely, showing countless beautiful traces, full of splendor.

Ji Hao cast a glance at these colorful traces, which were thickly covered in strange spell symbols. He immediately figured out that these were the great Dao of Pan Gu world, visualized by Yu Yu's mighty power.

Dao was shapeless, traceless, colorless, silent, and mysterious. However, Evil Yu Yu visualized the great Dao of Pan Gu world and allowed Ji Hao to see every part of it clearly.

The enormous traces of Dao slowly flew in front of Ji Hao like rivers. Evil Yu Yu abruptly laughed and pointed his finger at the traces of Dao. A colorful, flowing trace of Dao, which had countless spell symbols quickly rolling in it, jumped out. Then the other traces of Dao faded, leaving this single trace floating before Evil Yu Yu's face.

"The great Dao of magnetic force, huh?" Evil Yu Yu sneered towards the pale-faced Tong Jiong, "No improvement? That year, before my friends sealed you, you were at this level. And now, you're still here. Ah, my mercy on you is wasted!"

"Let me tell you this. You've merged your soul with the great Dao, but you can't control the Dao, nor become a real part of the great Dao...This is like dripping a drop of oil into the sea. No matter how well you hide, in my eyes, the oil and water are separated. You're an inch away from truly merging with the great Dao, but this inch decided your fate!" Evil Yu Yu gave laughed evilly, then sent a beam of black sword light into the great Dao of magnetic force.

Colorful lightning bolts were generated. While screaming, Tong Jiong kneeled in the air and kowtowed quickly to Evil Yu Yu, crying and begging for mercy.

Evil Yu Yu's face was filled with an intent of killing. He laughed out loud and made the black sword light circle around the great Dao of magnetic force. A sizzling noise could be heard without an end. In about two hours, a colorful figure was dragged out of the great Dao of magnetic force.

"My friend, you destroyed my foundation of Dao. This hate..." Tong Jiong stared at Yu Yu with a bone-deep hatred and a sheer desperation.

"This hatred will never fade. So what? Today's result is due to that day's cause. Tong Jiong, you asked for this. Who can you blame?" Said Evil Yu Yu.

A dark sword light penetrated the forehead of the colorful figure.

Tong Jiong gave vent to a shrill howl, then paused. Strands of colorfully glowing mist puffed out of his body, and meanwhile, his body began melting and collapsing like a piece of ice under sunshine.

Chapter 1825: Creating the Formation

"Look carefully!" Carrying the colorful figure, Evil Yu Yu shouted at Ji Hao.

Ji Hao concentrated his attention on Yu Yu. His spirit power expanded, covering the entire cave to grasp any change caused by Evil Yu Yu, also focusing on Tong Jiong's dying body and the colorful figure in Evil Yu Yu's hand. The colorful figure was Tong Jiong's soul, which was once merged with the great Dao of magnetic force.

As a ninety-five percent saint, Tong Jiong's every single fine hair contained endless secrets. His body was no longer a mortal body. Instead, it was condensed from the essence of great Dao and natural powers.

When Tong Jiong's body collapsed, the secret of the great Dao of magnetic force was unlocked in front of Ji Hao. Tong Jiong's body was like a well-sealed esoterica, recording a rich fund of knowledge and countless secrets. When his body collapsed, the book was opened, page by page.

Every word, every secret contained in the book was exposed.

Ji Hao imprinted all these secrets about the great Dao of magnetic force in his embryo of Dao. He couldn't understand them all within a short span of time, but he had memorized the entire great Dao of magnetic force.

Without billions of years of severe cultivation, an average cultivator couldn't possibly see through a certain part of the great Dao. But, because of Tong Jiong's selfless devotion, Ji Hao memorized the entire great Dao of magnetic force within a couple of hours.

Suddenly, a scary changed happened to his widely expanded spirit power. The spirit power gathered towards his embryo of Dao

and became a tiny spot.

In the following moment, this nearly infinitesimal spot exploded along with a buzzing noise. At this very moment, the nature of Ji Hao's spirit power changed, turning traceless and especially strong. The special effect of magnetic forcefield was added to Ji Hao's spirit power, that wherever his spirit power reached, a magnetic forcefield would cover that area.

The magnetic force field created by Ji Hao's spirit power was far weaker than the ones created by the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag, but it was already strong enough to cause actual effects on metal objects, including all kinds of weapons, armors, and magic tools.

Within the coverage of Ji Hao's spirit power, all metal objects were under Ji Hao's control. What a dreadful power!

"You've learned something, not bad!" Evil Yu Yu was seriously not good at smiling. He forcibly upturned a mouth corner and showed a faint smile that looked even worse than a crying face.

Tong Jiong's body vanished slowly. The moment Tong Jiong's body disappeared, Ji Hao solemnly kneeled on the ground and kowtowed to Evil Yu Yu.

Yu Yu did this on purpose. He was such a powerful being, that he could simply finish Tong Jiong with one sword move. But, he spent hours. Apparently, Yu Yu sacrificed a powerful creature who had a chance to become a saint in order to allow Ji Hao to 'inherit' Tong Jiong's great Dao of magnetic force. He created such a great opportunity for Ji Hao. If Po and Gui Ling knew about this, they might feel a little jealousy, no matter how big-hearted they were — How could Yu Yu treat his disciples so unfairly?

Tong Jiong's body was gone, but his colorfully glowing soul was still screaming shrilly.

Before long, the scream of his soul was dulled, as Tong Jiong's true spirit was worn out, leaving a streak of colorful light lying on

Evil Yu Yu's palm. The colorful light released strong waves of magnetic force that quaked the space. The space, time, and the great Dao in Feng Dao Mount were all twisted in a strange way because of the strong magnetic force waves.

"Need a trace of your soul!" Evil Yu Yu extended a hand to Ji Hao and said, "Just a trace of your soul!"

Ji Hao stood up. Under his will, a hair-thin strand of his soul flew out. Based on his current cultivation, losing this slight part of soul was like an ocean losing a drop of water, no effect at all.

Evil Yu Yu grasped the trace of Ji Hao's soul and cast a spell, then conveniently sent this trace of soul into the enormous colorful streak of light. Immediately, Ji Hao felt that he had an extra embryo of Dao! And, this new embryo of Dao contained endless secrets about the pre-world and after-world magnetic force.

"Ji Hao, my disciple, you have made some achievements on the Dao of sword. Since your brothers and sisters all have other things to do, I'm afraid you will have to carry the purest sword spell of our sect forward." Carrying the colorful light, which was now connected with Ji Hao, Evil Yu Yu said in an evil tone, "Sword, a fierce weapon of killing... A good sword can cut everything in the world..."

While Evil Yu Yu was making this speech about sword, the mysterious man snorted in Ji Hao's spiritual space. Obviously, the mysterious man didn't like swords. No matter how, the type of weapon that he loved the most was giant axes!

"Yet, a man's power is limited. With a sword move, you can kill ten, a hundred, a thousand." Evil Yu Yu continued passionately, "But, if you are facing ten-thousand, a hundred-thousand, even a million enemies, how could you kill them all with one sword move? No other ways but a sword formation can make you win."

"Like my sword formation...You've borrowed my sword formation for a couple of times. You should know that once my

sword formation is activated, even an elementary grade cultivator can slaughter numberless living beings with it." Said Evil Yu Yu.

He slightly lowered his head to look at Ji Hao, then laughed, "You just need a sword formation like that now. One sword formation isn't enough, you also need a spirit to stabilize it. Our generous friend Tong Jiong gave you the materials for you to make a sword formation, and also gave you himself as the spirit of your new sword formation! We have to accept his gifts. Otherwise, his kindness would be wasted!"

Laughing out loud, Evil Yu Yu pointed his finger at the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag, which was held in Ji Hao's hand. Following his move, the flag and the pair of calabashes flew into his hands together.

Evil Yu Yu then raised his head and glanced at the ceiling of the cave to see what time it was. Afterward, he nodded and smiled, "Yu Yu told me to go back as soon as possible, as he needs my help...But, the time is enough. Hmm, you have quite a lot of useful things, especially this mill of Dao, plus this living calabash and dead calabash... Good, good!"

As Yu Yu waved his hand, the size of the mill of Dao, which was spinning slowly behind Ji Hao, was halved. A half of the millstone slowly flew into Evil Yu Yu's hands. He sat in midair with his legs crossed, hands gripping the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag as he shook it slightly and gave a deep growl.

The colorful light flew into the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag, which spread suddenly following a thunderous boom.

The colorful magnetic light shone upon the space and shattered the Feng Dao Mount silently, destroying all the herbs that Ji Hao planned to bring back.

Evil Yu Yu roared sonorously while waves of black sword lights fell into the spread Tai-Yi magnetic force flag and merged with the colorful light, and so did the half of Ji Hao's mill of Dao and the

pair of calabashes.

In the next moment, the nine pre-world weapons, which were collected by Tong Jiong just then, let out muffled buzzing noises. As Evil Yu Yu wielded his broad sleeve, the nine weapons fell apart, each leaving a spot of pure essence spirit light, being swallowed by the colorful magnetic light.

Chapter 1826: Pre-world Magnetic Life and Death

The moment the nine pre-world weapons fell apart, Ji Hao's heart twitched intensely.

Those were nine pre-world supreme treasures, fierce killing weapons, and were used for sealing Tong Jiong back in the ancient time. But, Evil Yu Yu crushed them with one single move, extracted their pre-world spirits, and merged those into the sword formation!

So powerful, so cruel, so fierce and strong! He was indeed the embodiment of the evil side of Yu Yu.

A colorful light spun swiftly in Evil Yu Yu's hands. From the space, tremendous waves of Chaos power roared into this colorful light. Apart from the Chaos power, the powers of the great Dao of destruction and creation, which Ji Hao had already familiar with, had both been generated from the Chaos and were merging into the colorful light.

The Dao of destruction added a killing power to this colorful light. The killing power grew stronger and stronger, purer and purer, and gradually generated a death power. The death power turned wider and wider, spreading out a despairing cold feeling, and from the cold and empty feeling, a trace of quietus power could be sensed...

The Dao of creation gathered the killing power, death power, coldness, emptiness, and quietus in the colorful light together, carefully mixed and fermented, then turned these 'raw materials' into a delicious wine. After this 'fermentation process', the powers of different types of Dao in the colorful light were blended and balanced, eventually turning into an indescribable, mysterious, pure kind of power, which existed for destruction, but was complicated and elusive.

As an inaccurate metaphor, this was like the fact that every living being would eventually die, but in different ways, such as drowning, hanging, burning, dying in battles...No one in the world could know all ways of death.

A man who was so afraid of drowning decided to stay away from all rivers and lakes and oceans. But one day, he was accidentally choked to death by a mouthful of water.

A man worried that he might die from falling, so he decided to never climb a mountain. But one day, he was smashed to death by a rock that fell off a cliff.

A man didn't want to die in battles, so he lived in seclusion, and isolated himself from the rest of the world. But one day, he encountered a fierce tiger in the forest and was killed.

There was no way to describe all the ways of death. Under the effect of the Dao of creation, the powers in the colorful light turned more and more complicated, like the strong and complicated mouthful of a hundred-year-old wine. A good wine might make a man want to die, over and over again.

The living calabash and dead calabash contained the great Dao of life and death. Tong Jiong owed the pair of calabashes forever, yet he failed to reveal their secrets. But, Yu Yu didn't care about the secrets hiding in these two calabashes. He simply pointed at them and made them disintegrate, then merge them into the colorful light.

The colorful light turned even more complicated. Gradually, the colors of black and white emerged from the light and grew thicker and thicker, slowly dulling the vivid colors of the light and turning it colorless. As the colors faded, the light turned darker and darker, more and more mysterious in Yu Yu's hand.

The first trace of intent of killing in this world expanded rapidly in Yu Yu's hand. It devoured the Chaos power from all directions and spread a thrilling aura of killing. Hearing a series of clanks, Ji

Hao sensed waves of coldness coming straight at his face.

The Pan Gu bell activated itself and released strands of Chaos power to shield Ji Hao. But still, due to Ji Hao's carelessness, a traceless killing power attacked him and left a bone-deep wound on his face.

Blood gushed out of the wound. With shock, Ji Hao hurriedly activated his spirit blood to heal it.

Ji Hao had a Pan Gu body, but he spent a quarter of an hour to heal that half-foot-long, inch-deep wound! The traceless yet bone-piercingly cold killing power lingered on his face, neutralizing Ji Hao's spirit blood power and squeezing more blood out of the wound. By the time a large amount of lifeless blood splashed on the ground, Ji Hao finally managed to heal this wound.

In terms of physical body cultivation, Ji Hao was among the best in Pan Gu world. However, under the protection of the Pan Gu bell, he was injured so easily by this killing power, and he spent a long span of time to heal the injury. It wasn't hard to imagine how miserable an ordinary man would end up being if this killing power landed on his body.

Life and death supported each other, cycling. The Dao of destruction, Dao of creation, living power, life-force, and the ever-changing magnetic force...The colorless light changed slowly in Yu Yu's hand and turned more and more mysterious. Ji Hao couldn't see through it, even though he had a trace of soul merged with it.

After an unknown span of time, Ji Hao heard a thunderous growl from Evil Yu Yu. Evil Yu Yu shook his wrists and showed a square formation blueprint which was wrapped in strands of mist, and had a magical white and black glow inside it.

"The formation is here. Where are your formation treasures?" Asked Evil Yu Yu harshly.

Ji Hao roared resonantly. He opened his eyes and threw the Pan

Gu bell, Pan Gu sword, and the golden bridge into the blueprint.

Following a thunderous buzz, the formation blueprint emitted an eye-dazzling light. Next, the foot-squared blueprint expanded rapidly and covered a hundred-million-miles area within a blink of an eye.

The Pan Gu bell floated upon the blueprint, releasing streams of Chaos power to strengthen the formation.

The golden bridge transformed into a golden rainbow and allowed Ji Hao to move freely and swiftly in this vast formation.

The Pan Gu sword stood right in the center of the formation, raising strands of sword power. Inside the formation, the traceless magnetic force had been waving, shreds of sword shadows had been flashing, and the black and white sword lights had been rising along with a frosty mist.

Ji Hao walked into the formation with large steps and gave a bright shout. Following his voice, the formation glowed brightly and created an independent space. In this space, the sky was dark and the earth was white as snow. In the next moment, the sky was brightened and the earth was darkened. As the brightness and darkness shifted inside the sword formation, a suffocating aura of killing was generated.

Pop!

Within the sword formation, all living beings except Ji Hao vanished.

"Great formation, kill quickly." Evil Yu Yu nodded in satisfaction. This sword formation was based on the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag, made with the dead calabash, living calabash, and the nine pre-world supreme treasures, then stabilized by Pan Gu sword, Pan Gu bell, and the golden bridge...

"Good disciple, name it!" Evil Yu Yu took out a black wine calabash from a sleeve and delightfully gave himself a large

mouthful of wine.

Ji Hao pondered for a second, then chuckled and responded, "Sure! Pre-world Magnetic life and death sword formation."

Chapter 1827: Dragon Mother Returns

Ji Hao sat in the sword formation with his legs crossed and silently sensed its power through the formation spirit.

The power of the sword formation flooded into his body in endless streams. While accepting the power, Ji Hao felt a deeper and deeper understanding of this sword formation bloom in his embryo of Dao like countless lotuses. Along with a series of clanks, the secrets about the multiple types of fierce powers contained in the formation were clearly carved on his embryo of Dao.

After drinking the spring from the living calabash, Ji Hao's power and cultivation had still been rising rapidly. At the moment, his soul and spirit had thoroughly merged into the sword formation, because of which, an extremely sharp sword intent was added to his soaring power. Under the effect of the sword intent, his power turned purer and purer, sharper and sharper, with a higher and higher concentration.

Saint power was the purest pre-world divine material, strong and flawless. This formation made by Evil Yu Yu was exactly like a forging furnace, brought the saint's power that Ji Hao attained to a higher level, just like forging some ordinary materials into a matchless weapon.

The strands of sword power which had been descending from the miles wide cloud above Ji Hao's head were now in rough sword shapes, looking like shreds of shadows of swords. The large ones among these differently sized sword shadows were merely about a foot long. These sword shadows fell speedily from the cloud as they left clear black space cracks in the Chaos.

"Sword cutting the space...My Dao of sword will have a successor!" Evil Yu Yu looked at Ji Hao and nodded in satisfaction. Pouring more wine into his mouth, he abruptly clenched his teeth and began complaining, "Po is such a b*stard. He's the big brother,

yet he is obsessed in forging treasures. That is fine actually. After all, the Dao of forging is a branch of the Dao of magic formation, and a major type of Dao of our sect!"

"But, as a big brother, he let his little brother surpass him in the Dao of sword. Isn't he ashamed?" Evil Yu Yu shook his head and tightened his face suddenly, then gave a cold snort. He transformed into a dark beam of sword light and flew into Ji Hao's sword formation, disappeared amidst the flashing black and while sword lights.

Mr. Crow cawed shrilly. He swiftly picked up the Fuso tree and cautiously stood behind Ji Hao. The Fuso staff quaked and released tens of fire dragons, drawing a giant circle around Ji Hao and Mr. Crow.

All of a sudden, a crimson Chaos tide was crushed by a punch. Next, Dragon Mother marched out of the crushed Chaos tide while laughing wildly, "Hah, old Tong Jiong, Ji Hao kid, have you killed each other yet?" Her body was thickly covered with small dragon scales.

Bamboo Master wielded his bamboo stick and created shreds of bamboo shadows, which quickly expanded into a bamboo forest and formed a small independent world that blocked the Chaos tide. Priest Sadness silently followed behind Bamboo Master, his eyes narrowed while vigilantly looking around.

Faintly audible cries had been spreading from Priest Sadness's body. He carried a long white flax streamer. Tens of sad faces were painted on the streamer. Some were old, some were young, some belonged to men, and some belonged to women. These faces were twisted and crying ceaselessly, with tears spurting out of their eyes.

Seeing Ji Hao in the Chaos alone, Dragon Mother immediately raised her brows and burst into a louder laughter, "Ji Hao kid? Why are you alone? Where's Tong Jiong? Where the mountain?"

Before Ji Hao answered her questions, Dragon Mother turned back and confidently laughed to her helpers, "I have a bad temper, but I know people. How could Tong Jiong and Ji Hao truly help each other? They would become enemies once we left. Hah, Tong Jiong's three spirit supreme treasures, and the nine supreme weapons which were used for sealing him...!"

"And this bell, this sword, and this...What is this golden rainbow?" Priest Sadness looked at Ji Hao and grinned greedily.

Ji Hao was digging into the sword formation. Hearing Dragon Mother and her helpers, he opened his eyes. Looking at Dragon Mother, Bamboo Master, and Priest Sadness, who returned after leaving, he asked with surprise, "Did you know that Tong Jiong and I would turn against each other? You left earlier but have now returned, because..."

"If you didn't fight, fine, I'd have enough time to simply turn around and leave, losing nothing except some time. But, if you are fighting each other, we'd have a perfect chance to stab you from the back, without giving you the time to react. We would kill you, or injure you if we couldn't kill you. All in all, we had to get something from you." Dragon Mother laughed and responded.

Breathing deeply, Dragon Mother excitedly rubbed her hands. The scales on her palms tinkled against each other and generated dazzling fire sparks. "I didn't know that old Tong Jiong was so specious. Ah, he had been sealed for so many years. Perhaps, he consumed up his life-force long ago, so Ji Hao kid killed him, right?" Dragon Mother laughed.

Priest Sadness put on an especially serious face and said, "If Ji Hao kid did kill Tong Jiong, he must be exhausted now, right? Otherwise, why would he sit here and rest? The mountain is gone. I think it was shattered by the impact waves caused by their fight!"

Bamboo Master sighed slightly. He took a step forward and looked at Ji Hao passionately as he said, "Emperor Ji Hao, I don't

want to go against the heaven...But about what's left by Priest Tong Jiong...Treasures have spirits, and should be owned by virtuous people..."

Ji Hao rolled his eyes and took a deep, deep breath. Then he gave a long sigh, and began talking with a deep feeling of mercy, like Priest Hua and Priest Mu, "My friends, Tong Jiong's treasures are destined to belong to our sect. You shall stop thinking about them."

Ji Hao grinned brightly and continued, "Treasures have spirits, and should belong to virtuous people. I am a divine emperor from the heaven. I have a measureless amount of natural reward power. So clearly, I am a virtuous person."

Dragon Mother, Priest Sadness and Bamboo Master quivered simultaneously while gazing at Ji Hao with a strange expression.

After quite a while, Priest Sadness suddenly shouted out, "Where did this little b*stard learn that tone from? Today, I will teach him a lesson...Bloody Priest Mu and Priest Hua! Destiny, destiny? Is anything in the world not destined to belong to them?"

Priest Sadness roared in rage and waved his streamer. Tens of blurry pale faces flew out of the streamer and rushed to Ji Hao along with deafening cries, diving into the sword formation.

Priest Sadness then pulled out a sword and created a white misty sword light to shield his entire body, then bent his body slightly and marched to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao hadn't activated the sword formation yet, but Priest Sadness just rushed in on his own initiative.

Laughing out loud, Ji Hao pointed his finger at Priest Sadness. A bolt of Yu Yu's divine thunder struck on the Pan Gu sword, then a shrill sword buzz could be heard. In the sword formation, the magnetic force quaked intensely and disabled the tens of pale faces from moving.

Not only the tens of pale faces, Priest Sadness's moving speed suddenly dropped by over a thousand folds as well. He was now moving forward inch by inch.

"Sword formation?" Dragon Mother and Bamboo Master exclaimed.

Chapter 1828: First Try

Priest Sadness had truly saved Dragon Mother and Bamboo Master

The Pan Gu bell, Pan Gu sword, and the golden bridge floated in Ji Hao's sword formation, emitting a bright light to illuminate the area. Except for these three treasures, the rest of the sword formation was dark. The sword lights in the sword formation were dim, and the magnetic force was traceless; the sword light flashed across the space, without catching any attention.

If Priest Sadness didn't rush straight into the sword formation, and if he wasn't slowed down suddenly, Dragon Mother would never discover this sword formation, and would certainly follow Priest Sadness in.

"Sword formation!" Bamboo Master curved down his lip corners, as if he suddenly recalled some bitter old memories.

That year, with one sword move, Yu Yu nearly cut off all his bamboo roots and ruined his foundation of Dao. Since then, he had always been so afraid of Yu Yu's sword. Ji Hao was Yu Yu's disciple, and had spread an unknown sword formation in this place...Bamboo Master felt like a man who was frightened by a rope right after getting bitten by a snake...

That was a painful feeling, and both his soul and physical body couldn't stop trembling.

Dragon Mother gave an evil laugh, "He's just a little kid. What kind of powerful sword formation can he possibly have? He's just bluffing..."

Before Dragon Mother finished, Ji Hao pointed his finger at her and Bamboo Master. The pre-world magnetic forcefield swirled out and dragged Dragon Mother and Bamboo Master into the sword formation.

Thud!

Strands of Chaos power descended from the bell and wrapped up the entire sword formation, making it look like a giant egg. In the independent space created by the sword formation, the sky and the earth disappeared, leaving streams of Chaos power rolling and interweaving. Within the Chaos power, the traceless yet especially strong magnetic force rose up. Dragon Mother, Bamboo Master, and Priest Sadness paused simultaneously, then slowed down.

As the one who rushed into this formation first, Priest Sadness tightened his face and glared at Ji Hao, who was merely about tens of miles away from him. Usually, Priest Sadness could cover this short distance with one single step, but at the moment, he felt like carrying tens of thousands of giant mountains and being dragged by countless strong hands. Different types of twisted power had been pulling his body in different directions, making his move harder and harder.

In tens of breaths, Priest Sadness only managed to make seven to eight steps, and each step only covered about half an inch. What was worse, after he moved forward for seven to eight steps with all his strength, the distance between Ji Hao wasn't shortened at all. On the contrary, the distance turned larger.

A faint blackness emerged from the sky, while the earth was brightened slightly. The blackness and brightness shifted suddenly, while a frosty beam of sword light flashed across the space.

For the very first time, this pre-world magnetic life and death sword formation, which was made by Yu Yu himself, showed its power. The moment the sword light appeared, Priest Sadness burst into a howl with both shock and anger. As he wielded the long streamer, the tens of shrilly crying blurry faces immediately merged together and shielded him behind.

The black sword light quietly brushed across those faces. Along

with a sad cry, the tens of blurry faces were cut broken. The Dao of destruction contained in the sword light vanished these blurry faces. Priest Sadness screamed ragingly, as a three-feet-long, hair-thin tear appeared on his streamer.

Streams of evil power flooded out of the streamer to fix it. But, a thin strand of sword power lingered around the tear. No matter how hard Priest Sadness tried, the tear squirmed quickly, but was never fixed. Furthermore, clouds of gray mist had been puffing out of the tear. With that, the tens of twisted faces painted on the streamer dimmed, and its glow was dulled gradually.

"Damn it!" Priest Sadness shouted. This streamer was an important treasure, connected with his life. The tear on it was barely visible, but Priest Sadness suffered a severe harm and a terrible heartache because of it. He almost cried out again.

"My friend, be careful. Your 'tragic streamer' can hurt primordial spirits and damage souls, but it's not a shield or an armor. How can you use it to defend against this sword formation?" Bamboo Master couldn't bear watching this, but hurriedly reminded Priest Sadness. "You look down upon this kid. You must remember that he's Yu Yu's disciple!"

Sadness's tightened face blushed.

Bamboo Master was right. His streamer could brutally hurt souls and control primordial spirits, but ever since it appeared it the world, it never had a function of a shield or an armor! But, Priest Sadness actually used it to shield himself against a sword light. That wasn't the streamer's problem; the problem was that Priest Sadness's brain wasn't working at that moment.

Snorting coldly, Priest Sadness raised his left hand. A bowl flew out of his hand, glowing with a faint yellow light. The simply shaped bowl was made from yellow jade, with a few faintly visible patterns of mountain were sparkling on its surface. The heavy yellow light became a meters thick light shield, firmly covering

Priest Sadness.

Priest Sadness laughed coldly, "This 'hundred-mountain bowl' is..."

Before he finished, another bolt of Yu Yu's divine thunder struck on the Pan Gu sword. Along with the lingering buzzing noises, a wave of sword lights was accelerated by the invisible magnetic field, which tore apart the space and descended on Priest Sadness.

Before the sword lights landed on the yellow light shield, Ji Hao abruptly pointed his finger at the golden rainbow, which was transformed from the golden bridge, and connected the ends of this sword formation. Tens of sword lights flashed and directly penetrated the yellow light shield, appearing right before Priest Sadness's face.

The life-force and death power shifted again and germinated a despairing power of destruction, looming on Priest Sadness.

Priest Sadness's face paled immediately. "Kid, don't you dare..." He shrieked hoarsely, his face twisted.

Before his voice faded, a series of puffing noise could be heard. The magnetic force field served like countless strong ropes, leading the sword lights to cut through Priest Sadness's body over and over again. Numberless holes were left on Priest Sadness body, as blood splashed along with deafening screams. Within a second, Priest Sadness's body was crushed by the sword lights into a cloud of blood mist.

Watching this, Dagon Mother and Bamboo Master were dumbfounded.

Priest Sadness cultivated himself with pure soul magic. He was best at casting all kinds of secret dark magic to brutally hurt his targets' souls. Ordinary people wouldn't be able to even see his face before their souls were destroyed by him. Priest Sadness didn't have an unbreakable body, but the before Dragon Mother and

Bamboo Master could think properly, Ji Hao directly destroyed Priest Sadness's body with such a short span of time, and with a not so famous sword formation!

A shrill shriek echoed through the space. Priest Sadness's soul broke out of the blood mist and screamed at Ji Hao, "Ji Hao kid, don't you dare..."

A black sword light appeared suddenly and penetrated Priest Sadness's soul from the top of its head to the bottom of its feet.

"Killing an old pig? Why don't I dare to? Cut the crap, shall we?"

Chapter 1829: Cut the Treasure

Priest Sadness screamed shrilly as his soul was clamped in the Chaos by a tremendous beam of sword light, unable to move at all. Waves of thin but extremely sharp sword power strands erupted, leaving countless tiny holes on his soul and turning his soul into a sieve.

Streams of pale grey power flew out of Priest Sadness's soul, transforming into numberless sesame sized twisted faces that screamed ear-piercingly. But before long, all these tiny twisted faces were turned into nothingness by the sword power.

Suddenly, abundant soul grains appeared in the pre-world magnetic life and death sword formation. The soul grains were pure and strong, looking like flowing mercury that quickly spread in all directions. Priest Sadness cultivated himself with the great Dao of soul. His cries could directly hurt primordial spirits and souls, and his soul was especially powerful, containing a measureless amount of original soul power.

Ji Hao opened up countless tiny holes on Priest Sadness's soul with the sword power. Through these tiny holes, Priest Sadness's original soul power was leaking out, being purified by the sword formation and turned into the most basic soul grains that spread in the formation.

The pale-grey evil power surged and gradually condensed into palm-sized pale-grey lotuses, forming a thick lotus wall surrounding Priest Sadness's soul.

Thousands of meters long beams of pale-grey light shone out of the eyes of Priest Sadness's soul. He looked at Ji Hao and laughed in a high-pitched, dry voice, "Ji Hao kid, you can hurt my soul, but you can't kill me! My soul has merged with the great Dao of soul. I am a part of the great Dao of nature now. I will never die. Unless the great Dao of Pan Gu world collapses and the great Dao of soul is

destroyed, you can't hurt my foundation of Dao, no matter how many times you injure me!"

Priest Sadness's soul took a deep breath. Abruptly, a ten-thousand-miles-long space crack appeared. Along with a deafening rumbling noise, a grey-white tide descended from the crack and transformed into beams of pale-grey light that flew into Priest Sadness's soul.

Priest Sadness's sieve-like, dim soul immediately shone with a dazzling light, like a burnt out oil lamp suddenly being filled up with the best lamp-oil, again emitting a beautiful light.

Laughing with that high-pitched voice, Priest Sadness glared at Ji Hao. While enduring the piercing pain that came from his nearly shredded soul, he opened his mouth and let out a white bone pendant. A ferocious-looking devil portrait was embossed on the white bone pendant. As Priest Sadness cast a spell, the devil suddenly opened its eyes.

Two beams of white light sliced through space, flashing towards Ji Hao's head.

Ji Hao sneered and pointed his finger at the Pan Gu bell. The bell buzzed, and the magnetic force in the sword formation began waving intensely, smashing the space. The distance between Ji Hao and Priest Sadness was instantly expanded to tens of millions of miles.

The white light approached. But, each time the white light moved a foot further, the distance between Ji Hao and Priest Sadness grew three meters longer. When the white lights moved three meters forward, the distance expanded by a mile, and when the white lights moved for a mile, the distance between Ji Hao and Priest Sadness had already reached hundreds of millions of miles!

The two immeasurably powerful beams of white light flashed in space for a quarter of an hour, covering an unknown distance, but were eventually worn out. At last, the white light faded among

layers of shields of magnetic force.

The expressions on Dragon Mother and Bamboo Master's faces changed immediately. Ji Hao's sword formation was not only powerful, but also magically flexible.

Priest Sadness's jade pendant was a spirit treasure. It was naturally created along with the great Dao of soul back when Saint Pan Gu created this world. This jade pendant had the power to find a soul from a thousand miles away, and kill its targets without being noticed. The two beams of while light released from it could swirl any soul away, unless the owner of the soul was a saint whose soul had merged thoroughly with the great Dao and could never die, or was protected by a top-grade supreme treasure.

This bone pendant was Priest Sadness's most powerful treasure. He wouldn't use it unless he had to, but once he activated it, someone would die. Priest Sadness had done many evil things back in the ancient time, and his streamer had swallowed numberless souls. However, no one ever managed to do anything to him, mostly because of this bone pendant.

Nevertheless, the soul-descrying light released from this bone pendant was actually worn out by Ji Hao's sword formation. How amazing!

While looking at Priest Sadness's soul, who was nailed in space by a sword light and could not move, Dragon Mother and Bamboo Master' eyes dazzled. They had now discovered that the situation was unfavorable, and seemed to want to flee.

However, Bamboo Master couldn't bear leaving Priest Sadness here alone. After all, they were friends, and both came out of their solitude because of Dragon Mother's invitation. Bamboo Master felt that leaving Priest Sadness here alone was morally wrong.

Dragon Mother struggled. She had no moral pressure; instead, she was simply too ashamed to run.

If Bamboo Master weren't here, she would walk straight away without being concerned about Priest Sadness's life, but he was here. If he saw Dragon Mother leave Priest Sadness and flee alone, would she still have the face to see anyone in the future?

Dragon Mother and Bamboo Master quickly exchanged a glance. Bamboo Master's eyes showed hesitation, while Dragon Mother's eyes were filled with determination, 'Try attacking this sword formation!' If they managed to break this sword formation, things would be perfect...But if they failed, she would have to wait until Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness both died, before she could run alone without worry!

What made her struggle was that if Ji Hao couldn't kill Priest Sadness and Bamboo Master, her bad reputation of leaving her friends and fleeing would still spread!

"My friend Sadness, hang on. Bitter Bamboo and I are coming to save you!" Clicking her lips, Dragon Mother gave a shout.

Bamboo Master gave a bitter smile, then took a deep breath and glared at Ji Hao, "Sadness my friend, don't worry. Can't we even defeat an embryo-of-Dao-level kid? This sword formation isn't the one that belongs to Priest Yu Yu!"

Priest Sadness screamed hoarsely. He had no time to respond to Dragon Mother and Bamboo Master, as he had been ceaselessly releasing his original life-force to control the bone pendant. The bone pendent vented beams of white light towards all directions.

The white light tore apart the space, dazzling all over the area and clashing against the sword lights, looking like splendid fireworks. Explosive sounds could be heard without an end, as waves of sword power were shuttling in the sword formation and crushing the white lights. Countless beams of sword lights directly struck on the bone pendant and raised bright fire sparks.

Suddenly, along with a clear cracking noise, a long crack appeared on the bone pendant.

Chapter 1830: The Sword Lights Break the Space

"You damnable little b*stard!" Priest Sadness' soul was shaking. Abruptly, he opened his mouth and let out a stream of original life-force.

The bone pendant was a powerful treasure indeed, but it wasn't a defensive treasure. Instead, it aimed to hurt souls. Priest Sadness's soul was nailed in space by a sword light, and had been suffering an unbearable pain, as countless sword lights were going through his soul moment after moment. Under the pain, he wasn't thinking straight, and he let the bone pendant collide straight with the endless sword power in the sword formation. This was like throwing a precious mirror at a giant axe; without a doubt, the mirror would be the one shattered, not the tough axe!

Before Priest Sadness took the bone pendant back, tens of beams of formidable sword lights struck on the cracked bone pendant, as fast as lightning bolts.

The bone pendant exploded with a thunderous bang and released a cloud of white mist. The mist condensed into an especially hideous devil face which threw a threatening glance at Ji Hao. However, before this devil head could take any action, strands of sword power attacked from every direction and crushed it within a blink.

Buzz!

The density of the soul grains in the sword formation suddenly grew many times higher. The soul power contained in the bone pendant was actually much greater than the original soul power which had been leaking out of Priest Sadness's soul.

Priest sadness raised his head and shrieked madly. His shrill voice even quaked the surrounding space slightly.

This whole area was sealed off by a pre-world magnetic forcefield, and the space around Priest Sadness's soul was firmed up by the strong magnetic force. Therefore, no matter how loudly he cried, the space remained perfectly sturdy, without showing a single crack.

Dragon Mother and Bamboo Master growled out in one voice and dove into the sword formation.

Dragon Mother had an exceptionally strong body and a tremendous defensive power, but after entering the sword formation, she was actually half a step slower than Bamboo Master. Bamboo Master was a master of many types of magic, but wasn't good at close combat. Holding his bamboo stick, he broke into the sword formation with giant steps, then shreds of bamboo shadows flashed around him. As the magnetic forcefield was shaken slightly, he approached Ji Hao and showed up about a mile away from the latter,

Ji Hao smiled and raised his head, looking at Bamboo Master while slapping on the Pan Gu bell with both hands, bringing up a series of lightning bolts. Sonorous sword buzzes could be heard without an end while nine black sword lights flashed across the spaces and struck on Bamboo Master in a row.

Above the sword formation, the golden bridge shone with a golden light. Immediately, a magical change happened to the series of sword lights that Ji Hao released. The nine sword lights were flashing towards Bamboo Master in a straight light, but after the golden bridge added its supreme power to them, they were no longer flying forward, but began 'jumping' through space at a scarily high frequency.

Within one ten-thousandth of a second, the nine beams of sword light had completed hundreds of millions of 'space jumps'. They tore apart the space and disappeared, then 'jumped' out of space a short distance away in the following moment.

Every 'space jump' only covered a small distance. Therefore, these sword light still seemed to fly at a constant speed. But, only powerful cultivators with especially strong spirit powers could discover the secret of these nine sword light beams.

The highly frequent 'space jumps' changed the nature of these sword lights.

The sword lights buzzed while sharp saw teeth emerged from their smooth edges. Every tiny sword tooth was vibrating at a high frequency. Wherever these sword lights flashed across, barely visible, colorful cracks appeared in the magnetic force field. Because of the golden bridge's power, the lethality of these nine sword light beams was raised by at least ten folds.

When the sword lights approached Bamboo Master, the golden bridge moved under Ji Hao's will, and the nine sword lights jumped again.

Nine shreds of bamboo shadows emerged around Bamboo Master's body, each accurately aimed at one sword light beam. But, as the sword lights suddenly jumped, the bamboo shadows missed their targets. Before, the sword lights targeted at Bamboo Master's chest, but after a few jumps, they appeared around Bamboo Master's body, lunging towards his head, kidneys, ribs areas, heart, and the backs of his neck and heart. The sharp sword lights gave a bone-piercing feeling while vibrating and jumping constantly.

Bamboo Master howled shrilly with shock. A hundred and eight shreds of bamboo shadows popped up around his body. Every twelve shreds of bamboo shadows formed a tiny mistrack formation to trap a sword light beam. When the one-hundred and eight shreds of bamboo shadows were about to block the nine sword light beams, the sword lights jumped again and magically penetrated them. The distance between Bamboo Master's bodies and the sword lights were no greater than three inches at the moment.

In the following moment, Bamboo Master was going to suffer a severe struck from these sword lights.

"Great treasure!" At this very moment, Bamboo Master raised his head and threw a quick glance at the golden bridge with a deep shock. Then, his body suddenly transformed into a hundreds of meters thick, tens of thousands of meters tall bamboo.

Waves of bamboo leaves erupted into a green hurricane that roared across the entire area.

This was a full defensive move, the best solution that Bamboo Master could think of under this urgent situation. He sealed off the space around him with bamboo leaves, without giving the sword lights any chance to jump in, no matter how fast and powerful they were.

"Elder, you underestimated my sword formation." Ji Hao chuckled. Following his voice, an exceptionally strong and sharp strand of power transformed into a sword light, rose from his head, and flew into the golden bridge like a rapidly flowing river.

The golden bridge gave a rumbling buzz, then vented clouds of warm golden mist. The entire sword formation quaked slightly, then the nine sword light beams flashed across the space and disappeared without a trace.

The giant bamboo, which was transformed from Bamboo Master's body, trembled intensely. Next, nine silvery clanks could be heard as nine long and deep slashes were left on the giant bamboo. Thick green mists whiffed out from the slashes, while large streams of green transparent liquid flowed out.

"Elder, did you forget that you're a bamboo, and your body is hollow on the inside? The space inside your body...It allowed my sword lights to jump in and give you a strike!" Ji Hao smiled faintly, "You can't possibly block my sword lights, unless you seal off yourself without leaving a slight crevice of space."

The giant bamboo disappeared. Bamboo Master showed up with nine large puncture wounds on his body. His blood had been gushing out of those wounds.

Clearly, Bamboo Master had suffered serious injuries.

Strands of black power lingered in his wounds, corroding his body. Even under the effect of Bamboo Master's life force, his wounds didn't heal. On the contrary, those wounds had been expanding quickly.

Chapter 1831: Shock Dragon Mother with the Sword

After breaking Bamboo Master's body, Ji Hao sent a thunderbolt into the sword formation and changed the pre-world magnetic forcefield immediately. The magnetic force around Bamboo Master was disordered suddenly, and the space, time, and all the other types of natural powers were shredded.

As the Pan Gu bell rang, an empty and bundles space appeared around Bamboo Master. Bamboo Master was trapped in this space by a tremendous force, without being able to move and with nothing to depend on, like a bug trapped in resin. For every slight movement, he needed to consume a great amount of energy, and the nine giant sword wounds had been devouring his blood, flesh, and life-force. He suffered a headache, not knowing what to do.

"Elder, you have good mental quality, much better than Sadness. Please rest for a while, we'll talk to later." Ji Hao glanced at Bamboo Master and said blandly, "If you don't move, the sword formation won't move either. But if you move...the sword formation will move too."

Bamboo Master paused for a second and pondered shortly. A wave of bamboo leaves then flew out of his body and transformed into shreds and green shadows to seal the space around him. The leaves composed a mysterious small formation that shielded Bamboo Master. Afterward, he took out twenty-four green tablets and activated them, releasing twenty-four beams of green light which flashed across the space and added another layer of seals in this area to protect Bamboo Master.

After setting up the defense, Bamboo Master took out a small bottle, poured three thumb-sized green pills into his mouth, then gave Dragon Mother a bitter smile while shaking his head. "My friend, please allow me to take a rest." He said.

Remaining silent for a short while, Bamboo Master continued, "The sword formation is powerful. My friend, please be careful."

The expression on Dragon Mother's face changed quickly. Earlier, Priest Sadness was trapped in the sword formation, suffering a great pain as his soul was nearly shredded. Priest Sadness's soul had merged with the great Dao and couldn't die, but it suffered a serious pain.

Back when she just entered this sword formation, Dragon Mother planned to bully Ji Hao by being an ancient powerful being. She didn't expect his sword formation to be so powerful. However, not long after entering, Bamboo Master defeated. The wounds on Bamboo Master's body were so scary. He was a well-cultivated powerful being, and was a bamboo. Supreme treasures with a fierce killing power like the Pan Gu sword were the most harmful thing to plants in the whole world...

Dragon Mother couldn't count on Bamboo Master for now, and her face darkened badly. A thick layer of small scales grew out of her skin and straightened up. Every single scale was like a sharp blade. The scales moved slightly and clinked against each other. Meanwhile, her body shape began shifting, turning into a slim and muscular half-dragon, half human creature, from a tall aristocratic woman.

"Ji Hao kid, let me try your sword formation." Dragon Mother chuckled, "Let me try it. I'd like to see if it can be as powerful as Pan Gu's axe."

Shaking her head, Dragon Mother laughed proudly, "I heard that if your Shifu boosts up his sword formation to the peak, he would be able to generate a destructive power with one sword move that would be as great as the strike which Saint Pan Gu made to create this world...If you're holding that sword formation, I'd be a little scared. But this is not that one, is it?"

Ji Hao tightened his face and said nothing. She was right. In

mere terms of formation quality, this pre-world magnetic life and death sword formation wasn't as good as Yu Yu's sword formation.

But, Ji Hao was lucky. The formation treasures he used for stabilizing this sword formation were Pan Gu's legacy.

At first, the Pan Gu sword was made from the dragon ancestor's horns, which were Pan Gu's front teeth. But later on, Ji Hao luckily found Pan Gu's axe, which helped to create this world, and he merged the axe into the Pan Gu sword.

Did Yu Yu's sword formation need to be boosted up to the top to generate the power that equaled to the power of an axe strike from Pan Gu?

Ji Hao's Pan Gu sword was even more powerful than Pan Gu's axe. It was just that he himself wasn't strong enough to release all of Pan Gu sword's power.

"What are you boasting off? If your brother didn't save you, you would have died under Saint Pan Gu's axe long ago. Do you even dare to try my Shifu's sword formation? A little scared...Hehe!" Smiling faintly, Ji Hao uncovered the scar in Dragon Mother's heart.

Hearing Ji Hao's 'hehe', Dragon Mother's face blushed with both shame and anger. A golden-red pair of wings spread behind her back and brought her to Ji Hao swiftly, transforming into a streak of light.

As a Chaos dragon, Dragon Mother was indeed powerful. Her wings buzzed and quaked the space. Her flying speed, which was based on her pure physical strength, was actually higher than Ji Hao's based on the golden bridge before he took the spring in the living calabash and improved his power and cultivation.

By slightly moving her wings, Dragon Mother rushed up to Ji Hao in an instant. Ji Hao nearly lost track of Dragon Mother and almost failed to figure out where exactly she was, despite his great

spirit power.

Behind Dragon Mother, waves of dim colorful light emerged. She violently tore the magnetic forcefield and caused a magnetic storm to generate these lights. "I am a Chaos dragon. I can travel across the Chaos with my bare body. The pre-world magnetic force is fierce indeed, but you're weak. So, how can your magnetic forcefield be strong enough to trap me?" Dragon Mother snarled.

Chaos dragons had incomparably strong bodies, that allowed them to travel across the Chaos without extra protection. As a Chaos dragon, Dragon Mother's body was like a powerful enchanted spaceship, which was strengthened by countless seals and magic formations. Chaos tide, magnetic force fields, geomagnetic storms, heaven fires, dark thunders, none of these could do any harm to Dragon Mother's scales.

Ji Hao was careless and didn't manage to increase the output of the magnetic force. Consequently, Dragon Mother seized the chance and approached him.

Her pair of fists roared out like thunder. She laughed complacently and evilly, eyes fixed on Ji Hao. Priest Sadness applauded for her. Bamboo Master's expression changed slightly as he turned to Dragon Mother and looked at her with hope.

At this moment, Ji Hao raised a finger. The moment before Dragon Mother's fists landed on his body, the magnetic forcefield in the sword formation waved. All of a sudden, the distance between Ji Hao and Dragon Mother expanded to millions of miles. Dragon Mother's fists penetrated layers of space, but eventually failed to hit Ji Hao.

Ji Hao snorted and raised a hand. The Pan Gu bell quaked and generated a sizzling noise. Following the noise, a tremendous sword light roared out. Strengthened by both the golden bridge and the magnetic forcefield, the sword light jumped through the space and struck on Dragon Mother along an unpredictable path.

Dragon Mother was a master of fighting, but not good at magic. Facing Ji Hao's sword light, she didn't do as good as Bamboo Master. She spread her wings and curled up her body, prepared to defend against the sword light with her bare body.

Puff!

Dragon Mother shrieked. The sword light brushed across her body and left a deep wound on her back. Through the wound, Ji Hao could even see her internal organs. Blood spurted out while she screamed in a panic. In the following moment, she actually turned around and attempted to run.

Chapter 1832: The Armies Reach Yao Mountain City

While Ji Hao was fighting against the three powerful beings alone with the sword formation, an intense aura of killing was looming on Pan Gu Motherland. The sounds of drums, horns, and the screams of battle beasts nearly cracked the sky. Numberless giant battle machines moved swiftly on the ground, leaving deep tracks behind.

Yao Mountain City stood in the old location of Buzhou Mountain. Ji Hao moved the entire city to this location and expanded it widely. On the city walls, the blurry figures of countless legendary creatures could be seen, while numberless heavily armored human warriors, dragon warriors, phoenix warriors, and the elite warriors from other species patrolled on the walls.

Outside the city, the lava rivers, sand rivers, and dangerous swamp zones had been giving a strong pressure. Countless strange creatures stayed leisurely in these dangerous place, roaring thunderously at the sky from time to time.

The city was entirely surrounded by an ocean. Numberless elite dragon warriors and uncountable water-kind warriors raised giant waves. Occasionally, the waves bumped into each other and caused earth-shaking noises.

High up in the sky, the front gate of the heaven was faintly visible. A colorful beam of light poured down from the sky, covering the entire Yao Mountain City.

The heaven and earth formation in the heaven and the one in Yao Mountain City had merged perfectly into one. Inside the colorful light, countless complicated spell symbols were sparkling. By now, Yao Mountain City had nearly replaced Buzhou Mountain, and begun balancing and stabilizing the entire world.

Because of this colorful light beam, Yao Mountain City had become the only path to heaven. One must enter the heaven by going straight upward through the rising formation inside Yao Mountain City. Before, when Buzhou Mountain was still here, powerful beings from the mortal world could only reach the gate of the heaven by climbing up Buzhou Mountain, and now was the same.

Inside this tremendous colorful light beam, a flying mountain floated at every hundred miles height. Each mountain was guarded by a giant number of divine warriors. Layers of divine killing formations firmly surrounded the light beam. The space between the flying mountains glowed with splendid lights, as all kinds of powerful magic seals had been releasing strong energy waves, and the space was badly disturbed.

The Yao Mountain City had thoroughly connected with the heaven. In the city, countless warriors were ready for the war, as the city had turned into a giant fort.

Waves of fierce power attacked from all directions. When Ji Hao moved and expanded the Yao Mountain City, he built four broad roads that led straight to the four city gates in east, south, west, and north. Through the four roads, uncountable warriors in colorful armors were beating the drums, blowing the horns, and growing thunderously, while formidably marching towards Yao Mountain City.

The army came through the north road was under the commands of Pan Yu world nobles, headed by Yemo Tian. These Pan Yu world nobles commanded strong military forces, and some of their families had large numbers of colony worlds under their control. In this army, numberless colony world warriors in oddly shaped armors and straight lines had been approaching Yao Mountain City in a fearless way.

Coming slowly from the south was a human force commanded by Emperor Xun.

The troops from Gong Sun Family was the core of this force, while the troops from tens of super-scale human clans were the main strength. This force was also supported by a giant number of evil spirits, which were gathered by Chu Wu Clan people who had already turned into devils, from forests and jungles, and the smaller clans which were following Emperor Xun's lead.

This enormous force led by Emperor Xun was no weaker than the army of Pan Yu world nobles in scale. On the contrary, it was even greater, especially because of the group of warriors from Kua Fu Family and Longbo Country. Their tremendous body sizes had been giving a terrifying pressure. In comparison, the body sizes of Kua Fu Family people were acceptable. They were ten to hundreds of meters tall, giant indeed, but not too much. Longbo Country people were different. They were tens of miles tall, and the stronger ones among them were even about a hundred miles in height. They lined up on both sides of the army, with clouds drifting across their waists. They carried towering mountains and cast vast shadows on the ground; their steps were heavy, leaving deep footprints behind.

When Emperor Xun's army was still thousands of miles away from Yao Mountain City, the scouts from Yao Mountain had seen these enormous Longbo Country people.

Shrill sounds of horns echoed through the clouds. From the mountains surrounding Yao Mountain City, the Longbo Country people who followed Si Wen Ming loyally and devotedly stood up, pulled up the mountains, and carried them on their shoulders to prepare for the battle.

Through the west road and the east road, headed by Yu Meng, the colony world nobles and their troops had also been slowly approaching Yao Mountain City.

These colony world nobles were vast in number. The colony worlds under their control were as numerous as the sands of the Ganges. The weirdly looking warriors from all these colony worlds

gathered together formed a nightmare-like scene.

Yu Meng and his troop were in the eastern army as the spearhead. Before the east army was a giant black snake, which had three tails and one-hundred and eight heads. This snake came from an unknown colony world. It was nearly a hundred miles long, looking even eviler than the snakes and serpents and flood dragons that Gong Gong raised.

Standing on each snakehead was a dark-skinned, scaled, three-headed and six-armed colony world creature. No magic energy except a boiling blood power could be sensed from these creatures. Clearly, they were great fighters like Jia Clan warriors, and every single one of them was a killing machine.

Yu Hu was in the western army. The creature leading the western army was a hundred-miles-long millipede, which had tens of thousands of legs.

This crimson creature was squirming forward slowly as it carried countless grasshopper-like colony world warriors on its back. These warriors were no taller than three-feet, but had strong shells and a metallic luster on their skins. Small, exquisite weapons were held in their hands, emitting strong smells. These weapons were apparently poisonous.

Occasionally, some of these warriors would leap. With one leap, their small bodies could penetrate the air and cause a deafening air blast, then teleporting miles away. These small grasshopper-like warriors had a stunning leaping ability. On the battlefield, their great leaping ability would amaze their enemies and help them harvest their enemies' lives.

All kinds of colony world warriors had been screaming and shouting while moving towards Yao Mountain City from the four directions.

Outside the city, on an unobtrusive hill, Emperor Shun and the half-snake strong man stood side by side, quietly looking at the

noisy armies on the four broad roads.

"If we have a sore on our body, we need to let it occur first, then cut off the necrotic tissue." The half-snake man smiled mildly and said, "Now, the humankind has too many necrotic tissues that need to be cut and cleaned."

Chapter 1833: Supreme Dragon

In the Chaos, the boundless magnetic force field covered hundreds of millions of miles. Dragon Mother had been flying in this invisible magnetic force with all her strength. A huge amount of blood spurted out of the sword wound on her back, forming a series of golden-red beads and flowing in space while glowing with a dim light.

The magnetic force was like a giant vat filled with glue. The one trapped by the magnetic forcefield would feel like a bug in a vat of glue, tied up and finding it hard to move forward even with all its power. Not to mention the fact that the glue in the vat was boiling and weaving, flowing in constantly changing directions to add more difficulties to the movements of the sufferer.

Dragon Mother had the power to break the space, but the Pan Gu bell floated above the sword formation and firmed up the space, making it as strong as a bronze wall. Dragon Mother had tried her best but failed to break the space. Surely, she wasn't able to teleport herself forward anymore, and could only struggle through layers of magnetic force field with her great strength, trying to escape from this sword formation.

Nevertheless, this formation was made by Evil Yu Yu, and was based on the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag. The inner space of this sword formation was disordered, and the natural space power in here was even more complicated than hundred entangled wool balls. Dragon Mother was trying to move outward, but in fact, she was just shuttling in this sword formation like a headless fly.

After trying with full strength for about ten breaths, Dragon Mother stooped abruptly. The blood she shed was enough to fill up a pond already. She looked around, then found to her shock that Ji Hao was right in front of her, less than a hundred miles away.

In Pan Gu Motherland or the Chaos, the time span of ten breaths

was enough for Dragon Mother to cover a hundred million miles, but in this sword formation, she thought she was flying straight, but in fact, was just traveling in circles, without going anywhere.

"You!" The expression on Dragon Mother's face changed with disbelief. She finally realized that she could not easily escape from this sword formation.

Same as the dragons in Pan Gu world, Chaos dragons had incredibly strong bodies. But, because their bodies were strong, they never cultivated their souls and spirits, purely relying on their physical bodies and natural abilities.

Because they never cultivated their souls, they knew little about the great Dao of nature and the natural power system. They had no knowledge about the shift of Yin and Yang, and could not predict the future to avoid misfortune and alter the flow of fortune. Facing any danger, they would only use their physical strength.

Also because they never cultivated their souls, their spirit power was weak, and even their brains were undeveloped. In the words of ordinary human beings, they were silly. They knew nothing but violence, and never learned a bit about subjects like magic formations, treasure-forging, magic-medicine-concoction, talisman-making, and fortune-telling.

Dragon Mother stood in the sword formation with a dark face. Countless black and red scales flew out of her body and assembled into tens of thick shields, hovering swiftly around her and defending her against the sword lights that had been attacking from every direction.

The sword light dazzled and crushed the shields one after another. Uncountable fallen scales of Dragon Mother were stored inside her body while more and more scales flew out, forming new shields to shield her. Within a blink, over a thousand scale shields were broken by the sword lights. Suddenly, Dragon Mother burst into raging growls, "What kind of crappy formation is this? Do you

think that I know nothing about magic formations?"

"Huh?"

Ji Hao chuckled at her, "Don't you know a thing about magic formation? Ahyaya, in this case, you shall just stay here like those two!"

While slowly sweeping across Dragon Mother's body with his eyes, Ji Hao said with a very evil tone, "You made a couple with the dragon ancestor. You survived the dragon ancestor's strong body through day and night, and gave birth to so many dragon babies. You may not be stronger than the dragon ancestor, but I believe you're no weaker than him."

Chuckling again, Ji Hao nodded to Dragon Mother and continued, "The dragon-king shared an origin with the humankind. For the sake of dragons, if you leave your body to me and let me forge it into a set of top-grade divine weapon, I will release your soul...How about that?"

Dragon Mother's face turned even darker. She leaped up, pointing at Ji Hao as she cursed, "You wanna use my body as treasure-forging material?"

Ji Hao gave a faint smile and responded, "Why not? Dragon scales, dragon horns, dragon bones, dragon tendons, all are good treasure-forging materials. Your muscles, blood, liver, marrow, are all top-grade materials for magic pills...Dragon Mother, every part of your body is a treasure. I'm willing to release your soul, which is already an extra mercy."

Ji Hao grinned brightly, yet Dragon Mother's face darkened to an extreme point. While defending herself against the waves of sword power, she clenched her teeth and her eyeballs rolled quickly in the sockets, seeming to be planning something.

Ji Hao sneered and continued in a bland tone, "Of course, you can reject my offer. But if you do reject, you shall not blame me for

activating this sword formation fully and destroying you...You and your nine evil sons overturned the dragon-kind, colluded with our enemies, and tried to tear down the foundation of our humankind...By killing you, I would enforce justice on behalf of the heaven."

"Dragon Mother!" Priest Sadness screamed out loud, "Don't hesitate! If you have any other power or preparation, just use it! Use it all! Kill this kid, then you can have all the treasures! I won't take anything..."

Priest Sadness screamed shrilly. Ji Hao pointed a finger at him and sent thousands of sword lights towards his soul, making him howl in pain and be left him no energy to talk to Dragon Mother again.

On the other side, Bamboo Master shook his head and stayed silent. A green mist was spreading in his eyes while he looked around over and over again, trying to find a weakness in Ji Hao's sword formation. But, this sword formation was made by Yu Yu and was stabilized by a few top-grade supreme treasures. How could he ever find any weakness in it?

Dragon Mother's expression changed quickly. Abruptly, she roared towards the sky and sprayed a mouthful of blood to a long distance away.

Ji Hao's words and Priest Sadness's press stimulated Dragon Mother's evil nature as she growled madly. A blood-red light shone out of her forehead, and from the light, an oddly shaped enormous dragon roared out.

"Supreme Dragon, kill!" Dragon Mother screamed. This dragon that flew out of the blood-red light was tens of thousands of miles long, covered in red scales with black marks on the edges. The dragon violently wielded its enormous claws and launched a strike.

Along with a cracking noise rising, Ji Hao trembled slightly. In shock, he found this oddly shaped enormous dragon actually

created a small crack on the magnetic forcefield which had sealed off this area. Dragon Mother immediately dove into this crack and escaped from the sword formation within a blink.

The enormous but lifeless dragon flew up and attempted to escape through this crack. But, Evil Yu Yu suddenly showed up upon its head and stomped a foot against its head.

"Supreme dragon... Hah, it's the body of Dragon Mother's twin brother. She turned it into a treasure."

"Ji Hao, take out your nine dragons chariot. Let me upgrade it for you...We'll make the body of Dragon Mother's twin brother pull your chariot. See if she will be ashamed or not."

Chapter 1834: Guards

In the Chaos, the nine dragons chariot emitted a scorching red light and illuminated the area like a sun.

The tens of thousands of miles long supreme dragon floated above the chariot. Evil Yu Yu created thirty-six-thousand clones and carefully checked the supreme dragon's body inch by inch, unable to stop clicking his tongue with praise.

"Amazing, amazing! This was indeed the supreme dragon who inherited the Chaos destruction power. Look at its scales, the claws, the tusks... Every part of its body contains endless secrets of the Chaos, and every spell symbol on it represents the supreme Dao of killing. Wonderful, indescribably wonderful!"

Evil Yu Yu grinned delightfully, even squeezing his eyes into a pair of curved lines. He raised a golden-purple book, which emitted beams of light, and scanned across the supreme dragon. "These are natural marks of Chaos Dao of killing... Great, great, great... If I merge these into my Dao of sword, my power will rise by at least thirty percent!"

"Back in that year, the dragon ancestor got this supreme dragon body. I wanted to borrow it to study it carefully for like a few thousands of years, but the dragon ancestor was fond of Dragon Mother. He said that this was Dragon Mother's twin brother, and refused to lend it to me, no matter what I said."

"Sadly, I wasn't powerful back then. The dragon ancestor was ridiculously strong, but I was only at Po's level. I couldn't harm a scale of his even if I spread my sword formation."

"Hah, twin brother? Dragon Mother made her twin brother into a life-saving treasure? If the dragon ancestor knew about this, I wonder if he would have his soul explode in anger..." Clicking his tongue, Evil Yu Yu said, "Look, look at the dense marks of Dao of killing on its teeth. These teeth can even crush pre-world spirit

treasures, can't they?"

With a secret magic, Evil Yu Yu excitedly copied the Chaos Dao marks on the supreme dragon's body. Ji Hao saw countless marks gradually emerging on the purple-golden book, looking like dragon heads and phoenix tails. A warm mist had been rising from these marks. Each mark was complicated, sparkling with a golden light that seemed to contain an indescribably mysterious supreme Dao.

Ji Hao followed behind a clone of Evil Yu Yu and carefully listened to him explaining the secrets of these marks of Dao on the supreme dragon's body.

Chaos dragons were born in the Chaos, generated from the Chaos power of destruction, and were supremely fierce and powerful. Dragon Mother and her brother would have been able to trample over the Chaos without a rival if they didn't encounter a supernaturally powerful being like saint Pan Gu.

Every scale, tooth, claw, even tendon, muscle, and every drop of blood of theirs existed for killing and destruction. Their bodies were densely covered in marks of Dao from the Chaos, largely different from the marks of the Dao of killing in Pan Gu world.

Yu Yu was known as the fiercest fighter in Pan Gu world. If he thoroughly understood these Chaos marks of Dao on the supreme dragon's body, his Dao of killing would definitely step into a higher level. He could even improve and upgrade the Dao of killing of Pan Gu world. And, by making this marvelous achievement, he would be awarded by the great Dao of Pan Gu world with measureless natural rewards power.

Ji Hao followed behind this clone closely, listening to his explanation and introduction. He could understand no more than two percent of what Evil Yu Yu's clone said, but he memorized every word for his future study.

This body belonged to a Chaos dragon!

The sword formation made by Yu Yu himself, added with the Pan Gu bell and golden bridge, had sealed the surrounding space firmly, but this Chaos dragon created a small crack in this well-sealed place with its claw for Dragon Mother to escape!

If Ji Hao managed to learn something from it, his fighting capacity would absolutely soar.

Evil Yu Yu was busy, and Ji Hao listened to him carefully. On the other side, Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness were still sealed in the sword formation. They looked at Evil Yu Yu and their faces paled. They dared to offend Ji Hao because he was a kid and they didn't believe that he had the power to defeat them!

However, the moment Yu Yu showed up, they shut their mouths. After all, Yu Yu was the fiercest being back in the ancient time.

Then, something terrible crossed their minds. Evil Yu Yu showed up in here, while Tong Jiong had disappeared without a trace. Ji Hao suddenly had a sword formation, which clearly included all the secrets of the Tai-Yi magnetic force flag...Was Tong Jiong killed by Evil Yu Yu already?

Tong Jiong was more powerful than Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness. If even he was killed by Evil Yu Yu, killing Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness would be an effortless thing to Evil Yu Yu! They both worked so hard to reach their current levels, and neither of them wanted to die. Not to mention the fact that Bamboo Master had suffered some serious pain from Yu Yu. At the moment, he dared not to say a word, as he was so afraid that he might piss off this ferocious sword artist who never liked to consider facts and reasons.

Ji Hao followed the clone from the dragon head to the dragon tail, memorized everything he saw on the supreme dragon, then smiled and asked Evil Yu Yu, "Shifu, since you wanted this dragon body, after the dragon ancestor went missing, why didn't you..."

"Force Dragon Mother to give this dragon body to me?" Evil Yu

Yu slapped his own forehead, gave a long sigh, and responded, "I thought about that. I was going to Dragon Mother's ocean eye to ask her about this, but Yu Yu stopped me...He said that a cultivator should not bully a widow and her orphans...So stubborn!"

"Hah!" Ji Hao gave a dry laugh and didn't say a word.

Evil Yu Yu laughed as well, then carefully stroked the enormous body of this Chaos dragon. Then, he burst into a louder laughter, "Nine dragons chariot should be called the 'supreme dragon chariot' from now on. With this Chaos dragon to pull the chariot, why do you need the nine weaker fire dragons? Just feed them to this Chaos dragon to strengthen it, so the divine emperor's chariot can look even mightier."

Laughing again, Evil Yu Yu turned around slowly and nodded to Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness with a faint smile on his face as he said, "You two. It has been many years since I saw you the last time. But here, when I see you again, you are bullying my disciple...Do you think that my sword has dulled and can't kill people anymore?"

Priest Sadness and Bamboo Master' faces immediately turned paler. They looked at Yu Yu and mumbled haltingly, but couldn't say a word.

Days later, a three-thousand-meters-long Chaos dragon pulled a mountain-sized chariot towards Pan Gu Motherland. The dragon's entire body was burning with a raging fire while flashing across the starry void like a sun.

Mr. Crow sat on the chariot and proudly wielded a small whip to steer the chariot.

With sour faces, Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness stood by Mr. Crow's sides, guarding the stairs which led to the top of the chariot like a pair of door guards.

The guards of the East Emperor's chariot, this was the

arrangement that Evil Yu Yu made for the rest of their lives!

Chapter 1835: Evil Yu Yu's Warning

"Faster!"

In the starry void, Mr. Crow wielded his little whip and lashed heavily on the Chaos dragon's tail.

The incredibly strong Chaos dragon lunged forward and cracked the space, creating a black hole which was tens of meters in radius, then dove directly into it. In the next moment, the Chaos dragon again broke the space hundreds of thousands of miles away and darted out. Treading on fiery clouds, it flew forward like a bolt of thunder.

Tens of thousands of miles were covered by the Chaos dragon within a second. As the dragon lunged again, another black hole was left in the space.

Ji Hao quietly sat in the chariot, sensing the super fast speed of the Chaos dragon. Before the world was created, this Chaos dragon was a powerful creature who dared to fight Saint Pan Gu face to face. Its soul had perished, leaving an extraordinarily strong body. But, after merging into the nine dragons chariot, the moving speed of this Chaos dragon body was still so amazingly high.

The chaos dragon's flying speed was even three times higher than Ji Hao's flying speed with the golden bridge before he drank the spring in the living calabash!

"What a terrifying creature! Mr. Crow hasn't managed to thoroughly understand the marks of Dao on its body, so he can't trigger his power yet, but can only control it to fly with its physical strength. Yet, its speed is already so amazing." Murmured Ji Hao, "If we can activate all its power... Hah, hah, hah!"

Ji Hao then closed his eyes. Through his spirit power, he silently looked at the sphere of glistening spring inside his body.

A pure and great power had been flooding out of the spring,

quickly merging with Ji Hao's embryo of Dao. Ji Hao's power and cultivation had both been rising, and for which reason, his embryo of Dao turned more energetic and lively.

The mysterious man's estimation wasn't exactly right, because this spring didn't just give Ji Hao 'a huger amount of saint's power'. Instead, before he absorbed all of it, the power Ji Hao attained from this spring was already ten folds greater than what he gained from Priest Mu's tree heart.

According to Ji Hao's estimation, after absorbing this spring completely, he would attain an amount of saint power that was greater than the saint power contained in Priest Mu's tree heart by at least twelve folds. With such a great power and the pre-world magnetic life and death sword formation, Ji Hao would be strong enough to fight against ancient powerful beings like Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness face to face, and would have a large chance to destroy their physical bodies!

However, even though these ancient powerful being weren't saints, their souls had merged into the great Dao, and they had touched some secrets of being saints. Ji Hao would be able to destroy their bodies and hurt their souls, but currently, he still could not kill them!

But...

Ji Hao opened his eyes and two streams of golden light shone out of his eyes, scanning across the golden-purple page in his hands.

Three golden marks were imprinted on the page, looking like dragon heads and phoenix tails, with clouds of glowing warm mist rising from them. Those were three characters — 'Break', 'Dao', 'Kill'. This was a sword art, created by Evil Yu Yu for Ji Hao after he learned some of the Chaos dragon's power of destruction, in combination with his own sword spells.

'Chasing the great Dao through the space, pressing straight on the enemies souls, then killing the souls!'

According to Evil Yu Yu, by launching a perfect Beak-Dao-Kill strike, Ji Hao would have thirty percent chance of killing an ancient powerful being like Tong Jiong, Priest Sadness, and Bamboo Master.

The mysterious man silently showed up in Ji Hao's spiritual space. Through Ji Hao's eyes, he read the Beak-Dao-Kill sword art, then closed his eyes. Between his eyelids, thunderbolts-like blue lights were sizzling and flashing quickly. He gently raised his hands, as if holding a large axe, and silently launched a Beak-Dao-Kill strike in Ji Hao's spiritual space.

Ji Hao put down the golden-purple book and gently knocked the arm of his chair with his fingers.

Evil Yu Yu showed up suddenly and left also fast. After upgrading the East Emperor chariot for Ji Hao, he left in a hurry. Ji Hao seized the time and asked Evil Yu Yu quite a lot of questions, but upon getting the answers, he was puzzled even more.

Evil Yu Yu honestly told Ji Hao that the red-robed Yu Yu was Priest Yu Yu's 'kindness'. The red-robed Yu Yu and Evil Yu Yu were extremely opposite, and never liked each other.

The Priest Dachi and the Priest Qingwei that Ji Hao knew, who had been in the Chaos, killing Chaos monsters to protect Pan Gu word, were both the 'kindness' of Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei.

The real Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu were staying in a secret place, cultivating themselves severely. The natural reward power that their 'kindness embodiments' earned was for their cultivation.

As for why they needed so much natural reward power, Evil Yu Yu didn't explain. He just seriously told Ji Hao that the disaster that the humankind was facing now was only the prologue of a great calamity.

The true enemy of the humankind, or of all living beings in Pan

Gu world, hadn't even shown up yet.

The ten Pan Yu saints who had been confronting Priest Hua and Priest Mu in the peaceful world in the west, according to Evil Yu Yu, were just 'small potatoes', merely slightly more powerful than Priest Tong Jiong. They might have already stepped into the world of saints, but they were new to this level, and were far from being true saints.

If the two clones of Priest Mu and Priest Hua, who had been showing up and doing things in the mortal world, didn't find some bizarre thing to weaken themselves quite largely, the ten Pan Yu saints would have been suppressed by the ancient magic formation in the peaceful world long ago, even if they joined hands. The true enemies hadn't shown up yet. Those intractable powerful enemies would be a problem even for Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu.

The humankind had now been facing internal problems and powerful enemies at the same time. Evil Yu Yu seriously told Ji Hao that he must be careful about the three 'Pengs' disciples. The three 'Pengs' were never on the 'light side'. Now, they had shown up to worsen the situation, but not even Yu Yu knew what exactly they wanted.

After all, the three 'Pengs' were hiding inside Saint Pan Gu's body. Back when Saint Pan Gu was still alive, even he didn't feel their existence. The situation would remain controllable if these mysterious, powerful beings did not make a move. But once they did, something terrible would definitely happen.

Compared to the three 'Pengs', Original Devil was easier to deal with. He was also powerful and mysterious, but his goal was clear. He wanted to destroy the humankind, and kill every last human being to free himself. Therefore, as long as human beings remained alive, Original Devil wouldn't be infallible.

'Be careful of the three 'Pengs', of all changes that have happened

or are happening inside Yu Dynasty, of Priest Mu and Priest Hua, especially some of their disciples who have been secretly doing things.' These were all the warnings that Evil Yu Yu gave Ji Hao.

Ji Hao silently recalled Evil Yu Yu's expression changes to try to fathom every word he said. As he was sinking in his thought, the Chaos dragon had pulled the chariot to Pan Gu Motherland.

From a distance away, Ji Hao saw a colorful beam of light connecting Yao Mountain City and the heaven.

He also saw the four armies surrounding Yao Mountain City and fearlessly charging towards the City.

Chapter 1836: The Beginning of Slaughter

The siege, or more specifically, the group suicide had begun.

The Chaos dragon slowly pulled the chariot towards the enormous beam of light and floated in the sky, about a hundred miles higher than the ground. Ji Hao stood up and walked to the entryway on the edge of the chariot, hands clasped behind the back as he coldly watched the battle happening down below. To be precise, this was a slaughter.

Led by Yemo Tian, who was actually Yu Huo's clone, Pan Yu world nobles drove countless cannon fodders in the northern army to march to Yao Mountain City. From the west and the east, the colony world troops had also been approaching the city quickly.

No one knew what Emperor Xun said to the leaders and elders of some medium to small-scale clans, but these weak clans sent all their young adults to the frontline. These people mounted on all kinds of battle beasts and raised colorful battle flags. They roared fearlessly as they rushed to Yao Mountain City with high spirits.

Yao Mountain City was surrounded by numerous dangerous rivers and a vast ocean. Large groups of elite dragon warriors and uncountable water-kind warriors had arrayed in the ocean. They trod on the surging waves while roaring thunderously.

Numberless cannon fodder troops jumped into this vast ocean from the four broad roads.

Flying forts controlled by the non-humankind army flew across the sky, releasing blue lightning bolts. But, once these forts entered the ocean area, the no-fly formation in the air was triggered immediately. Under the effect of the formation, tens of ten-mile-square flying forts instantly lost their flight dynamics and fell into the water.

Blood-red waves rose. From the blood sea that Ji Hao put on the

outermost edge of the ocean area, numberless half-dragon warriors and blood-pool ghosts silently rushed out and raised the giant blood-red waves, drowning the tens of flying forts.

The tens of flying mountains which followed right behind the flying forts suffered even worse. Floating spell symbols allowed these mountains to fly, but suddenly, raging fires burst out. While venting flames and dark smokes, these flying mountains fell from the sky and melted in the rolling blood sea into small pieces. All warriors on the flying mountains were turned into blood.

The Pan Yu world noble army in the north experienced major setbacks, and so did the non-humankind forces in the west and east.

Commanded by colony world nobles, giant groups of colony world creatures showed no sign of fear when diving into the blood sea, which emitted a strong scent of blood. These enormously shaped colony world creatures roared rumblingly and tried their best to swim forward. Carrying countless colony world warriors on their backs, they moved forward swiftly in the blood sea.

They kept swimming forward and slowly moved away from the land.

Ten miles, a hundred miles, a thousand miles...Uncountable enormous colony world creatures floated on the blood sea as they used their bodies as ships to carry the giant colony world troops to Yao Mountain City.

When a certain number of colony world troops floated on the blood sea, sky-high blood waves rose from the east and west, and numberless half-dragon warriors and blood-pool ghosts marched out.

The highly corrosive blood-sea water corroded the bodies of these enormous colony world creatures within the span of a few breaths, turning all of them into sticky, dirty blood.

The colony world warriors fell into the blood sea, being swallowed before they could even let out a scream.

A faint blood-red mist drifted upon the blood sea, because the blood-power density of this area was too high. The blood-red mist grew thicker and thicker, and within the mist, a bronze gate which was embossed with the portraits of countless devils and ferocious ghosts opened silently. A dark vortex quietly emerged behind the gate.

The souls of the dead colony world creatures were drawn into the bronze gate while howling. Netherworld Priest couldn't help but take an action — These warriors' souls were the best raw materials for him to create all kinds of netherworld warriors!

The corpses of some colony warriors, who were drowned in the blood sea, flew into the bronze gate as well. Netherworld Priest quickly collected these corpses with his great power, after which, a sonorous series of laughter could be heard from the bronze gate. Clearly, Netherworld Priest was quite happy.

From the south, wooden boats and rafts were pushed into the water by human warriors. Large groups of human warriors walked onto the boats and shafts with their mounts, using their weapons as paddles as they moved to Yao Mountain City. In the air, flying battle beasts flew across the sky, darting towards Yao Mountain City like a gust of wind with countless human warriors carried on their back.

Same as what happened to the flying forts and mountains which belonged to the Pan Yu world noble army, the no-fly formation was triggered immediately. Countless flying beasts fell from the sky while screaming. No matter how hard they flapped their wings, they could no longer feel the rising force that they were so familiar with.

Feathers drifted all over the sky while the flying beasts fell into the water along with their owners.

The human warriors who fell from the sky smashed into the arrays of boats and rafts down below like meteorites. They crashed tens of thousands of boats and rafts, and made countless more human warriors fall into the water.

Uncountable blood-pool ghosts swam to these human warriors, dragged their legs, and quickly brought them down to the bottom of the water. As the sticky blood water poured into their mouths, ears and noses, these human warriors gave muffled moans and then fainted.

They just fainted, but did not die.

Ji Hao made this plan before he moved Yao Mountain City to here. The non-humankind warriors could be slaughtered, but these human warriors needed to be captured alive, as many of them as possible. Their leaders made mistakes, but they shouldn't suffer from it.

Shrimp and crab warriors were moving on the bottom of the water. They brought up rapidly flowing undercurrents while moving to the junction of the blood sea and regular ocean area.

The blood-pool ghosts dragged the fainted human warriors out of the blood sea and handed them to shrimp and crab warriors, who quickly brought them up to the surface of the water and sent them to Yao Mountain City.

On the south shore of the ocean area, after seeing a large number of human warriors being captured alive through a magic mirror, Emperor Xun, who was in 'over-all command', burst into raging growls. Following the screams of countless clan leaders, Emperor Xun pulled out a weapon and killed about ten medium and small clan leaders, who 'didn't do their best'.

Under Emperor Xun's order, the names of these medium and small clans were erased, and all their people and territories merged into Gong Sun Family.

Hearing Emperor Xun's roars, Shixin and his brothers carelessly drummed their own chests and walked to the frontline with giant steps.

Chapter 1837: Seeking Their Doom

Ji Hao returned to Yao Mountain City and stayed on the two-hundred and eleven thousand meters tall tower, which was located in the center of the city.

Shaosi, Man Man, Feng Xing, Yu Mu, Shermie, Yi Di, and other trusted friends of his had gathered up, and were helping him command the troops to deal with the enemies' armies, which had been streaming to the city like a tide.

Ao Bai, Donggong, Zhu Rong, and Ximu each guarded a city gate to control the Yao Mountain City troops to move and fight back.

Shixin and his brothers attacked from the south. Because of them, Ao Bai and Qiu Niu called their brothers to guard the south city gate together. At the moment, they were fighting an intense battle against Shixin and his brothers.

The battle lasted for days. Shixin and his brothers were stronger, but Ao Bai and his brothers were supported by the divine heaven and earth formation. Therefore, the battle nearly ended in a draw. For quite a few times, Shixin and his brothers went mad. They burned their spirit blood to launch life-risking strikes, but still failed to break through the defense of Ao Bai and his brothers. Over and over again, they injured themselves and shed blood.

As the leaders failed to win the battle, the troops under Shixin and his brothers' command surely suffered as well.

The human warriors under Emperor Xun's command had been captured alive and sent to Yao Mountain City, but Shixin and his brothers' water-kind warriors were slaughtered mercilessly.

Dragons were proud. In the eyes of Ao Bai and his brothers, the dragons and water-kind warriors who chose Dragon Mother and her nine boys over the true dragon-kind, which was descended from the dragon ancestor, should no longer live.

The divine heaven and earth formation and the blood sea released their powers together, and the enemy troops that entered this area were all wiped out. The screams and curses let out by numberless dragons before they died condensed into a thick black and red mist of grievance, drifting above the battleground. The bone-piercing winds blew and created a spooky atmosphere; black and red snowflakes even began falling from the mist of grievance.

While a cruel battle was happening in the south, Donggong and Ximu had been trying their best to win their battles near the east gate and west gate. They were already saints back in the ancient time. But later on, they suffered severe injuries and their souls were hurt, which caused them to fall from the level of saints. But, as ancient powerful beings, they could cast marvelous magic and had countless ancient treasures.

During the battle each day, Dong Gong and Ximu would take out a powerful treasure and hang it on the east and west city gates. These treasures harvested the lives of uncountable warriors from the colony world troops, which had been marching to Yao Mountain City, even before these colony world warriors clearly saw the treasures.

Because of Netherworld Priest's suggestion, Donggong and Ximu had been restraining their powers. Each one of those ant-like colony world warriors died, but their bodies weren't devastated, neither were their souls hurt too badly. Their bodies and souls were split up, and were immediately dragged into the Netherworld by Netherworld Priest to be stored properly.

In Ji Hao's eyes, Netherworld Priest might have made a certain offer to Donggong and Ximu and convinced them to kill for him. Therefore, as two ancient powerful beings, Donggong and Ximu seemed to be running a slaughterhouse now, while the endlessly arriving colony world warriors were like animals for slaughter. The colony world warriors were classified and slaughtered, then the 'customer' came to collect the 'goods'.

Unlike the south city gate battleground, which was covered in corpses and blood, the battlefields near the east and west city gates were perfectly clean. Except for the blood-red clouds which had been growing denser and denser in the sky, not even a single body could be found on these two battlegrounds.

Thanks to Donggong and Ximu's great powers, and more importantly, thanks to their all kinds of powerful treasures, the Yao Mountain City troops stationed in the west and east city gate areas didn't even shoot one arrow after engaging shortly on the first day of the war.

Seeing Donggong and Ximu staying in the gatehouses to taste wines and teas, even holding medium scale parties from time to time, for their ancient cultivator friends to gather and enjoy banquets, Ji Hao couldn't help but shake his head.

In the eyes of saints, all living beings were like ants!

Donggong and Ximu had once stepped into that mysterious saint world after all. They had fallen from that level already, but after ascending to the divine thrones, they seemed to have restored some of their true powers.

No matter how many colony world warriors attacked, how could they possibly threaten Donggong and Ximu? The colony world troops charged wave after wave, then collapsed in no time. These days, Ji Hao noticed that the sky above the east and west city gates were always covered in dark clouds, as strands of natural rewards powers had been descending from the sky and flowing into the clouds above Donggong and Ximu' heads.

In a few days, Donggong and Ximu had slaughtered numberless colony world warriors, and the powers they released had turned measureless and mystic. By now, Ji Hao already had no way of finding out how much power they had regained, and which level they were at. But, seeing Priest Sadness and Bamboo Master gazing at Donggong and Ximu with jealousy, Ji Hao could imagine that

Donggong and Ximu must have attained great benefits from this war.

Zhu Rong was responsible for guarding the north city gate. The enemy army that came from the north was led by Yu Huo's clone and a group of Pan Yu world nobles. Ji Hao was worried that Zhu Rong might not be able to stop them and end up suffering a loss, so he secretly sent Wuzhi Qi and a batch of ancient water-kind spirit creature to follow Zhu Rong's command, then ordered Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness to help.

As it was proven by facts, Ji Hao's preparation was unnecessary.

Led by Yu Huo's clone, as usual, the Pan Yu world nobles again sank into a power struggle. On this vast battleground, these 'adorable' Pan Yu world nobles once again began playing all kinds of tricks and schemes, planning all kinds of assassinations and making all kinds of private deals...

The commanding system of these Pan Yu world nobles was a mess, but every single day, they would send a giant number of troops to the front line. These disordered troops would even drag others down and plot against each other. They had high-quality armors and weapons, as well as powerful battle machines, but they were like a puddle of mud on the battleground. Within a quarter of an hour top, a hundred-thousand-man strong Pan Yu world troop was annihilated by Zhu Rong's army!

Each day, over a hundred Pan Yu world army troops would be sent to the battleground, but as the blood waves rose, the heaven and earth great formation pressed, and the water-kind army attacked under the leadership of dragon commanders, only ten to twenty of these Pan Yu world troops could return, mostly disabled.

The enemies had been suffering severe casualties, and this weird war carried on like this. The enemy troops attacked madly every day, and uncountable were slaughtered. As this war lasted for a month and half, the casualties suffered by the Pan Yu world force

even made Ji Hao's hair stand on the ends.

"They weren't here to fight. They were here to die!"

Zhu Rong was a little tired of killing. He came to the central tower, found Ji Hao, and yelled at him, "If their brains weren't damaged, there must be a scheme! Ji Hao, I've never seen such a suicidal war!"

The Pan Yu world nobles didn't even send one Senior-Magus-level commander, but had been sending uncountable warriors to the frontline to die every day.

A war like this wasn't normal!

Chapter 1838: Yu Meng Visits

The war...No, the slaughter continued.

Shixin and his brothers could be labeled as powerful beings, and had been keeping Ao Bai and his brothers busy. But except them, neither Emperor Xun nor Yu Huo's clone sent out even one powerful being to fight.

On the battlegrounds, the strongest ones among the enemies' commanders were merely at the level of Senior Magi, and the warriors under their commands were just like ordinary human beings. These warriors and commanders charged at Yao Mountain City day and night, dove into the blood sea, then disappeared without a trace.

For several days, Zhu Rong came to the tower to find Ji Hao and tell him that this war was not normal.

Donggong and Ximu had stopped taking any action. They once were saints after all, and they had slaughtered these ants-like enemies for over a month. By now, they couldn't bear to continue doing it.

It was not because that they were soft-hearted. Instead, they were just too ashamed to do it. Things would look better even if the enemies sent some Divine-Magus-level beings to fight. Donggong and Ximu could also slaughter countless Divine Magi within a blink, but that wouldn't make them feel as ashamed as they did now!

They butchered these defenseless ants like mowing the lawn; they could even kill a million of them with a single slap...If the others knew that they had been doing things like this, Donggong and Ximu would feel seriously ashamed!

The blood sea rolled, as more and more half-dragon warriors and blood-pool ghosts and other powerful Netherworld warriors

showed, hiding and killing the enemies. In the lines of defense that Ji Hao built, some warriors hadn't even shot one single arrow so far, and their blades hadn't been stained by any blood.

As Zhu Rong said, this war was not normal.

In Yao Mountain City, on top of the central tower, a round mirror which was embossed with nine dragons floated in the air, glowing and showing the battles that were happening around Yao Mountain City. Waves of troops dove into the blood sea, then countless warriors were swallowed by the blood sea while screaming and howling. But, more troops had been arriving.

In the past one and a half month, exactly how many lives had the blood sea swallowed?

No one counted, because no one was willing to count, or dared to. The Pan Yu world warriors and colony worlds warriors were all invaders who violently intruded into Pan Gu world. By killing them, one could earn natural rewards powers, which was apparently a good thing.

But...too many of them were slaughtered. Who could carelessly slaughter billions of lives without taking any mental stress? Only devils could.

Ao Bai and his brothers were still fighting Shixin and his brothers. Ji Hao, Zhu Rong, Donggong, Ximu, Qing Qiang, Shaosi, Man Man, Taisi, Feng Xing, Yu Mu, Ji Xia, Qing Fu, Yuan Li, Shermie, Yi Di, Bamboo Master, and Priest Sadness gathered on top of the central tower and watched this brutal war through the mirror with dark faces.

In the past one and half month, the casualties suffered by Ji Hao's army, including the Gold Crow force and the divine force was zero. But, an astonishingly great number of enemies had been killed and injured. No one counted their collapsed troops, neither did anyone count the lives that the blood sea had swallowed. But, judging merely by the dense blood-red cloud above the blood sea,

one would know that this was definitely a scarily large number.

"A war...This isn't how you fight a war!" As the dominator of Southern Wasteland, the Zhu Rong Family had fought against Gong Gong Family for countless years. Therefore, Zhu Rong had rich experiences of wars. "This isn't how you fight a war! This is wasting lives. This is wrong...Those non-humankind monsters didn't care about their warriors at all!" Said Zhu Rong.

No one responded. Everyone else felt that Zhu Rong was right, but seeing this situation which was so weird, no one could tell what exactly was hiding behind these enemies.

"Eh? Is it a big deal? We've been taking advantages anyway!" Man Man sat on an arm of Ji Hao's chair with her legs crossed while carelessly juggling with her hammers. Her pair of lotus hammers had shrunk to the size of fists, and were flying up and falling down along with streaks of fire, letting out rumbling sounds of wind and thunder.

"No matter what kind of trick they're playing, as long as the heaven and earth formation stays unbroken, nothing bad will happen!" Man Man was as simple-minded as usual, but she said the most reasonable words, "As for the mess of the humankind, let's just wait for Uncle Wen Ming to deal with it. Why should we feel so anxious?"

The others on top of the tower remained silent for a while. A while later, Donggong chuckled and said, "You're right, coping with shifting events by sticking to a fundamental principle, good, good, good...As Man Man said, as long as the heaven and earth formation stays unbroken, Yao Mountain City will be safe. As long as Yao Mountain City stays safe, any problem can be solved."

Currently, Yao Mountain City was the only entrance of the heaven. Therefore, if Yao Mountain City stayed safe, the heaven would also be safe, and the circulation of the natural fortune of Pan Gu world would not be affected. Naturally, the human beings, who

were chosen by the natural fortune, would stay unharmed.

As long as human beings stayed safe, the humankind would naturally develop and grow stronger. Once Si Wen Ming put wrongs to rights and stabilized the human society, capable human beings would begin emerging. With endless new emerging forces, why would human beings be afraid of non-humankind monsters?

Ji Hao and the others all came around to Man Man's point of view. While watching the hell-like battlegrounds through the mirror, they smiled in relief. Abruptly, Ji Hao laughed and said, "Whatever they're planning, these extraneous creatures can strengthen our world once they die here. Even if they're smashed, their bodies can still nourish the plants in our world...This is good!"

While people on top of the tower were talking. Mr. Crow wagged in. Glancing at the group of people, he yelled in a high-pitched voice, "Ji Hao, the bird-headed man came again. He said he brought their 'Divine King' and wants to see you. They came sneakily as if they didn't want the others to see them. I've already hidden them under this tower.

The people on top of the tower released their spirit powers to scan across the area under the tower. Among a group of palaces under the tower, Su stood behind Yu Meng with reverence in an average-looking hall.

The tall and muscular Yu Meng was sitting in a large armchair, holding an amber teacup. With surprise, he had been gently sniffing the steam rising from the teacup.

Mr. Crow treated him with the divine tea which was produced from the Jade Pool in the heaven. Even in Pan Gu world, this tea was a precious treasure. Yu Meng and his family conquered a hundred desert worlds, but when did he ever have a chance to taste a top-grade tea like this?

Abruptly, Yu Meng raised his head and burst into laughter, as he

had already sensed tens of strands of spirit powers coming at him.

"Emperor Ji Hao, sorry for coming without an invitation. This is impolite...But, things aren't right!"

Chapter 1839: Yu Meng's Suggestion

On top of the central tower, Yu Meng stood calmly in front of Ji Hao and the others.

Ji Hao and his friends looked at the exotically-dressed Yu Meng from head to toe, while Yu Meng was also curiously measuring them with his eyes.

The one who had been emitting a scorching hotness, standing on top of the tower like a sun, was Ji Hao. But, behind this 'sun', endless secrets seemed to exist, like a black hole which devoured people.

The one who was like a raging fire and shining eye-dazzlingly, seeming to even burn the through the space, was Zhu Rong.

The ones who were like two drops of molten silver floating in a measurelessly deep sea, reflecting the magical scenes in the sea with their smooth surfaces, were Donggong and Ximu.

The ones who were like two shreds of shadows sinking in the space were Shaosi and Taisi. Through their bodies, one could even see the tracks of time, and read the stories which happened in the ancient Pan Gu world. They could make anyone feel nervous and threatened.

All kinds of powerful beings...The group of people on top of the tower weren't as powerful as Yu Meng, but...

'Wait...' Yu Meng's eyes swept across Man Man, who looked adorable and was fiddling with her pair of hammers while staring at Yu Meng from up to down with narrowed eyes, and quickly landed on the bodies of Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness, who stood behind Ji Hao.

Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness raised their chins slightly and looked at Yu Meng through the corners of their eyes with curiosity, scorn, and coldness, their hands clasped behind their backs. If

Priest Sadness didn't carelessly show a trace of hostility, Yu Meng would even ignore these two powerful ones, whose soul had merged into the great Dao.

Yu Meng threw a very complicated glance at Priest Sadness and Bamboo Master, then instantly tightened his nerves. How could he ignore these two? They were definitely more powerful than Yu Meng.

With the altar's help, Yu Meng had become a saint, but the great Dao he merged with was from the hundred desert worlds that he and his families conquered. Yu Meng clearly understood that the great Dao from the hundred desert world could not be compared with the great Dao of Pan Gu world. In terms of quality, one single part of the Pan Gu great Dao could be times powerful than the entire great Dao of the strongest desert world among the hundred.

The powers of Priest Sadness and Bamboo Master were measureless. Yu Meng felt that they were still half-step away from the world of saints, but this didn't make them weaker than Yu Meng...Their powers might even be more powerful than Yu Meng could imagine.

'The power-holders in the Pan Gu heaven are indeed all extraordinary.' Yu Meng sighed in his head. Afterward, he politely bowed to Ji Hao and said, "I am very sorry for coming without an invitation. But as I said earlier, things aren't right these days."

While talking, Yu Meng took out a black gemstone bead and pointed a finger at it. A black beam of light rose from the bead and hit the ceiling, then spread quickly into an enormous screen.

On the screen, countless light beams twisted and wove into moving images, showing a series of extremely luxurious military camps. A group of well-dressed Pan Yu world nobles had been stealthy walking among the camps with heads held high and indescribably evil smiles on their faces. They crept like mice on their way to steal oil.

"These days, these Pan Yu world parasites have been showing no sign of attacking." Said Yu Meng with a deep voice, "According to our scouts, they are scrambling for power and wealth, as they did in Liang Zhu City. They're fighting each other restlessly for some unreal things. Within a month, nearly a hundred high-grade Pan Yu world nobles were killed."

The images on the screen changed and showed the inner space of a camp.

On a bed with a silk sheet, Yemo Tian lazily lied in a few young girls' arms. Hundreds of luxuriously dressed girls stood around the bed while Yemo Tian was breathing in a weird way.

Along with every inhalation, his stomach would swell like a ball, and after every exhalation, his blood, muscles, and flesh would wither suddenly, making him look like a skeleton wrapped in skin. During each breath, black light spots sparkled on his body and countless evil marks emerged from his skin, merging into his body.

Merely through this image, Ji Hao and the others felt that Yemo Tian's power had been rising at an abnormal speed.

Beside Yemo Tian's bed, the nine-meters-tall Master Spirit-slaughter sat on a thick piece of fur with his legs crossed and hands resting on knees, holding a golden staff. A dim, colorful light had been shining around his body.

The colorful light floated behind Master Spirit-slaughter's body, sparkling at exactly the same frequency as Yemo Tian's breath. Under the dim colorful light, Master Spirit-slaughter's face looked blurry and transparent. Countless twisted and hazy figures had been struggling inside his body. Then, these figures faded and slowly merged into the colorful light.

Obviously, Master Spirit-Slaughter's power had also been rising even more rapidly than Yemo Tian.

"Days ago, this man showed up around Yemo Tian. According to

our scouts, he seemed to have been serving as an intermediary between Yemo Tian and Emperor Xun, as he was often found in the camps of both sides."

"Are you saying that they are sending their warriors to die on purpose?" Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and asked.

"They have many reasons to do so." Said Yu Meng blandly, "I can now list ten. For example, Yemo Tian's family, the Yemo Family from Yu Dynasty in Pan Gu world, is also a colony world noble family. Therefore, he has a very strong motive to weaken those Pan Yu world parasites. ...Another example, if Yemo Tian has also made an agreement with another force as I have, he would have a reason to consume the Pan Yu word parasites' strength too...And..."

"And they can also be taking this opportunity to raise their cultivations, or even for other unknown purposes, right?" Said Qing Qiang coldly.

"Beautiful lady, your wisdom is as amazing as your beauty." Yu Meng politely made a compliment to Qing Qiang and said, "I suggest, we need to launch a tentative offensive on these Pan Yu world parasites!"

"Dear Emperor Ji Hao, this is also a part of our agreement." Yu Meng continued with a deep voice, "Destroy those parasites and protect our mutual interests!"

Chapter 1840: Tentative Attack

A tentative attack?

Easy!

The day after Yu Meng visited, the sun slowly rose from the horizon at dawn. But at this moment, ninety-nine percent of Pan Gu Motherland, which was showering under the sunshine, again sank into darkness.

Under the command of a tremendous, imperatorial, and undoubtable power, all of the sunlight that shone upon Pan Gu Motherland suddenly gathered together and loomed on the Pan Yu world nobles' military camp.

The morning sunlight was soft, even slightly cool. But all of a sudden, it became a dazzling beam of light like a scorching sharp golden sword, penetrated the starry void, and descended mercilessly and fiercely.

High up in the air, countless Gold Crows flapped their enormous wings and cawed shrilly. They were millions of miles away from the Pan Yu world nobles' camp. This was a safe distance, because not even a Divine Magus could attack his or her targets through such a long distance.

However, being supported by a certain type of great Dao, an eye-piercing fire burst from these Gold Crows' wings. As they cawed brightly and flapped their wings, uncountable golden feathers dove down swiftly from the sky while burning ragingly. They left beams of fiery light in the air and caused a wave of shrill swishing noise.

The golden feathers fell all over the sky and tore apart the space, leaving thin and perfectly straight tracks. After the feathers flashed across, the golden tracks were still burning, emitting a great heat without fading.

Surrounded by waves of burning golden feathers, a million-miles-wide golden light beam descended on the Pan Yu world nobles' camp in an overwhelming way.

Nearly a hundred cities of calamity, over ten-thousand flying forts, and about a hundred thousand flying mountains disintegrated in the golden light. The cities of great calamity melted quickly; the especially strong alloys turned into scorching hot molten metal within the span of one breath like candles in a raging fire.

Nearly a hundred cities of calamity melted simultaneously. The glowing red molten metal fell from the sky like pouring rain and splashed on the camp along with the sounds of burning fires.

The material and formations that the flying forts were built with were not as good as the ones in the cities of great calamity. All the flying forts and flying mountains in the cramp were vaporized almost at the same moment. In a moment, the volumes of the flying forts and mountains expanded by tens of thousands of folds, and the disastrous explosions immediately tore all non-humankind warriors in the flying forts and mountains apart.

Through the molten metal, the golden light penetrated the exploding flying forts and mountains and struck straight into the camp. Even before a scream could be let out, the tremendous military camp which accommodated hundreds of millions of Pan Yu world warriors and colony world troops nearly vanished. Except for the central area where the top-grade nobles lived, ninety-nine percent of this camp was gone within a moment.

Tents, armaments, giant battle machines, puppets, all kinds of mountains and battle beasts, hill-sized piles of supplies, and uncountable warriors... These warriors were doomed when Ji Hao commanded the sun to lay its light and heat upon this camp with the power of East Emperor.

Everything was gone, turned into nothingness.

The bodies of countless warriors who just walked out of their tents to prepare breakfast suddenly vanished, but their dark silhouettes were left on the grounds.

In this vast camp area, the tops of numberless divine towers shone with a blinding light simultaneously. The erect eyes upon the towers were partially hidden and partially visible, while these defensive divine towers were about to activate a shield.

However, the golden light came too fast and was too powerful. A great number of divine towers were built in this camp, but they were slightly slow to react. These divine towers were only about one in ten-thousand of a second slower than the golden light, but because of this extremely short span of time, they all vanished in the golden light without managing to activate any shield or defensive formation.

The golden light halted briefly, and immediately turn the ground of this camp into a golden red color. The sands, soil, rocks... for about three-hundred-meters of depth, the earth was melted by the sunlight, then solidified.

The golden light beam which covered a million miles radius began concentrating rapidly, leaving the emptied area and gathering above the hundred-miles-squared central area of the camp. The burning golden feathers also fell on this area along with deafening swishing noises.

Nearly a thousand divine towers vented dazzling light beams. Countless complicated spell symbols emerged around the erect eyes above each divine tower. The fully activated divine towers quaked intensely, while the magic crystals loaded in the towers burned scarily fast. Within a blink, hill-sized piles of crystal were gone.

Yu clan nobles always valued their lives very much, not to mention the fact that the ones stationed in the center of this camp were the nobles from the top-grade Pan Yu world families. The

divine towers in this area even had grown spirits. These towers couldn't move freely like living beings, but they were as smart as ordinary human beings. Therefore, when the golden light descended, these smart towers immediately activated themselves even before the guards in this area realized what was happening.

Nearly a thousand divine towers combined their powers and created a ten-miles-thick shield that covered the central camp area.

Three hazy suns and nine blurry moons were faintly visible on the shield. The powers that came from twelve evil types of great Dao flew in the shield, making it stronger and tougher.

Explosive sounds could be heard without an end while the golden crow feathers fell and exploded against the shield. Those Gold Crow warriors were just averagely powerful, but being supported by the power of sun and the great Dao of sun, the explosion caused by each golden feather was no weaker than a full-power blow launched by a new Divine Magus.

Over a million golden feathers fell on the shield in a moment and shattered it, sending the glass-like light flakes flying to hundreds of miles away. The golden sunlight drilled down, and following a deafening noise, a miles-wide hole was left on the shield.

The tent of Yu Huo's clone and Master Spirit-Slaughter was located right below this hole.

The splendid golden light landed, and a shrill scream filled with hatred echoed through the clouds, while a heavy golden staff broke out of the tent and transformed into a tens of miles long golden dragon to shield the tent against the golden light.

Clouds of nicely scented mist spread from the dragon's body and countless golden flowers bloomed in the mist. The dragon raised its forepaws and tremblingly held off the golden light.

Chapter 1841: Seal the Camp

On the earth, a million miles wide, round, glowing red area was looking especially bright.

This piece of land was melted by the sunlight, then turned golden-red after solidifying. In the air, the colorful shield above the hundred-miles-wide central area shattered rumblingly and caused beams of colorful light to spread.

The divine towers buzzed deafeningly and shone eye-dazzlingly while collapsing one after another. The shield was violently destroyed, and the counterforce directly broke the magic formations inside the towers. Even with spirits, these towers weren't able to restrain the blustering power.

Nearly a thousand high-grade divine towers exploded simultaneously and tore apart the luxurious tents down below. The pieces were sent far away by the wind, along with the body parts of countless maids, servants, and guards.

The nobles from top-grade Pan Yu world families burst into screams, growls, and raging curses, while running desperately out of the exploding tents under the protection of powerful treasures. As the members of top-grade Pan Yu world families, any defensive talisman owned by these nobles was one of the best. Therefore, the explosions of divine towers could not cause them any harm.

Tens of thousands of high-grade nobles rushed out of their tents and looked around. The vast military camp was gone, and the whole area was flattened. The golden-red ground was as smooth as the surface of a mirror, glowing faintly. On this broad flat area, not even a ghost could be found.

"Where are all the people? Where's my army? Where're those bloody slaves? They...How dare they run?" The most foppish and useless ones among these nobles yelled angrily, even leaping up from the ground while cursing.

With fear, some relatively capable ones immediately raised their heads and looked at the hundred-miles-thick beam of sunlight which had been giving out inexhaustible light and heat above their heads.

"Enemy attack! Enemy attack! Enemy attack!" A peak-Divine-Magus-level Yu Clan young man screamed hoarsely. He slapped his own head and released an umbrella from his erect eye. The umbrella was entirely crimson, inlaid with countless erect-eye-shaped pearls.

The crimson umbrella transformed into a thousand-miles-wide, red-colored cloud, and rose straight into the sky. Within the cloud, countless red erect eye emitted eye-dazzling beams of red light with a strong killing power against the golden sunlight.

The golden dragon which had been struggling against the sunlight instantly sighed in relief. The umbrella was not bad, as it managed to share a large part of the pressure with the dragon. The red light and the scented mist mixed together. The golden dragon raised its head and gave a thunderous roar.

Master Spirit-slaughter flew out of the tent, treading on a colorful cloud and floating in the air. "What're you waiting for? Take out all your treasures, all your treasures! You're gonna die! What're you waiting for?!"

Speaking the words 'all your treasures', a light of greed flashed across Master Spirit-slaughter's eyes while the fire of extreme greed burned in the depth of his eyes. When he looked at these 'immature' Pan Yu world nobles, all he saw was a group of chubby little sheep!

A series of supreme treasures rose into the sky, sparkling brightly. These Pan Yu world nobles were carefully selected, after all, that even though some of them were a little foppish and useless, most of them were capable.

The treasures they had were surely spirit treasures and supreme

treasures with considerable qualities. Although they were not the top-grade ones, they were still fairly good.

Thousands of supreme treasures and spirit treasures rose into the sky and raised clouds and glow. The colorful lights and clouds merged into one under the control of the golden dragon and firmly blocked the descending golden sunlight.

Hundreds of millions of burning golden feathers fell from the sky and exploded against the clouds, causing thunderous noises. The clouds were rippled and shattered, but no matter how intense the explosions were, the thousands of supreme treasures and spirit treasures managed to shield the area down below.

With 'satisfaction', Master Spirit-slaughter looked at the flattened camp. Abruptly, he raised his head and laughed out loud, "What else can you do? Just do all you can! What else can you possibly do except launching shameless sneak attacks?"

The group of Pan Yu world nobles finally realized what had just happened Did they suffer a surprise attack? Was their camp destroyed in a surprise attack? Didn't their troops run? Were they destroyed by an enemy attack?

Great goodness...Which b*stard had such a power? And who could be so shameless?

It was such a disastrous power, that he or she must be a 'Yu' level powerful being, right? Why would such a powerful being kill those ants-like warriors? Was that fun? Did that make sense? Wasn't this powerful feeling ashamed?

In the air, Ji Hao quietly sat on the East Emperor chariot, coldly looking at Master Spirit-slaughter who challenged him.

While slowly scanning across the hundred-mile-square central camp area, Ji Hao said blandly, "There's no enemy worth fighting! A bunch of scums! Hmm, didn't the nobles in Pan Yu world send any powerful helpers?"

Both Ji Hao's cultivation and power had been rising seriously fast. Therefore, he had already stopped taking these Pan Yu world nobles seriously. At the moment, in Ji Hao's eyes, the tens of thousands of high-grade Pan Yu world nobles were all like ants, and he could crush them all within a blink of an eye.

Even though they had combined the powers of thousands of spirit treasures and supreme treasures to defend themselves, Ji Hao still remained confident. As long as he fully activated the power of the sun and the powers of the surrounding natural stars, he would definitely be able to break this defense and flatten the entire camp.

Yu Meng stood by his side as he pondered for a while with a frown and then said coldly, "Kill some of them first and let the others live for now. Then we'll wait and see. What do you say?"

Ji Hao nodded. After a short silence, he smiled and responded, "Good, leave some of them alive, then wait and see."

"If no reinforcements arrive from Pan Yu world, they shall not blame me for having no mercy..." He glanced at Liang Zhu City and continued.

A tremor went through Yu Meng's body while he swiftly glimpsed at Ji Hao, 'You can have no mercy, but not on us! We're allies, allies! More importantly, I'm working with a mysterious human force!' Yu Meng thought.

If Human Eighteen didn't suggest it, Yu Meng would never visit Ji Hao!

A clear stream of mist rose from Ji Hao's head. The blueprint of the pre-world magnetic life and death sword formation glowed with a black and white light, then spread and quietly covered the whole area with a radius of three-thousand miles, looming on the central camp area down below.

Chapter 1842: Emperor Xun's Awareness

When the morning sunlight turned into a destructive golden light beam and descended from the sky, Emperor Xun was having fun.

In a completely messy and disordered large camp, a palace which was carried to this place by Longbo Country people towered on the ground. On a tall, colorful jade stage, Emperor Xun was laughing and running about, wearing nothing but three peacock feathers to cover his nipples and crotch area. He didn't look like a human emperor at all.

A giant wine pot was carried in his left hand. After making a few steps, he would pour some wine into his mouth. He staggered on the stage while laughing with a weird voice and reaching his right hand to the maids, who had been chuckling and running before him.

The sun rose up and illuminated Pan Gu Motherland with a warm red light. But all of a sudden, the red light faded and the sky sank into darkness again. Stars sparkled in the sky and divine rivers flowed, while a tremendous sense of danger pressed down from the highest sky.

Emperor Xun was badly startled. He immediately turned around and gazed at the north.

A few Gong Sun Family master Magi hurriedly rushed up to Emperor Xun. One of them pointed a finger at Emperor Xun and let out a ten-thousand-year turtle shell. The turtle shell glistened and showed the grievous slaughter which was happening in the Pan Yu world nobles' camp.

Through the turtle shell, they saw a dazzling golden light fall from the sky, turning the vast camp into ash. Countless non-humankind warriors were turned into nothingness by the golden light even before they could let out a scream. Afterward, the

golden light shrank quickly and concentrated on the central camp area.

Numerous divine towers exploded one after another. Master Spirit-slaughter threw out his staff, which transformed into a golden dragon to struggle against the golden light. While crying shrilly, numberless Pan Yu world nobles activated their best treasures to help the golden dragon defending against the destructive golden light.

"Ahya, this is...so miserable, sad, and beautiful..." Emperor Xun quivered with excitement. Carrying the wine pot, he laughed out loud, "So many people died at one time? Ahyaya, good, good... Come on, drink, drink!"

Emperor Xun grinned and narrowed his eyes while saying, "Yemo Tian's a b*stard. Last time, he actually dared to take the lovely girl that I liked. Hehe, it'll be best if he's burned into ashes. If even his soul is destroyed, I'd be really glad!"

The allies could die as long as he lived. Emperor Xun happily invited the group of master Magi around him and his trusted followers to drink.

But, the people by his sides weren't as brainless as he was. From Gong Sun Family elders to the leaders of the other clans, the faces of everyone who saw the golden light beam through the turtle shell had paled. Some of them even had cold sweat oozing out of their skins.

These Pan Yu world nobles had so many powerful defensive divine towers in their camp, but under this golden light, all the towers were gone instantly. Emperor Xun's army was powerless, that this large military camp wasn't even covered by defensive formations.

If this golden light weren't targeted at the Pan Yu world nobles' camp but at Emperor Xun's army instead...

"Emperor Xun, Emperor Xun..." A few Gong Sun Family elders came to Emperor Xun in a haste, then forcibly took away the wine pot from his hand. With ghastly faces, they grabbed his arms and yelled, "It's Ji Hao striking a vicious blow...He's a divine emperor, and he actually used the power of the sun to kill!"

"He is insane, insane! So many lives..." Screamed a Gong Sun Family elder, "A million-miles wide camp, hundreds of millions of lives... They all were...killed by him...with one strike..."

At this moment, tens of cracks suddenly appeared on the turtle shell. A sharp strand of sword power roared out of the turtle shell and circled around the Gong Sun Family Master Magus who had been casting a magic on the shell. Following a heart-tearing howl, this master Magus was cut into two. As a black killing power sparkled on his wounds, the body of this Magus became a strand of black dust, dissipating in the air.

A Gong Sun Family elder burst into a loud shout, then cast a spell and clenched his fingers towards the drifting black dust, yet failed to grasp anything. The dead Magus's soul vanished along with his body, dying without leaving a trace.

"This is..." Another Gong Sun Family Master Magus refused to believe this result. In front of everyone else, he took out a dark piece of bone, bit broken his tongue, and sprayed a mouthful of blood onto it, trying to cast another magic to look into the Pan Yu world nobles' camp in the north.

A traceless pre-world magnetic force came through the space. Following a series of cracking noise, the dark bone was torn into pieces by a dreadful power.

Pop!

This Master Magus's body was twisted into a scary shape, then the killing power attacked. Same as the last master Magus, both his body and soul died instantly.

Ji Hao had spread the pre-world magnetic life and death sword formation and sealed off the entire camp. This sword formation was measurelessly dangerous, and also contained a pre-world spirit that allowed it to deliver endless possibilities. Whoever tried to peak into the sword formation would immediately suffer a counterforce from it, unless this peeper used a pre-world supreme treasure.

After losing two peak-Divine-Magus-level, experienced and highly powerful Gong Sun Family Master Magi in a row, the drunken Emperor Xun finally woke up with a start. He was soaked in cold sweat. While wiping his forehead, he clenched his teeth, then sneered and said, "Hah, that Yemo Tian is so weak...He actually let Ji Hao destroy his army...But..."

Emperor Xun suddenly chuckled and continued carelessly, "I know Ji Hao. He's like Si Wen Ming. He can take such a brutal action against the non-humankind, but he'll never do the same to us."

Proudly raising his head and clasping his hands behind his back, Emperor Xun puffed out his chest, grinned coldly to the north, and said, "I am the true human emperor. Ji Hao is a divine emperor, and a human being. Does he dare to even touch a hair of mine?"

A gust of wind blew off the peacock feather which was stuck on Emperor Xun's chest with his own saliva.

While giggling, Emperor Xun reached out his hands, took the wine pot back from an elder, then carelessly waved his hand and said lazily, "What are you waiting for? Sing, dance, drink! Bring us some grilled meat, let's eat...Go select a troop of strong warriors to dance the battle dance for us. They'll liven things up!"

Emperor Xun laughed and took a few gulps of wine, then raised his head and said happily, "The fun of being the human emperor is drinking and eating and partying every single day, having as much fun as we like...Some other people will deal with the war, and I can

simply say 'yes' or 'no'."

Breathing deeply, Emperor Xun looked at the north and continued confidently, "When they all shed blood and get hurt, hah!"

Following Emperor Xun's thought, the group of Gong Sun Family elders pondered for a while, then all laughed aloud!

When the 'die-hard human force' headed by Ji Hao and the non-humankind sank into an internecine bloodletting, Emperor Xun would naturally rise to harvest the fruits of victory. How marvelous would that be?

Till then, anyone against the interests of Gong Sun Family would die!

Till then, the Gong Sun Family would rule Pan Gu world forever!

Chapter 1843: Dragon Mother Comes Back

Waves rolled in the blood sea as numberless half-dragon warriors trod on the blood waves while wielding their weapons and roaring.

These deathless puppets were made by Netherworld Priests with the dragon bloodline and human bodies. Their bodies were muscular and their faces looked ferocious. Their entire body had been releasing a killing power. While roaring, they had been absorbing the thick, blood-red clouds in the sky, and their powers were rising.

Under the blood waves, countless blood-pool ghosts were swimming as nimbly as fishes while greedily devouring the sticky blood.

Every single day, a giant number of non-humankind warriors would come to die, and their blood would merge into this blood sea. Every single drop of their blood contained a slight trace of the great Dao from their own worlds. After absorbing their blood, the bodies of these blood-pool ghosts turned more and more blurry, while their powers were harder and harder to sense, and their moving speeds grew higher and higher.

If one compared the speed of these blood-red ghosts to the number 'one', before this war started, after two months of slaughtering and absorbing the spirit blood of uncountable non-humankind warriors, their speed had reached 'ten' already!

From these half-dragon warriors and blood-pool ghosts, one could clearly feel Netherworld Priest's power. His warriors had no fear of death, and the longer they fought, the stronger they would become.

Above the blood sea and within the dense blood-red clouds, which was condensed from the blood power of uncountable lives, Shixin, Ao Bai, and their brothers had still been fighting madly against each other. In the blood-red clouds, the eighteen sons of

the dragon ancestor had shifted back into their original shapes. They attacked each other with their sharp teeth and claws. Occasionally, a wave of thunderbolts would fall like raindrops. They had also been letting out all kinds of magic treasures to attack each other from time to time, quaking both the sky and the earth.

Ao Bai and his brothers were apparently weaker than Shixin and his brothers, but upon being supported by the heaven and earth formation, their strength and defensive powers were both raised, which pushed them up to the level of Shixin and his brothers. More importantly, the dragon-kind was wealthy. Ao Bai and his brothers had the best supreme treasures and spirit treasures that the dragon-kind had ever found. Shixin and his brothers convinced most of the dragons to follow them, and also smoothly took over the treasuries of the entire dragon-kind, but the treasures they brought were a grade lower than the ones Ao Bai and his brothers'.

All kinds of treasures flew all over the sky, shining eye-dazzlingly. Eighteen enormous dragons entangled with each other while roaring and cursing. The broken scales and horns, boiling dragon blood, and even pieces of dragon muscles had been falling from the sky like raindrops. In the blood sea, the half-dragon warriors and blood-pool ghosts chased every slightest drop of dragon blood and the tiniest pieces of dragon muscle.

Some lucky ones attained larger pieces of dragon muscles. They immediately swallowed the muscle pieces, and their powers began growing. Some of them were even going beyond the level of Divine Magi, showing a sign of reaching the supreme level.

Suddenly, a thunderous roar could be heard. A water-tank-sized bead which dazzled with thunderbolts flew out of Ao Bai's hand and hit right on Shisui's forehead, smashing his tens of sharp horns and even denting his skull. While vomiting blood, he fell from the sky.

Shisui fell into the blood sea and raised enormous waves.

Numberless half-dragon warriors rushed up fearlessly. They screamed and climbed onto Shisui's body with madness and greediness, drilling into his body through his wounds. Shisui was wrapped in the dazzling lightning bolts, unable to move.

The half-dragon warriors tore him, scratched him, and cut him with all kinds of weapons like butchers cutting pork ribs. They ought each other for his blood and flesh. The hundreds of miles long Shisui howled in pain while sticky blood gushed out of his body ceaselessly.

Countless blood-pool ghosts gathered as well. They transformed into a dense dark cloud and surrounded Shisui. They devoured all the blood that Shisui shed, without wasting even a single drop. That was the blood of a pure dragon, which contained the purest, noblest dragon bloodline that was descended from the dragon ancestor.

The blood-pool ghosts transformed their bodies into long needles and pierced deeply into Shisui's wounds to suck his blood like greedy leeches. As tens of millions of black long needles pierced into Shisui's body, he would lose a giant amount of blood every second.

Shisui snarled in pain. But, the bead that Bixi used for attacking him was greatly powerful, that after suffering a strike from it, his strong body didn't manage to recover in a long while. He was paralyzed, and couldn't even move a finger. He could only watch countless weak and fragile 'ants' eat his body and drink his blood.

Shixin gave a raging growl, then took out three-thousand and six-hundred needles, prepared to send the needles down to kill those half-dragon warriors and blood-pool ghosts. But, he paid all his attention on saving Shisui, and showed his great weakness while taking out this set of needles. Sideway, a green frosty light flashed across, then a beautiful sword tore apart the space.

Qing Qiang showed her real face. A breathtakingly beautiful,

enormous green bird held a sword in her beak, which was shining with a cold light. She arrived next to Shixin in a moment and gave him this strike. A giant wound was left on Shixin's body, starting from his chest and ending in his left hip. The bone-deep wound nearly split Shixin's body into two.

"Little phoenix b*tch!" Shixin turned around and yelled at Qing Qiang.

Ao Bai was fighting a battle against Shixin. He seized this opportunity, swung his arm, and threw out an especially heavy purple-golden pestle, along with a deafening buzzing noise. The pestle transformed into a hundred-meter-thick thunderbolt and struck on Shixin's chest.

The nine-feet-long, golden-purple pestle struck onto Shixin's chest and shattered the scales while generating a thunderous boom. Shixin burst into shrieks while clouds of dense smoke puffed out of his mouth, ears, eyes, and nose.

"Kill!" A sharp light flashed across Ao Bai's eyes while he lunged his sword with his right arm, directly towards Shixin's throat.

At this very moment, a golden light descended from the sky. Dragon Mother suddenly showed up before Ao Bai's face and gave him a heavy slap.

A half of Ao Bai's head was smashed. His teeth were broken, flying all over the sky like glistening crystals and pearls. How strong was Dragon Mother? After suffering a slap from her, Ao Bai swirled backward and started a shrill swishing noise.

"Retreat!" Ao Bai roared resonantly, then turned around and fled to Yao Mountain City the moment he realized what had happened just now.

His brothers all turned back and ran immediately. They raised clouds and fled at their highest speeds without saying a word. Ao Bai even took out his divine seal and waved it towards the sky.

Suddenly, a three-colored swirling thunderous cloud emerged above Dragon Mother's head, then colorful thunderbolts began striking her.

"You ball-less b*stards are all like that dead old b*stard!" Dragon Mother bared her teeth as she gazed at Ao Bai and her brothers. Next, she turned around and threw a slap on Shixin's face. Shixin lost consciousness without even giving a moan.

"Useless!" She hollered.

Chapter 1844: The Three Friends From Mount Skeleton

In the eastern side of Emperor Xun's military camp, under rolling clouds, was an artificial lake created by a powerful magic.

In an exquisite gold and jade palace by the lake, Shixin and his brothers kneeled on the ground, while Dragon Mother carried a silver-dark wooden staff, bashing them violently.

Dragon Mother beat her sons brutally. After three to five strikes, the armors worn by Shixin and his brothers were shattered. Along with muffled bone-cracking noises, they fell to the ground with broken bones, twitching and howling in pain.

Shixin and his brothers started vomiting blood, but Dragon Mother didn't stop. She continued thrashing them soundly while cursing madly. She beat the heads of Shigu, Shisui and Shiya out of shape, and crushed their horns.

As the oldest, strongest, and bravest one, Shixin burst into a thunderous roar and leaped up when he saw Dragon Mother swing the staff towards his chin. His body glowed with a blood-red light and his broken arms healed immediately. He pulled out a long blade and swiftly chopped at Dragon Mother's waist.

"You crazy old woman! Are you gonna beat my brothers and I to death? Let's die together then! You old crazy woman, which blind b*stard released you?" After the first swing, Shixin never stopped. He roared hoarsely and launched thousands of strikes in a row.

Blade lights dazzled, as shreds of blade shadows tore apart the space and momentarily enveloped Dragon Mother.

Dragon Mother gave a twisted smile. She slightly shook the wooden staff and hit hard at Shixin, bringing up beams of frosty light. Following a series of deafening tinkles, Shixin's blade shattered into pieces. The sharp pieces swished shrilly back to

Shixin, penetrated his body, and brought out streams of blood from his body.

"Brothers, let's kill this crazy woman together!" Shihun roared hoarsely, "She beat us every day! Month after month, year after year, she beat us whenever she isn't happy! We've had enough! Even the life back in ocean eyes was better than this...Let's kill her together! Let's eat her flesh, drink her blood, devour her marrow! We'll grow stronger that way!"

Shisui, who was howling in pain, leaped up as well. His wounds healed in a moment as he pulled out a sun and moon shovel and fiercely stabbed at Dragon Mother's neck. "What sh*t has happened to this old lunatic? Now she's venting on us again? Damn it! Which idiot released her? He should have only released us! Kill her, kill her! Brothers, let's kill her!"

The eyes of Dragon Mother's nine boys exposed a fierce light. The cruelty and ferocity buried in the nature of Chaos dragons had been aroused. They knew nothing about the love between mother and sons. Instead, they pulled out their weapons and laid their murderous hands on their mother.

"Haha! I should have strangled you one by one that year!" Dragon Mother gazed at her nine sons with lusterless eyes, "If the dead old b*stard didn't protect you, I would have swallowed you to replenish myself when you were born. I was so weak after giving birth to you!"

Witnessing all this, the group of dragon elders on the scene had their faces paled. They stepped back, unable to hide the shock on their faces. Great dragon ancestor, why on earth did they choose to follow these ten lunatics?

The sons wanted to kill their mother, and the mother wanted to eat their sons. By following the psychopaths who might even do things like this, could anyone end well?

Ao Bai and his brothers were 'weak', and were too nice to human

beings, thus didn't manage to lead the dragon-kind to dominate the world. But at the very least, they were fair-minded and warm to the young dragons, always protecting the young ones in the family. How could they ever be so ruthless like these mad ten?

The ones who decided to follow Dragon Mother and her sons might die in their hands before even knowing how!

The cold light brought up by Dragon Mother's wooden staff surrounded Shixin and his brothers. The muffled metal clanks quaked the entire palace as more and deeper cracks appeared on the ground.

"Nine useless losers, didn't I tell you what to do before I left? What did I tell you? I told you to fight a 'commanders' battle' against Ji Hao and his people. Fight a 'commanders' battle'! Do you know what that means?"

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Three of her boys were thrown to the ground by Dragon Mother with the wooden staff, folded. Clearly, their spines were completely crushed.

Shixin shouted himself hoarse as he launched tens of thousands of blade strikes at Dragon Mother in a row. The blade light flickered and left a bone-deep wound on Dragon Mother's face. "Old crazy woman, didn't we fight? Didn't we? All these days, hadn't we been fighting the nine weak losers? Didn't we fight our heads broken? Didn't we bleed?"

Dragon Mother vomited blood because of anger. "What did I tell you? Did I tell you to fight the battle yourselves? What did I say? I told you to encourage those human leaders, especially the young and elite ones, to fight Ji Hao. I told you to make as many of them die as possible!" She yelled.

"What did you do? You stupidly rush up yourselves, and give the enemies the lives of your countless warriors! Did I tell you to do

this?" Dragon Mother screamed. She suddenly lunged her left hand and penetrated Shixin's stomach with her sharp claws, then tore apart his body and gripped his spine.

Crack!

Dragon Mother took back her hand, holding a crystal piece of dragon spine.

Shixin shrieked in pain. He dropped his weapon and fell to the ground tumbling. Dragon Mother laughed evilly as she raised her right foot, seeming about to stomp on his head.

Seeing Shixin was going to die in his mother's hands, among the three people who had been sitting in the guest seats and watching this show, the long-bearded old man who looked perfectly relaxed coughed slightly. He raised a finger and sent out countless glistening, tiny bone pieces.

Along with a series of cracking noise, a thick bone shield emerged above Shixin's body, protecting him from Dragon Mother's foot.

"Dragon Mother, my friend, please calm your anger, calm your anger..." The old man stood up and smiled, bowing slightly to Dragon Mother as he said, "For the sake of us, the three friends from Mount Skeleton, calm your anger. We have important things to do, and they will just be used. If you kill them, you'd be weakening ourselves, right?"

Shixin sighed in relief as he glanced at the old man with gratefulness.

However, he then heard the old man continued, "If you are really gonna kill your nine useless sons, you should at least leave their bones undamaged...So, after they have died, I can pull out their bones to make nine Chaos dragon bone puppets...Haha, that might be more useful than these nine!"

The gratefulness in Shixin's eyes faded immediately. Instead, those eyes were filled with ferocity as he and his brothers stared at

the old man, the young man, and the girl behind him, who called themselves 'the three friends from Mount Skeleton'.

Chapter 1845: A Discussion About ‘Commanders’ Battle’

Dragon Mother put down the wooden staff with a sour face and coldly glanced at her nine boys, then sat in the chair in the middle of this hall. A golden-red flame rose from her head, quickly circling around her body. When the flame dimmed, the wound on her face and her broken armors were all fixed.

Shixin's brothers stood up and took some pills to heal themselves. They picked up Shixin's spine, which was thrown on the ground by Dragon Mother, then straightened his body and put the piece of spine back into him. Shixin gave a deep growl in pain, then boosted up his spirit blood and took a few powerful pills. Before long, his injuries were all healed and his consumed life-force was fully replenished.

"Damn! At first, the cultivation system of human beings was stolen from our dragon-kind." Shixin stood up while complaining as he patted his waist. "Now what? We can heal slight wounds by boosting up our spirit blood, but if we're injured badly, we need to take pills?"

"Cut the crap." Said Dragon Mother in a frosty tone, "The original version of human cultivation system is indeed learned from the dragon-kind, but human beings inherited Saint Pan Gu's fertility, representing the strongest life-force and power of creation in this world. Sure, they do better self-healing than dragons."

Snorting coldly, Dragon Mother continued sullenly, "Dragons...No, not only dragons, we Chaos dragons too have strong bodies. But, as we inherited the power of destruction and killing, it's hard for us to heal ourselves when we get injured...If we can extract the human bloodline and merge it into our bodies..."

Clicking her tongue, a rosy color emerged from Dragon Mother's

face. She narrowed her eyes and smilingly pointed at the old man who stopped her from killing her sons earlier, then said, "You little useless scums, how can you be so impolite? Come greet these three elders, will you?"

The immortal-like old man, whose beard was long enough to reach the ground, smiled mildly and nodded to Shixin and his brothers.

The young man and the girl behind the old man remained cold, even throwing a few scornful glances at Shixin and his brothers. The handsome young man slightly nodded to Shixin and his brothers, yet snorted frostily. The girl proudly raised her chin and turned to a decorative relief about carps on a wall.

Shixin and his brothers bared their teeth as they stared at the young man and the girl with a fire of hatred and anger burned in their eyes. They just wanted to mince the young man and the girl. Dragons looked down upon the others, but which living being ever dared to despise dragons?

Back in the ancient time, Shixin and his brothers had done uncountable evil things, and destroyed countless creatures. No one ever dared to be so rude to them. Added with the evil words that the long-bearded old man said about them earlier, Shixin and his brothers had already put these three people on their killing list.

But, as the intent of killing was brewing in their hearts, Shixin and his brother just clenched their teeth and didn't truly do a thing.

First, Dragon Mother was there. Together, Shixin and his brothers could barely rival Dragon Mother. Therefore, they dared not to do anything to upset her. Second, the long-bearded man, the young man, and the girl looked too weird. How could they dare to recklessly make a move before knowing about their enemies?

"These three friends have been cultivating themselves in Mount Skeleton since the world was created. They are Priest Guzun,

Guling, and Gue." Dragon Mother proudly looked at her boys and said, "They are our first batch of reinforcements. You must respect them. No irreverence is allowed."

Shixin and his brothers looked at Guzun, Guling and Gue from head to toe. These nine Chaos dragons were powerful beings who had lived through the prehistorical era too, but they never heard of the place 'Mount Skeleton'; Since these three people lived since the creation of the world, they must have shown up in the prehistorical world. But, Shixin and his brothers had never heard of their names. This was strange.

Their appearances were even stranger. The old man looked like an immortal, the young man was handsome, and the girl looked pretty and adorable. But when looked closely, one would find that their skin and flesh were transparent like crystals, and a strange colored light was flowing inside their bodies. They didn't have blood vessels and meridians.

Shixin and his brothers scanned across these three people' bodies with their spirit powers and found that these people didn't have internal organs; nothing but a sphere of light existed inside each of their bodies, swelling and shrinking.

The three people didn't mind being scanned by spirit powers, and made no reaction to Shinxin and his brothers' offensive moves. Therefore, Shixin and his brothers fully released their spirit power to check their bodies inch by inch.

Through their transparent skins and fleshes, one could see their jade-like, glittering bones. Every piece of bone was flawless. Guzun's bones were dark-golden, looking old, and Guling's bones are purple-golden, looking mysterious.

Gue had a face of an adorable little girl, but her bones were scary. Those bones were black and red, lustreless like dried blood. Her strangely colored bones were transparent like glass, making her look awfully evil.

After observing them for quite a while, Shixin finally began talking. "The three friends from Mount Skeleton? I've never heard of your names back in the ancient time. You're nobodies!" He said scornfully.

Guzun chuckled. He nodded at Shixin and responded smilingly, "Prince Shixin, you're right. We weren't famous back in the ancient time...because, everyone who knew us had been turned into bone treasures by us. So, they didn't have a chance to spread our names."

Shixin'x grin froze on his face. The faces of his brothers paled slightly as well as they gazed at the three.

These three people weren't famous back in the ancient time, because they turned everyone who knew them into treasures? Was this even real? How powerful a living being needed to be to say something like this? How powerful this living being needed to be to keep its name from being known by other people?

Everyone who knew them was killed by them...

Shixin and his brothers cautiously looked at the three for long, then lazily cupped their hands and bowed to them, "Greetings, elders!"

They now clearly understood that they couldn't afford to offend these three people. But, because of the pride that existed deep in their natures, they still didn't take these three people seriously.

Sensing the faintly discernible hostile between the three and her boys, Dragon Mother smiled in satisfaction and said, "Good. Shixin, you go bring Emperor Xun and his useless people here. We need to discuss what we should do next."

Snorting coldly, Dragon Mother raised her head and continued slowly, "We can't let you idiots keep wasting time like this...If those three get angry, we won't be able to deal with them!"

Chapter 1846: Tit For Tat

When Dragon Mother was punishing her boys and Emperor Xun was holding a party, a few dark-faced priests wearing long coarse robes walked to Emperor Xun's palace in a hurry. Right behind the jade stage in the middle of the palace, the few priests ran into Wu Bi and a few Chu Wu Clan elders behind him.

They paused under the stage and looking at each other with skeptical eyes.

Thin and bone-piercingly cold gusts of wind spiraled up from the earth, raising clouds of dust and leaves. The leaves swirled swiftly in the winds, then were shredded by an invisible force.

Among the few priests, the one who seemed to be the oldest had a pair of brightly shining eagle eyes, with dark-golden pupils. He abruptly bowed to Wu Bi, said, "I am Zang Yuanzi, a disciple of Saint Mu from the west."

Wu Bi threw a glimpse at Zang Yuanzi, then laughed with an evil hissing voice, "Cut the crap...Are you really their disciples?"

Zang Yuanzi smiled and responded seriously, "I am really a disciple of Saint Mu. I cannot lie to you about this. If you don't believe me, ask Saint Mu...As long as you have the guts to do it."

Wu Bi bared his teeth and let out his long and slim crimson tongue, which looked like a snake, quickly licking his nose. The longer and deeper he turned into a devil, the less and less like a human being he became. While laughing, he slowly shook his head and said, "You surely know this. How can I ever visit them? That'd be suicidal, right? Hah, why're you here?"

Zang Yuanzhi calmly pointed at the jade stage and said, "We came to visit Emperor Xun, for all living beings in this world, of course."

Wu Bi remained silent for a while. Suddenly, his eyes turned blood-red as he screamed with laughter, "For all living beings in

the world? I always knew that you people from the west are the most shameless ones of all. Telling me about your hokey kindness...Is this interesting? We both clearly know what're we here for...You know it...I know it!"

Zang Yuanzi chuckled. He bowed to Wu Bi again and said, "In this case, let's see what we can do, shall we?"

Wu Bi's eyes showed an intent of killing.

Puff!

A pair of blood-red bone daggers suddenly appeared near Zang Yuanzi's body, being wrapped in raging flames as they cut through Zang Yuanzi's throat and chest at lightning speed.

Zang Yuanzi's body exploded. A fist-sized pale-white lotus petal drifted down from the air, with two thin cracks on it. At the same time, Zang Yuanzi reappeared right beside Wu Bi. His entire body had turned transparent, vividly green and venting a thriving life-force.

Before Wu Bi could react, Zang Yuanzi gripped his shoulders with both hands and lifted him up.

Green blood vessels bulged from Zang Yuanzi's arms as he prepared to smash Wu Bi on the ground. But suddenly, Emperor Xun poked his head out from the edge of the stage and threw down a giant wine pot.

Clang!

The wine pot shattered, as Emperor Xun pointed at Wu Bi and Zang Yuanzi and laughed, "What're you doing down there? Why're you putting arms around each other? Are you gonna commit adultery?"

Zang Yuanzi stopped, then slowly put Wu Bi down on the ground. Both Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi raised their heads and grinned at Emperor Xun. "Emperor Xun, please don't say this. We're just learning from each other by exchanging moves." Wu Bi

said.

Emperor Shun giggled. He abruptly dragged a maid down and pressed her on the guard bar of the stage. Ripping her clothes apart, he exposed her snow-white upper body and then grinned, waving his hands to Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi as he yelled, "Cut the crap! Come up here, up... We have wine, beauties, all prepared for you! Let's enjoy the day together! Together!"

Laughing again, Emperor Xun raised both arms and pointed at the north, then said, "Look, those idiots are nearly wiped out... How beautiful this is? How great is this? Ah...Come on, come on, come up here. Let's make a toast!"

Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi exchanged a glance. "If I threw you to the ground just now, your body would have been smashed by the 'Wuding mountain-breaking strength' that belongs only to our sect." Said Zang Yuanzi with a low and frosty voice.

Wu Bi hissed with laughter. He coldly glanced at Zang Yuanzi's left arm and said, "Do you really think that you managed to dodge my daggers? Hehe, is our Chu Wu Clan so soft?"

The expression on Zang Yuanzi's face changed slightly. He immediately rolled up his sleeves and saw two, three-inch-long blade wounds on his left arm, burning with a faintly red flame. Within a couple of breaths, the blood and flesh of Zang Yuanzi's arm were about to be burned out, but he felt no pain or any other discomfort.

"Good!" As Zang Yuanzi slapped his own left shoulder, his left arm fell off entirely, being incinerated within a blink. He sneered at Wu Bi and shook slightly. Next, a pale-white lotus bloomed on the wound on his shoulder, then a new arm quickly grew out from the lotus.

"Oh, not bad!" Wu Bi shook his head at Zang Yuanzi while chuckling and said, "I wonder if your head can grow back out too if I chop it off. Can it?"

Zang Yuanzi threw a chilly glimpse at Wu Bi, lowered his voice, and said, "Why don't we try later? Let's see which one of us can kill the other, alright?"

Zang Yuanzi's face was twisted, eyes showing a mad desire for killing. He looked even more like a devil than Wu Bi, who was already a devil. Which well-cultivated being could look like this?

If Priest Mu were on the scene, he would never admit that Zang Yuanzi was his disciple. The disciples of Priest Mu and Priest Hua had been doing all kinds of evil things, but which one of them didn't look like a kind immortal? Did any of them have such a twisted, hideous devil face?"

Wu Bi wasn't afraid of Zang Yuanzi. He also lowered his voice and sneered, "Good. Let's do it later."

They glanced and smiled at each other, then turned around and walked up to the stage through the cliffy stairs together. They were both powerful beings with high-level cultivations. They flashed across the air and left shreds of afterimages behind while climbing onto the stage.

Under Emperor Xun's orders, two maids had already papered two small wine pots, fully contained aged wine. Seeing Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi walking up, Emperor Xun laughed and handed the wine pots to them, then said, "You two, long time no see. What have you been doing these days? Come on, come on... Empty the pots, then we'll catch up."

Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi again glanced at each other. Afterward, they took over the wine pots, slightly opened their mouth, and made an inhalation. A stream of wine flew up from each pot and spiraled into their mouths.

Thud! Thud!

After finishing the wine, they threw the wine pots to the ground simultaneously. "Emperor Xun, when can this unheated war end?

From my point of view, we should build a large blood-offering altar and sacrifice the lives of hundreds of millions of human beings...Then, we'll just break the city." Wu Bi yelled.

"Bullsh*t!" Before Wu Bi finished, Zang Yuanzi laughed coldly.

Chapter 1847: The Evil and the Devil Against Each Other

Hearing Zang Yuanzi, Wu Bi immediately dropped his face. He pointed at Zang Yuanzi and yelled, "What did you say?"

Zang Yuanzi put his nose to Wu Bi's nose, gazed at Wu Bi's blood-red eyes, and laughed, "Bullsh*t! Don't you speak human language? Oh, but that's reasonable, because you're not a human being already. How can you possibly understand human language?"

A few tiny blood vessels twitched above Wu Bi's eye corners as he leaped up and burst into raging shouts, "How dare you scold me?"

Zang Yuanzi carelessly raised a hand and a small tree branch appeared. He plucked off all the leaves, then picked his ears with the branch, and chuckled, "I scolded you, so what? I can even beat you, do you believe that?"

Wu Bi stared at Zang Yuanzi with his face darkened, then moved suddenly. His arms remained motionless, but lumps rose from behind his neck.

Pop! Pop!

Another pair of arms grew out from the back of his neck, which clenched their fists and punched at Zang Yuanzi's face.

What was even more shocking that Wu Bi's pair of new arms were thickly covered with small scales. The scales were dark, glistening with a metallic luster and seeming to be especially tough.

Zang Yuanzi laughed out loud. He stomped a foot against the ground then shook his body. A couple of lumps rose swelled from the back of his neck and his shoulders. Along with a series of popping noises, two heads and four arms grew out of Zang Yuanzi'a body, and he became a three-headed, six-armed monster.

He loudly cast a spell. Following his voice, a cold light flashed across his six palms, then six swords appeared. He gripped the sword hilts and swung them swiftly, sending waves of cold lights towards Wu Bi's arms. Compared to Ji Hao's sword moves, Zang Yuanzi's sword moves were pretty simple, as he simply and violently swung the sword straight down at a high speed.

In comparison with a powerful fighter with a tough body like Ji Hao, Zang Yuanzi's attack speed couldn't be counted as high. Ji Hao was able to make over ten-thousand sword moves within a second, while Zang Yuanzi could merely make about three-thousand moves with one arm within the same span. However, he had six arms now. With six arms together, his attack efficiency was twice as good as Ji Hao.

Countless people on the jade stage saw that Zang Yuanzi was wrapped in a smooth layer of light. Beams of sword lights and strands of sword power roared down and covered Wu Bi's body like a beautiful meteor shower.

Wu Bi growled ragingly as fire sparks were raised from his new arms. Along with ear-piercing clanks, the scales on his arms were shattered and sent flying away. Before he could take back his arms, Zang Yuanzi's sword lights had landed on his arms hundreds of thousands of times, sending up large amounts of blood and muscle pieces.

Wu Bi's devil body was incredibly strong while Zang Yuanzi wasn't a strength cultivator. With the power of the swords, he only managed to create a half-inch-deep wound on Wu Bi's body with each sword strike. Nevertheless, because of the high attack efficiency provided by his six arms, Wu Bi didn't even have a chance to heal himself before his pair of new arms were peeled, and his dark bones were exposed. Those bones were covered in blood-red spell symbols.

"Zang Yuanzi!" Wu Bi growled hoarsely, "You are...No, the person behind you, is he truly gonna go against Devil Master?"

"Go against him, yeah, we're against him..." Zang Yuanzi lunged his sword as fast as a gust of wind. As his swords clanked against Wu Bi's arm bones, he said, "We found this idiot called Emperor Xun together by chance, and we both want to control him, to make him work for us. We're never on the same side...We can go against him, why not? Original Devil, big deal?"

A blood-red light shone out of Wu Bi's eyes. He snorted coldly, then a few more lumps grew out of his body. Afterward, the lumps exploded into new heads and arms, making him a four-faced, eight-armed creature. His entire body was covered in thick black scales. His arms brought up fierce gusts of wind while punching at Zang Yuanzi.

Wu Bi was a master Magus when he was a human being, a peak-level Divine Magus. He was only half a step away from the level of Supreme Magi back then, and his body was incredibly strong. After being turned into a devil by Original Devil, Wu Bi's body was upgraded, turning stronger and tougher, with a measureless power.

After growing out three new heads and four new arms, Wu Bi punched as fast as a hurricane. His attack speed was now higher than Zang Yuanzi by at least ten folds.

Following a series of clanks, muffled thuds could be heard. Zang Yuanzi activated his 'linden body', which was attained through a secret body-strengthening method taught by Priest Mu. His entire body turned green and transparent like a piece of crystal. But, under Wu Bi's attacks, he was trembling like a willow branch in a storm, while uncontrollably staggering backward.

Wu Bi laughed wildly as his heavy punches landed on Zang Yuanzi's body over and over again. Every time, his fists would sink into Zang Yuanzi's body by three inches. Loud bone cracking noises could be heard without an end as Zang Yuanzi's was soon beaten out of shape and began vomiting blood.

"Idiot, idiot. Except brainless dragons and those natural warriors from Jia Clan, who in Pan Gu world dares to combat closely against our human...no, our devil-kind?" While attacking Zang Yuanzi, Wu Bi roared proudly, "Our supreme devil bodies are descended from Saint Pan Gu, the creator of the world. Our bodies are the strongest bodies in the world!"

"Combat against me without casting a magic or using a special ability? I'm saying that you're an idiot, do you agree?" Wu Bi suddenly gripped Zang Yuanzi's head, burst into a thunderous roar, and tore his head directly off.

"Hah!" A beam of green light rose from Zang Yuanzi's headless body. The headless body exploded into a cloud of pale-white lotus petals, drifting to the ground. Within the green light, Zang Yuanzi was wearing an extremely luxurious, glowing robe. He still had three heads, but with twelve new arms.

He was now a three-headed, eighteen-armed creature. Six of his hands were holding swords, and the other twelve hands each held a brightly shining treasure. A cloud floated above his head, hundreds of meters in radius, with three pale white lotuses blooming on it"You have the strength, so what? Wu Bi, this is...my real power!" Zang Yuanzi laughed.

Along with his laughter, he opened his mouth and let out interweaving streams of fire, in the colors of green, white, and red. The fire was scarily hot, covering Wu Bi's entire body like molten glass. Wu Bi was caught unprepared. Along with a sizzling noise, two of his three heads and five of his six arms were melted within a second.

The fire also burned through his scales, skin, and muscles, drilling directly into his internal organs.

Chapter 1848: Ji Hao Watches the Fight

The pre-world magnetic life and death sword formation was activated. The supremely strong and traceless magnetic force coiled around the shield that was created by Master Spirit-slaughter and the group of Pan Yu world nobles together, then shredded it.

Along with an earth-shaking boom, countless thin, black space cracks suddenly appeared around the central camp area. Sharp streams of Chaos power roared in through the cracks and cut the earth into pieces. The magnetic forcefield was too powerful, as it directly tore apart the space and connected this place with the Chaos.

Master Spirit-slaughter and the thousands of Pan Yu world nobles, who had activated their best treasures, all trembled and their faces blushed. The blood of over ninety percent of the Pan Yu world nobles on the scene boiled. Half of them failed to keep their feet and sat on the ground, while nearly a half of them had their face paled and vomited blood.

"A formation?" Master Spirit-slaughter was way more experienced and knowledgeable than these spoiled Pan Yu world nobles. He abruptly raised his head and exclaimed with a dry voice, "A pre-world formation? This is...Chaos magnetic power? No, some other things are in it...Life-force, death power, the power of destruction and creation, and...and what?"

The expression on Master Spirit-slaughter's face changed quickly. A beam of light shone out of his head, sending up a water-tank-sized, colorful glistening bead. Countless golden dragons and colorful phoenixes were flying inside the bead while it emitted a splendid light, firmly covering Master Spirit-slaughter's body.

"The grade of this formations is too high...I need to be careful, be careful...It has not been easy for me to survive till present. I don't

want to die here." Master Spirit-slaughter looked around with a dark face and saw those Pan Yu world nobles sitting on the ground and vomiting blood, then showed an extreme greediness in his eyes.

Ji Hao restrained the power of the sword formation and coldly gazed at the people who were trapped in it.

"I give you three days. If no one comes to save you in three days, you shall die together!" Ji Hao snorted coldly as his eyes swept across the spirit treasures and supreme treasures which belonged to these Pan Yu world nobles.

"Not top-grade ones, but quantity is huge. I'll take these... Hmm, I'll take these treasures. I can give them to my friends, or to my disciples as gifts. These are all good treasures! My poor disciple Shermie... Until now, he only has a pair of knuckles... So poor!"

Clicking his lips, Ji Hao chuckled, then pointed at the sword formation. Following his move, invisible strands of sword power slowly penetrated the space and landed on the dimmed shield one after another.

'Sizzle...Boom...'

The shield which loomed on the central camp area quaked ceaselessly, letting out strange, explosive sounds. On the shield, colorful lights burst from time to time and stirred up large ripples on the transparent shield.

The group of Pan Yu world nobles who were trapped in the sword formation screamed out loud. This slow-paced attack launched by Ji Hao gave them a giant mental stress. They couldn't see the attacker, and didn't even know what the attacker was. This unknown frightened them so much that the faces of some Pan Yu world nobles paled ghastly.

Soon, a large number of Pan Yu world nobles sneakily took out their emergency talismans and cast their secret family magic to ask

their families in Pan Yu world for help. They howled, screamed, and contacted the high-grade members of their families. They cried to their parents, grandparents, or higher grade family elders for help. At the moment, an extremely unsettling atmosphere spread in the central camp area, as if a disaster was coming.

Watching these Pan Yu world nobles' moves, Ji Hao laughed in satisfaction.

These days, the Pan Yu world force had been launching unhurried offensives on Yao Mountain City. Each day, they sent a giant number of their warriors to Yao Mountain City to die on purpose. Their weird actions worried Ji Hao. But now, they asked their families for help and began taking actual actions, which was a good thing.

Compared with aggressive enemies, the enemies who made no moves were dreadful. As long as the Pan Yu world nobles started making moves, Ji Hao would be able to respond quickly and effectively according to the situation, and get more information from their moves.

The sword formation kept striking at the central camp area at a slow pace. By now, the sun had risen. Ji Hao gave a bright shout, hearing which, countless Gold Crow warriors cawed and hovered in the sky for a while, then slowly drew back to Yao Mountain City.

At this moment, Ji Hao merged his spirit power into the spreading sunlight. The sun became his eyes. He glanced around the world, and immediately discovered Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi, who were fighting on the jade stage.

"Wu Bi...And these priests! They look like the disciples of Priest Mu and Priest Hua, but in fact, they're the three 'Pengs' people!" Seeing the four-faced, six-armed Wu Bi and three-headed, eighteen-armed Zang Yuanzi fight intensely against each other, and the former being burned by the three-colored fire, Ji Hao's

interest was aroused immediately.

"This is Samadhi true fire, isn't it? It's a real power of Dao. I have the purest essence sun fire, but I never tried to create Samadhi true fire." While watching Zang Yuanzi's moves, Ji Hao left a few words to Yu Meng, Donggong, and Ximu, who were hiding in the surrounding space, then teleported himself millions of miles away and showed up in Emperor Xun's camp.

With the great Dao of extreme negative, the sunlight, and the starlight, he merged his body into the sunlight and made himself invisible. Afterward, he quietly floated in the air, about sixty-meters above the stage, lowered his head, and looked at Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi fighting.

Zang Yuanzi had so many powerful treasures, yet he attacked Wu Bi with a Samadhi true fire. Wu Bi was caught unprepared...Or in other words, he had never encountered anyone with any true power of Dao. Hence, he suffered severely. Samadhi true fire was one of the most powerful devil-suppressing fire of Dao; it was mighty, and ould naturally restrain all kinds of evils, including Wu Bi.

The fire drilled and burned ragingly inside his body, which was covered in black scales, making him howl shrilly in pain. The edge of each of his scales turned glowing-red, as if a dazzling light was about to burst from his body.

"Zang Yuanzi...How dare you?" Wu Bi screamed as he rushed towards Zang Yuanzi with giant steps, his face twisted and ready to bite Zang Yuanzi.

"I do dare, so what?" Zang Yuanzi carelessly sneered and said, "Do you really think that I would care about you bunch of monsters under Original Devil's leadership? What can Original Devil possibly do to me even if I destroy your soul today?

Raising the swords, Zang Yuanzi marched towards Wu Bi, also with giant steps.

Right at this moment, Shixin trod on a dark cloud and descended from the sky. He raised his head and yelled, "Emperor Xun, my mother wants to talk to you...You're wasting time every day doing nothing. My mother is angry...Hah, give me some beautiful girls now so I can say some nice words for you to my mother!"

Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi paused simultaneously and stopped fighting.

Chapter 1849: Fight to Death

Zang Yuanzi ignored Wu Bi, whose entire body was burning; instead, he smilingly bowed to Shixin and said, "Prince Shixin, I am Zang Yuanzi. It's a pleasure to meet you."

Wu Bi threw a sideways glance at Zang Yuanzi and laughed evilly, then turned around and glanced at the tens of Gong Sun Family guards on the jade stage. "Hah!" He burst into a roar and abruptly opened his mouth. His long and slim, crimson tongue suddenly split into tens of sticky tentacles and swished out, drilling into these guards' bodies.

The puffing noises could be heard without an end. Among this group of guards, even the weakest ones were peak-level Magus Kings. But simultaneously, they turned into dried corpses and fell to the ground.

All the blood and moisture of their bodies were drained by Wu Bi in a moment. Their dried, fragile corpses fell on the ground and immediately exploded into clouds of dust, spreading hundreds of meters away.

Even a Magus King had thriving spirit blood, while Divine Magi's spirit blood was vast as an ocean, and their bodies were filled with strong life-force. After draining the spirit blood of tens of Gong Sun Family guards, Wu Bi boosted up his power and suppressed the Samadhi true fire inside his body with a black and red blood power.

"Emperor Xun, I borrowed a few of your guards to heal myself...You're the human emperor. You're generous, so I am sure you won't mind!" Wu Bi laughed, showing no respect to Emperor Xun. He squinted at Emperor Xun and the few Gong Sun Family elders, then turned around and cupped his hands to Shixin with a warm smile, "Prince Shixin, what does Dragon Mother want to talk to us about?"

Shixin rolled his eyes. His large eyeballs rolled quickly in the sockets as he laughed, "Nothing, nothing, nothing important...You go on fighting, go on, fight to death. You must fight until one of you dies...Then, I'll eat the dead one's heart!"

Shixin wasn't hiding his greediness at all. A glistening stream of saliva flowed out of his mouth corner and hung on his chin, about three feet long. "Continue fighting! Weren't you fighting so hard just now? If you stop fighting now, you'd be ball-less cowards! Hah, go on, fight!"

Zang Yuanzi was a 'Dao possessor', and had a great cultivation. His body was filled with abundant essence life-force. As a cultivator, he had cast off all the impurities of his body and maintained a pure, pre-world flesh and blood. Shixin had eaten countless human beings. The moment he saw Zang Yuanzi, he sensed the sweet aroma emitted from his body!

Wu Bi was a peak-level Divine Magus. After turning into a devil, he had devoured the spirit blood of countless living beings. His evil power looked a little dirty in Shixin's eyes, but the spirit blood in his heart was incredibly pure and in a giant quantity...To Shixin, Wu Bi was definitely not as tasty as Zang Yuanzi, but he was absolutely a large, fleshy piece of meat!

"You two, please continue fighting. I'll be a witness, and make sure that no one interrupts you!" While spouting saliva, Shixin shouted, "You just fight to death. I swear to the heaven that I'll only eat the dead one! I will never, ever attack the winner!"

Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi glanced at each other. Instantly, their burning fighting will cooled down by ninety percent!

How could they ever believe Shixin? Shixin and his brothers were notorious back in the ancient time. No one in the ancient world hadn't heard about their bad reputation! They swore a lot, but did they keep their words even once?

Snorting coldly, Wu Bi said with a dark face, "Prince, we're sorry.

Earlier on, we merely exchanged a few moves, but never wanted to kill each other. There won't be a dead one for you to eat his heart!"

"Prince," said Zang Yuanzi blindly, "we have important things to do. What does Dragon Mother want to talk to us about? Please give us some notice in advance. In fact, I was just on my way to visit Dragon Mother. There are some things we need to hurry up with."

Two pale-white lotuses flashed across Zang Yuanzi's eyes as he continued in a chilly tone, "Prince, I assume you haven't forgotten about the oath you made that day you were released from the ocean eye, have you? That wasn't just a random swear that you can make every day. You connected your dragon pearl and the great Dao to that blood vow. If you break it, your body and soul will both die!"

Wu Bi swiftly glanced at Zang Yuanzi.

A tremor went through Shixin's body. Throwing a threatening glance at Zang Yuanzi, he wiped the large stream of saliva in his mouth corner with a sleeve, then giggled and said, "You're right. Let's talk about the serious matters, serious matters. Hah, it's nothing, just my mother wants Emperor Xun to select the outstanding human commanders and warriors from all clans to fight a 'commanders' battle' against Yao Mountain City!"

Shixin clicked his tongue, then raised his head and gave a cold smile as he continued, "My mother said that you've sent so many weak things to Yao Mountain City, but they didn't even manage to cross the blood sea, all ending up being captured alive by Ji Hao...Were you fighting a war or giving slaves to Ji Hao?"

Shaking his head, Shixin carried on with a cold voice, "So, my mother has said to select the commanders above the level of Magus Kings, including the elders, leaders of all human clans, and those old ones who have been hiding in some corners, trying to break into the supreme level, to challenge Yao Mountain City people. We should fight them one-to-one, face to face; fight to death!"

Zang Yuanzi's eyes shone in satisfaction. He smiled mildly and said, "Prince, you're absolutely right. I happen to have the same view!"

Wu Bi burst into raging roars, "Bullsh*t! Bull-sh*t! Fight, fight, how many Magus Kings and Divine Magi exist among human beings? Can they compare with the millions and millions of lower-level ones? We must make an all-out attack! No matter how broad and deep the blood sea is, we can fill it up by throwing all human warriors in at one time!"

Wu Bi leaped up and shouted, "We must make an all-out attack at all costs! At all costs! We break Yao Mountain City from the front!"

A weird expression was shown in Zang Yuanzi's eyes. "Fight the commanders' fight!" He turned back, stared at Wu Bi, and said coldly.

Wu Bi turned around and took a deep, deep breath. Then, a series of lumps swelled on his neck. He became a three-headed, twelve-faced, and twenty-four-armed creature, and his body was growing slowly as well. Gradually, he reached three-hundred meters in height.

As a strong devil power spread from his mouth, Wu Bi said coldly, "All-out attack! Not even one warrior can stay in this camp. All people, charge to Yao Mountain City! At all costs! No retreat is allowed! If all warriors die, we gather more then continue charging!"

Zang Yuanzi too grew taller slowly, also becoming about three-hundred meters tall, with three heads and eighteen arms. He sneered and responded, "Wu Bi, what do you want?"

Wu Bi gazed at Zang Yuanzi, showing no sign of fear. "What are you planning on? Do you really think that I don't know?"

"Let's fight to death then!" Zang Yuanzi laughed coldly.

Wu Bi also burst into laughter. He raised his twenty-four arms,

clenched his fingers, and shattered the space. Twenty-four giant sawtooth blades flew out of the space cracks, being gripped in his hands.

"Die!" Wu Bi roared wildly and swung his blades at Zang Yuanzi.

Chapter 1850: Blacklist

Emperor Xun laughed loud madly, then raised a wine pot and poured the wine into his mouth. His face was twisted, seeming like he was having an epileptic seizure. His twisted faces showed a trace of madness, and his eyes were unfocused. He was hysterical and completely out of his mind.

On the other side, Shixin completely forgot about Dragon Mother's order. He raised both arms and roared thunderously, cheering for Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi. He expected an internecine situation to happen between them. It would be the best if they could both die, because in that way, he would naturally be able to eat both of them.

Zang Yuanzi's brothers and sisters, and the few Chu Wu Clan elders who followed Wu Bi here, all rushed up and stared at each other. Bright lights shone out of the few priests' heads while dense clouds floated above them, releasing strong energy waves. On the other side, the few Chu Wu Clan elders transformed into weirdly shaped devils and emitted a despairing, evil power.

The hundreds of meters tall Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi stood on the jade stage with their arms crossed and striking at each other violently, bringing up sharp cold lights. Their weapons collided against each other and caused deafening explosive sounds; The treasures held in Zang Yuanzi's hands clashed against Wu Bi's blades and generated raging, dazzling fires.

Wu Bi had a strong body. After getting injured, he could heal himself in no time; he also had a mighty strength and an incomparable speed. Zang Yuanzi was a magic master who could cast all kinds of magic, and had all kinds of treasures. His linden body was also strong, and his cultivation was higher than Wu Bi's. They both activated their strongest powers to fight the intensive battle, and they were neck and neck in this battle.

Blood sprayed out of their bodies, turning into blood-red crystals and falling to the ground. These blood crystals contained their strong spirit blood power, and therefore, a fist-sized piece of these blood crystals was as heavy as a mountain. The blood crystals smashed on the jade stage and caused thunderous bangs, about to even collapse the stage.

As the battle went on, they both got angrier. They roared in deep voices and cursed each other with the worst languages; they trod on dark clouds, rose into the sky, and tried to kill each other above the clouds.

The drifting clouds were shattered, exposing the azure sky. The golden sunlight shone upon their bodies, rimming them with beautiful golden edges. On the ground, countless human warriors raised their heads in astonishment as they watched these two strangely shaped people engaging in a fierce battle high up in the sky.

Every time their weapons clanked against each other, a strong air blast was caused, which immediately would turn into a hurricane and roar down to the earth. The tents and cottages which belonged to some small clans under Emperor Xun's command were blown away. Hides, wood, and straws flew all over the sky. The hurricane made countless warriors narrow their eyes and squat on the ground, raising their heads to look at the sky with difficulty.

Gradually, the distance between Wu Bi and Zang Yuanzi grew large. Thunderbolts flickered around Zang Yuanzi's body as he began casting a thunder magic at Wu Bi. The pure positive thunder magic was the natural destroyers of all evils. The thunder magic cast by Zang Yuanzi was much more threatening to Wu Bi than his average fighting skills.

Cold and fierce winds gusted around Wu Bi's body, and countless twisted crimson spell symbols were faintly visible in the winds. He dropped those sawtooth blades and clenched his fingers in the air. Each of his twenty-four hands gripped an evil magic tool made

from colorful bones from the space. He twisted his body and incanted a spell, prepared to cast a magic curse at Wu Bi!

Ji Hao was right beside them, hiding under the Dao of extreme negative and the sun power, watching this reasonless battle between Wu Bi and Zang Yuanzi. He was also pondering upon the argument that Wu Bi and Zang Yuanzi had before. What was the difference between 'fighting a commanders' battle' and 'making an all-out attack? And, what were the deep meanings of these? If Zang Yuanzi was a disciple of the three 'Pengs', why did he want all human elites under Emperor Xun's lead to challenge Yao Mountain City? What did the three 'Pengs' want? What could they get from this?

On the other side, Original Devil's purpose was obvious. He wanted to weaken the humankind as much as he could. He wanted as many human beings to die as possible. From the death of each human being, he could retrieve an original devil seed, and his original soul would recover a little.

Standing in Original Devil's shoes, Ji Hao clearly understood that Original Devil wanted as many people to die on the battleground as possible. For which reason, Wu Bi crazily put forward the plan of letting all warriors under Emperor Xun's command to charge to the blood sea, even to fill it up with human bodies.

'Fighting a commanders' battle' and 'making an all-out attack were two opposite extremes. By 'fighting a commanders' battle', the top-grade forces and the elites all clans which followed Emperor Xun would be consumed. In the other case, by 'making an all-out attack', the entire humankind would be consumed directly.

"Interesting...interesting...The changes of their bodies are interesting as well!" Ji Hao's strong spirit power drilled into the results of the Dao of evolvement that Priest Hua forcibly planted in his body years ago. From there, he quickly found the information about Zang Yuanzi's three-headed and eighteen-armed bodies.

This was a powerful magic that could improve the cultivator's body condition, forcibly raising the cultivators' strength, defensive power, and speed to improve the overall fighting capacity within a short span of time. At the basic level of this magic, the cultivator could have three-heads and six arms. Zang Yuanzi's three-headed and eighteen-armed shape was merely a lower-grade result of this magic. At the higher level, Zang Yuanzi should be able to have a thousand heads, a thousand eyes, and a thousand arms. Each head, eye, and arm would be incredibly powerful at that level. As for the top-level users of this magic, at the very least, each of them could have ten-thousand heads, ten-thousand arms, and ten-thousand eyes. Ji Hao found it hard to imagine how could ten-thousand arms connect with a human body and engage a fight!

On a towering mountain far away, Emperor Shun and the half-human, half-snake man stood side by side, watching the fight.

Without being noticed, the half-human, half-snake man and woman that Ji Hao once met in You Xiong City wriggled over. With extreme reverence and passion, they deeply bowed to the man beside Emperor Shun, then politely handed a black scroll to him.

"Ancestor Xi, this is the name list of all clan leaders, elders, and important clan members who are in league with the non-humankind and other intruders. Some of them are from the top-grade families which once raised human emperors, and some are from infamous small clans. The name of every human being who betrayed the humankind is included in this list."

The half-human, half-snake man turned around, took over the black scroll, and spread it slowly.

The named carved on the first jade name tag in the scroll was Wu Bi, the current leader of Chu Wu Clan. Under his name were the names of all important Chu Wu Clan members. Behind each of these names were the notes about the crimes that they had committed, including colluding with Original Devil, betraying the

human bloodline, bringing disasters to the humankind, and disturbing the whole world.

"Si Wen Ming is still working on the nine cauldrons...We shall leave the humankind to him. He will bring order out of chaos. That is also a required procedure for him to gather the human fortune."

"Chu Wu Clan people aren't human beings anymore. Then, let's do it ourselves. Destroy them first!"

Chapter 1851: Killing Each Other

Yu Meng and a few of his allies stood in the air, smiling coldly while gazing at the Pan Yu world nobles who were trapped in Ji Hao's sword formation.

Yu Huo's clone and Master Spirit-Slaughter stood outside a large tent their faces darkened as they watched countless Pan Yu world nobles running about like headless flies. These Pan Yu world nobles were trying to feel out this sword formation which sealed off the central camp area with all kinds of secret magic and treasures. However, their efforts led to no result. If the sword power hadn't been exploding against the shield above the central camp area from time to time, they would even think that nothing existed around this area at all.

The sword power that attacked every now and then was telling them that they were trapped in this hundred-miles-squared central camp area indeed. A quite brave Yu Clan young man put on a glowing golden armor and activated a secret treasure to give himself a pair of black wings. He kneeled on one knee and silently prayed to the Red Sun, which was the origin of his family's belief, then transformed his body into a black beam of light and flashed out of the central camp area.

In the next moment, this Yu Clan young man fell straight down from the sky while howling shrilly. His body was covered in sword wounds, and blood had been spurting out of his devastated body. His golden armor had been releasing eye-dazzling lightning bolts while countless metal pieces fell off it.

The Yu Clan young men fell heavily on the ground. All the others on the scene clearly heard a bone cracking noise, as the neck of this brave Yu Clan young man was broken. They didn't manage to heal him before he ran out of life-force and died right the on the spot.

The central area fell into a deathly silence. Suddenly, ear-

piercing cries could be heard. Tens of bad-tempered Jia Clan commanders lifted up a group of crying and struggling maids, then threw them out.

This group of Jia Clan commanders threw these maids out from the Eastern entrance of this area, but at the following moment, these maids' cries came from the south entrance.

All Pan Yu world nobles immediately turned to the south. They saw the tens of maids, who had sagged at knees, curled up on the ground while crying, trembling. Same as what happened to the Yu Clan young man just now, a magical power forcibly brought them back into the central camp area the moment they were thrown out. But as human beings, these maids didn't suffer any harm.

The group of Pan Yu world nobles wasn't willing to give up. They threw out all kinds of things, even including a flying mountain which floated above the central camp area and served as a watchtower. All lifeless things disappeared without a trace after being thrown out of this area. But, any Yu Clan being, Jia Clan being or Xiu Clan being who dared to walk out of this area would definitely be thrown back, covered in wounds. The ones who were protected by powerful treasures survived, but most of those people who had the courage to try were killed by the sword power in the formation and thrown back as warm corpses.

"It's Ji Hao!" Master Spirit-slaughter sneered to Yu Huo's clone, who stood by his side, and said, "This is a sword formation...Look at the dead and injured ones, look at their wounds, feel the fierce sword intent from these wounds. Only Yu Yu's disciples can cast such a powerful sword spell."

Yu Huo's clone darkened his face and sank into thoughts. "Why did he trap us in here? Hmm, to hold off and attack the reinforcements? Is he confident enough to face an all-out attack from Pan Yu world?" He said.

Master Spirit-slaughter narrowed his sparkling eyes. Yu Huo's

clone didn't know what he was thinking about.

A long, long while later, Master Spirit-slaughter said, "Whatever he wants, this is a good thing for us, right? If Pan Yu world sends reinforcements, the more people die, the more can we get, isn't that right?"

Hearing him, Yu Huo's clone hissed with laughter, "Master, you're right. As long as the war continues and enough people die, only we can make the final harvest...So, in order to stimulate those high-grade families, let's help Ji Hao finish off all these people in this camp!"

"So, we share the profits as agreed before...I get forty percent of the souls, but all the desires and emotions these people will have before they die will be mine." Master Spirit-slaughter licked his lips and responded hurriedly.

Abruptly, a wild laughter came from a distance away. A high-grade Jia Clan commander raised a three-foot-long, olive-shaped black shuttle, and said, "Is there no way out? Dear masters, please look over here. This is 'crystal wall shuttle', an inherited treasure of my Langlang Mountain Family! This is a powerful treasure, that can even penetrate the 'crystal walls' of Dao outside the natural screens of some worlds, which have special natures of Dao!"

Eyes shining with a dim, cunning light, this Jia Clan commander raised the shuttle and hollered, "One hundred people, dear masters, this shuttle can take one-hundred people away from here. Except myself, we can take ninety-nine people!"

Gasping excitedly, this Jia Clan commander smiled and continued, "We're trapped in a very, very mysterious and dangerous formation! So, we all want to leave this place as quickly as possible. But, only ninety-nine lucky ones can leave with me."

Streams of cold light shone out of the shuttle while it released sharp strands of power from both ends. The power of the shuttle even numbed the scalps of some people on the scene.

After exchanging a glance with Yu Huo's clone, Master Spirit-slaughter had a colorful, fierce light flash across his eyes. He sneered and said, "Ninety-nine people? But tens of thousands of noble masters are here! Let's fight sthen. The one who survives at last will have a chance to leave!"

The eyes of Yu Huo's clone glistened with a dim black light. As he combined his power with Master Spirit-slaughter's, an overweening evil power immediately loomed on the central camp area. The expression on the faces of Nearly a half of panicked Pan Yu world nobles changed suddenly, as they pulled out their weapons and struck at whoever stood beside them without saying a word.

The one who suffered the worst was this Jia Clan commander from Langlan Mountain Family. Tens of stronger Jia Clan warriors leaped up and vented deep growls, as tens of heavy weapons landed on his body almost at the same time. This Langlan Mountain Family Jia Clan commander was crushed directly, his blood and minced meat splashing miles away. Seven to eight large hands gripped the crystal wall shuttle simultaneously. The owners of these hands glanced at each other, then the cold lights of weapons raised a hurricane from the earth. Everyone on the scene was swirled in the blood-red hurricane.

"Fight, kill, cry, scream...then die!" Yu Huo's clone smiled and said, "They have already asked their families for help, so death is their last value!"

He excitedly took out a black crystal and laughed, "We have to record these precious images as evidence...Perfect! Hundreds of Pan Yu world families are going to become deadly enemies."

Yu Huo's clone and Master Spirit-slaughter stood in the storm of blood and laughed out loud. Outside the sword formation, Yu Meng and the other colony world nobles were dumbfounded.

"Master Yu Meng!" Silently, Human Eighteen showed up behind

Yu Meng and greeted him mildly.

Chapter 1852: Borrow A Knife, Butcher the Devils

The tens of meters tall, muscular, half-scorpion warriors bared their upper bodies and gripped heavy weapons with both hands. The half-snake warriors in luxurious soft armors carried bows on their backs and large quivers around their waists; their snake tails were colorful and scary.

The dark-skinned, beast-headed warriors were wrapped in a scorching desert power, holding all kinds of staffs and wearing golden armors. Their eyes sparkled brightly in the darkness like emeralds.

The beautiful winged creatures who had no distinct sex characters were gliding airily and silently in the sky.

The other oddly shaped non-human warriors were all armored heavily and arrayed orderly. Some of them were walking, some had mounts, and some stood on the flying forts, which had been gliding forward right above the ground...

In this dark and stormy night, a formidable non-humankind army was moving silently and speedily in the dark wilderness. The beast-headed warriors shuttled in the troops. The staffs held in their hands had been releasing bright light beams, raising strong gusts of wind.

Every warrior in this army was wrapped in a fierce gust of wind. The wind raised their speeds by tens of times, absorbing all the sounds they caused. Because of the wind, this enormous army hadn't been making even the slightest sound. Above this army, all kinds of winged warriors had been scouting around. Numberless powerful beasts which had acute senses of smell patrolled in the surroundings to kill any suspicious targets.

Yu Meng and some other colony world nobles gathered in a flying

fort. Yu Meng crossed his arms before his chest and calmly remained silent, while the others were yelling and growling at each other with blushed faces, especially the ones like Yu Hu, who hadn't attained Pan Yu blood to melt their erect eyes.

Human Eighteen found Yu Meng and made a promise to him. He said that if Yu Meng and his allies could wipe out the entire Chu Wu Clan, nine of them would be allowed to use the Praying and Sanctification altar.

Nine!

After knowing about this, all the colony world nobles from the colony alliance went crazy. They immediately asked to participate in this action. After a violent wrangle, and even a series of fight, Yu Meng finally suggested to decide who could go by drawing lots. His suggestion was accepted, and one-hundred and twenty lucky colony world nobles were selected. Including Yu Meng, one-hundred and twenty-one colony world nobles took parts in this action.

But, there was too little meat for so many wolves. A hundred and twenty colony world nobles were luckily selected for this action, but only nine of them would have the chance to become saints. On the way to Chu Wu Clan, these colony world nobles began fighting again for the nine chances.

The atmosphere was intense to an extreme degree while a fierce light shone out of these colony world nobles' eyes. The bad-tempered ones even pulled out their weapons and chopped the meeting table in the middle of this room.

Seeing an open fight was about to happen, Human Eighteen, who had been standing aside and remaining silent all this long, finally laughed and said, "Dear masters, why are you so impatient? One mere Chu Wu Clan can provide you nine chances...We have plenty of opportunities."

Before the group of colony world nobles said a word, Human

Eighteen took out a black jade slip, pointed at the names emerged from it, and said mildly, "These are the names of the strongest nine Master Elders of Chu Wu Clan, aside of the current clan leader, Wu Bi. Any of you who manage to bring back their heads will get a chance to become a saint."

Eyes sweeping across the all colony world nobles on the scene, Human Eighteen sighed, "The nine places are fixed, but we do have some small extra power. Dear Masters, apart from Wu Bi, if you can wipe out the entire Chu Wu Clan and bring us all their Magus scriptures, perhaps...we will make some extra places for you. But of course, you have to get all their secret Magus scriptures!"

Spreading his hands, Human Eighteen smiled at the group of Colony world nobles, who were gazing at him with passion, then chuckled with a soft voice, said, "Other than Chi Wu Clan, we still have many other favors to ask you, dear masters. And, you will have many chances to become saints, really."

"Many chances? How many?" Yu Hu gasped loudly and asked.

Yu Hu luckily won a place for himself and his Pan Jin world army in this action. He clearly understood that among all the colony world nobles, he was at the bottom level, and it was very difficult for him to compete fairly against the other members of the colony alliance. Therefore, he eagerly wanted to know how many chances Human Eighteen and the people behind him could provide to his friends and himself.

Human Eighteen remained silent for a while, pondering. Then, he smiled and said, "Of course, even after peace returns to our Pan Gu world, after all our enemies are gone and all human beings start living a happy and safe life...as long as you're willing to pay enough, we wouldn't mind consuming the altar's power to help you..."

Hearing him, Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles sighed in relief simultaneously.

Maintaining the warm smile on his face, Human Eighteen continued, "But of course, every time we activate the altar, the consumption would be giant. The places we're offering now are free, but if you want to pay for an extra chance, the price would be rather high. So..."

"Sure, we'll try our best to chop off the nine Master Elders' heads. Hah, no one is willing to pay a huge price, right? My brothers!" A colony world noble laughed.

The group of colony world nobles all burst into laughter. Wasn't he right? Which Yu Clan noble would be willing to pay an extra price?

This enormous army moved in the darkness of night at a scarily high speed. Under Human Eighteen's direction, the army quickly approached Senior Magus Mountain and Junior Magus Mountain. Tens of powerful colony world nobles and their trusted subordinates scattered out. They flashed across the space and sealed these two mountains off from every direction.

Before the giant Magi Gate, Yu Hu rushed out the first. As he pointed at the Pan Jin world army, thousands of tens of meters tall, metal creatures swiftly merged their bodies together and composed a six-thousand-meters-tall metal giant within a blink.

The metal giant raised a mountain and smashed it on the Magi Gate with all its strength, causing a thunderous boom.

The gate quaked, and the mountains on both sides of the gate collapsed, making large rocks fly all over the sky. The devil people who were guarding the gate were sent flying away by the rocks. Some of them even vomited blood as their bones were broken.

In the following moment, countless dark curses were cast from the gate, generating black thunderbolts which struck on the non-humankind army. The thunderbolts exploded one after another. Black sizzling thunderbolts covered the earth and burned the limbs of countless non-human warriors, even directly incinerating some.

Chapter 1853: Xing Tian Cuts the Devil

While 'enjoying' the intense battle fighting between Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi in Emperor Xun's palace, Ji Hao had been watching the entire Pan Gu Motherland with the powers of the sun and natural stars.

After all, as one of the five divine emperors, the one who was chosen by the world itself because of the measureless natural reward he earned, Ji Hao had quite a lot of privileges. He witnessed every action taken by Yu Meng and the other colony world nobles.

Those colony world nobles raised a formidable army and marched to Chu Wu Clan day and night, launching a surprise offensive. Why?

Ji Hao kept eyes on them with interests. But of course, he paid more attention to Human Eighteen. This man looked nothing like the current human beings. This might sound inappropriate, but almost every living human being looked fierce and naughty like a Chaos beast. However, Human Eighteen was so gentle and suave, just like a scholar with immense learning!

How could such a human being exist in this era?

"This kid is interesting...Is he a secret descendant of a top-grade family? Or, a 'future hope' raised by a top-secret organization? Or, a disciple of a mysterious, powerful being?" Ji Has narrowed his eyes, guessing Human Eighteen's background while watching Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi's battle.

Ji Hao pondered for quite a while but failed to come to a conclusion. The power he sensed from Human Eighteen wasn't strong, but was very special. In Ji Hao's eyes, Human Eighteen was surrounded by a faint layer of mist, that he couldn't get any information from what he said or did to make good guesses about the latter's background.

"Ji Hao, don't doubt Human Eighteen. He truly is one of us." A gentle yet imperial voice suddenly echoed by Ji Hao's years. "As the successor of East Emperor Taiyi's throne, you should have seen Yu Meng and his people' moves. Chu Wu Clan is a cancer of the humankind, so we are uprooting it...Later, our people will attack Wu Bi. Can you cooperate with them to kill him?"

A tremor went through Ji Hao's body. He was a powerful being, and a master of the great Dao of extreme negative and the great Dao of sun. He had covered his body with the Dao of extreme negative and covered his traces with the sunlight, also twisting the space with his divine emperor power. How could any ordinary being discover him?

He raised his head and saw the smiling Emperor Shun and a majestic-looking half-human, half-snake man standing side by side under a towering tree on top of a mountain.

"I... am Fuxi!" The half-snake man smiled and nodded at Ji Hao. Behind him, a black and white mist rose and gradually became a profound pre-world Taiji pattern. It released a mysterious power that covered the entire mountain. Ji Hao clearly 'saw' Emperor Shun and this man, but he couldn't feel them.

This was a very strange and uncomfortable feeling. Fuxi and Emperor Shun were right there, but all of Ji Hao's sensations, including his physical eyes, had been clearly telling him that that area was completely empty.

What a terrifying power! What a magical power!

With shock, Ji Hao realized that Fuxi had a much deeper understanding of the great Dao of nature than he did. He even felt that even Priest Tong Jiong, who he met in Feng Dao Mount, was far weaker than Fuxi.

The only explanation for this could be that Fuxi had already stepped into the supreme, measureless world of 'saints'!

Looking at the smiling Fuxi and Emperor Shun, who was grinning, filled with a positive power and without any dark energy left inside his body, Ji Hao suddenly felt relieved. He smiled too, and made a long and deep bow to Fuxi from hundreds of meters away with reverence.

Ji Hao had a feeling that this wasn't a clone of Fuxi, but instead, this was the real him!

Fuxi left Pan Gu world countless years ago, but now, he had returned!

In addition, Human Eighteen was under his lead!

And, Human Eighteen knew Yu Meng!

And, driven by interests, Yu Meng and the other colony world nobles were commanded by Human Eighteen so easily!

Ji Hao felt so relieved. He filled his face up with a bright smile while looking at Fuxi and Emperor Shun. He didn't say a word, but both Fuxi and Emperor Shun heard him complaining, 'Good, since you old people have returned, the heavy burdens on our shoulders can be eased! Ahyaya, you old foxes, what on earth have you been planning?"

Fuxi smiled warmly. His gentle voice again echoed by Ji Hao's ears, "If a man has a sore, we need to wait until it emerges on the skin, then cut it off entirely. Then, we cover the wound with medicine, treat the patient with decoction, and let him rest and recover...Cutting the sore will cause bleeding and pain, and will leave ugly scars on the skin. But, the man can only be healthy again when it is cut off!"

"We are facing all kinds of enemies. We can defeat all the enemies only after we have regained our health and restored our strength." Fuxi smilingly nodded at Ji Hao and asked, "Ji Hao, am I right?"

Ji Hao pondered briefly, then smiled and nodded.

Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi both released their true fires. They flew

up to the higher sky as their bodies swelled to tens of thousands of meters tall, and fought madly in the sky like two giants. Thunderbolts dazzled through the sky along with raging fires. Their bodies were both covered in wounds, and their blood was pouring down.

This battle had lasted for days. Their powers had been weakened largely, and even their eyes were slightly unfocused.

Right at this moment, Ji Hao heard a deafening swishing noise, coming closer and closer. He immediately raised his head and saw a burning meteor emerging from the highest sky, diving straight down from the sky as it left a tens of miles long streak of raging flame in the air.

In a moment, this meteor reached about a hundred miles from the palace from billions of miles away.

Inside the burning meteor, a headless giant wielded a shield with one hand and carried a giant axe with the other. He used his nipples as eyes and bellybutton as mouth. He widely opened his mouth and gave a thunderous roar.

"Xin-Xing Tian!" Ji Hao suddenly recalled the giant figure he saw back when he entered the Chaos the first time with the golden bridge!

"Xing Tian!" The headless giant roared. From tens of miles away, he swung his battle axe at Wu Bi and sent out an arc-shaped beam of cold light. The light struck violently on Wu Bi's body, which was thousands of meters tall at the moment.

Following a shrill howl, one head and nine arms of Wu Bi were cut off.

"Haha!" Zang Yuanzi seized the opportunity and penetrated Wu Bi's chest with six longswords.

Chapter 1854: Kill the Devil Together

Xing Tian lost a battle, yet he was still wielding the shield and axe; his strong will would never fade!

When Xing Tian's battle axe descended, Ji Hao heard thunder bursting right by his ears and saw countless warriors who were covered in blood and had lost their limbs. He saw those warriors standing right before his face, wielding their weapons and roaring with all their strength.

A scorching, strong smell of blood mixed with the smell of burning metals came at Ji Hao's face. Tremendous spirit blood power waves swept across the space like a tsunami, and Ji Hao felt that his body was burning. Even his embryo of Dao, which hid deep inside his spiritual space, trembled because of the overwhelming spirit blood power waves.

Ji Hao had grown an embryo of Dao and begun learning about the great Dao of nature. His body had already started merging with the great Dao, which meant he had stepped into a basic level of the 'unity of nature and man'. But, despite his power, his embryo of Dao was shaken by Xing Tian's spirit blood power. If he were weaker, his primordial spirit might have been destroyed by Xing Tian's power, and his cultivation might have been obliterated!

Xing Tian was such a dreadful being. As the legend stated, he was the strongest god of war back in the ancient time.

Wu Bi burst into raging howls. Zang Yuanzi seized the chance and planted his six swords in Wu Bi's chest. Blood splashed as Wu Bi's body wriggled like a beheaded poisonous snake. His arms twitched and fingers locked together as he tremblingly cast an evil spell while cursing with wrath.

Xing Tian raised his battle axe again, aimed at Wu Bi's other heads, and launched another strike. Wu Bi barely managed to dodge.

Crack!

Another head of his was chopped off by Xing Tian. The last head screamed in pain while the chopped head transformed into a cloud of dark mist and flew back to his body.

Ji Hao showed his face suddenly. He gave a bright shout, rubbed his hands, and cast the thunder magic he learned from Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu. Thunderbolts struck down on Wu Bi like a thunderstorm.

Golden, purple, green, the water-tank-sized thunderbolts exploded deafeningly. Fiery lights shone out of the thunderbolts and filled the world up with a pure, positive thunder power. A strong ozone smell spread in the air.

After absorbing the spring from the living calabash, Ji Hao's current power was as pure as the powers of saints. In terms of quantity, the total amount of his power equaled to the amount a saint could attain through tens of billions of years of severe cultivation. Just then, he cast the thunder magic with his full power. Every bolt of thunder he created was crystalline, containing an extremely pure thunder power; his thunder magics were now twice as powerful as before.

Following a series of sizzling noise, thunderbolts wrapped up Wu Bi and his chopped heads and arms. The thunderbolts exploded dazzlingly as lava-like electric currents surged in the space like rapidly flowing rivers.

The strong and violent electric currents tore apart the space like sharp swords, then twisted and nearly collapsed the sky, also quaking the earth. The aftermath of the explosion of one thunderbolt broke Emperor Xun's palace and tore down the jade stage. Emperor Xun and a group of Gong Sun Family elders and clan leaders all fell to the ground.

The sky was suddenly illuminated as the thunderbolts emitted an eye-piercing light.

Wu Bi's heads and arms which were chopped off by Xing Tian vanished under Ji Hao's thunder magic, without leaving any trace. Wu Bi lost these body parts forever. He was able to regrow his body from a single drop of blood and cast all kinds of evil, powerful magic, but he could no longer retrieve the spirit blood power contained in his lost body parts.

"Ji Hao!" Wu Bi turned around and screamed at Ji Hao.

With shock, Zang Yuanzi pulled out his sword from Wu Bi's body, then ran straight away. Ji Hao brought another wave of thunderbolts down from the sky and enveloped Zang Yuanzi. Zang Yuanzi ran fast, but still, a bolt of thunder struck right on his head.

Along with a thunder blast, one head and six arms of his were blown into pieces. The violent thunder power immediately destroyed that head and six arms, as electric currents even drilled into his body to hurt him brutally.

As same as Wu Bi, Zang Yuanzi burst into thunderous roars with both rage and shock. He glanced at Ji Hao, eyes filled with hatred, then turned around and fled to his brothers at his highest speed. No matter how angry he was, he wasn't stupid enough to stay around Xing Tian, who showed up so suddenly...Zang Yuanzi was deeply confused at the moment — Xing Tian? He had disappeared for countless years. Why was he here?

Clearly, Xing Tian was aiming at Wu Bi...Ji Hao suddenly showed up too, also targeting Wu Bi!

Were Xing Tian and Ji Hao on the same side?

Zang Yuanzi was confused so badly that he just couldn't figure out what was really happening. His few brothers transformed into long streaks of light that flew into the sky and quickly formed a small formation to protect Zang Yuanzi.

The few Chu Wu Clan elders who followed Wu Bi here roared hoarsely, transformed into devil shapes, and rose into the sky,

raising dense dark clouds and raging dark flames. While cursing loudly, they flew towards Ji Hao. From a long distance away, they pointed their fingers at Ji Hao and sent rolling black and red clouds that wrapped countless flying daggers and blades, striking at Ji Hao.

Ji Hao pointed back at them. Following his moves, the invisible and traceless pre-world magnetic force field immediately covered this area. Wu Bi's giant body paused instantly, as the magnetic force field wrapped him up and disabled him from moving, no matter how hard he struggled. He had no choice but to watch Xing Tian swing the battle axe again towards his head.

The few Chu Wu Clan elders sent a giant number of flying daggers and blades towards Ji Hao. These flying weapons, which were made from essence metals and evil magic, flew into Ji Hao's magnetic forcefield, then all buzzed slightly and clanked against each other like drunk people. These weapons swished across the air over and over again, yet none of them managed to approach Ji Hao.

Along with a sizzling noise, Xing Tian roared thunderously while his battle axe landed on Wu Bi's last head. Wu Bi gave vent to a shrill howl while being cut into two pieces by Xing Tian's battle axe. Bundles of muscle fibers suddenly grew out of his two body parts and entangled each other, attempting to pull the two pieces of body back together.

"Harder!" Xing Tian shouted in a muffled voice while wielding his shield hard. The large shield immediately expanded and turned tens of thousands of meters wide as it fell on the few Chu Wu Family elders.

Seven to eight devil elders vomited blood simultaneously as their bodies were flattened like pancakes. With blood spurting out from every corner of their bodies, they were sent flying backward.

Ji Hao gave a long and resonant growl, then pointed at the sky.

In the sky, the sun dazzled suddenly. The entire Pan Gu Motherland again fell into darkness while a ten-thousand-meters-thick golden beam of light descended from the sun and landed on Wu Bi's body.

Chapter 1855: Wild Xing Tian

Pure essence sun fire was the natural destroyer of all evils.

Under the golden light, Wu Bi's blood and flesh melted immediately, Streams of black liquid spurted out of his body and evaporated into clouds of black mist that spread in all directions. Divine Magi could regrow their bodies from blood drops; Wu Bi had become a devil and grown more powerful. If a wisp of this black mist escaped, he would be able to devour the spirit blood of other living beings to regrow his body.

"You can't run!" Ji Hao laughed out wildly. The scorching golden light locked on the black mist, then he pointed at the Pan Gu bell. The bell released a vast Chaos power while rising into the sky. The bell ring echoed throughout the whole world as the Chaos power sealed the surrounding space off with the pre-world magnetic force field.

The large clouds of black mist were frozen in the air, disabled from moving. The hair-thin wisps of mist had been darting desperately in the air, but still couldn't run away from Ji Hao's control. Wu Bi's raging and hopeless screams could be heard from the mist, along with all kinds of beast roars and human cries. Suddenly, countless twisted faces emerged from the dark mist.

"Ji Hao kid, do not push this too far!" From the dark mist, Wu Bi's face suddenly rose with his teeth bared while cursing Ji Hao, "Devil Master will not spare your life! If you hurt me today, in the future..."

Ji Hao didn't want to listen, so he shook his wrist and sent a bolt of thunder towards Wu Bi.

'Crack'!

The thunder flames surged and vanished a cloud of dark mist. Wu Bi's shrieks grew even shriller from the surrounding black

mist, "Ji Hao! I'll remember you! I'll remember you! Devil Master, help! Help!"

The air quaked abruptly as a hundred-miles-wide, giant black hole suddenly appeared above Ji Hao's head. An enormous hand reached out of the black hole, straight towards the black mist.

If one looked carefully, one would find numberless twisted human faces inside this enormous black hand. Every single black hair on this hand was composed of countless connected human bodies. A strong hatred could be sensed from this black hand. When it was still hundreds of miles away from Ji Hao, Ji Hao already felt like being soaked in a sewer, in dirty blood, and all his internal organs were twitching.

The overwhelming evil power came straight at Ji Hao. Ji Hao felt like he was being choked, that even the bright glow of this embryo of Dao was dimmed slightly. This was the power of Original Devil; this was the evilest, dirtiest power of Pan Gu world, also the origin of all the 'evils in this world, and the most extreme and dreadful power in Pan Gu world.

"Original Devil!" Ji Hao took a deep breath and punched on the Pan Gu bell as quickly as he could. A bell ring quaked the space while the strong Chaos power condensed into beams of warm light that covered Ji Hao's body. They firmly protected him from the evil power which was coming from every direction.

Next, Ji Hao patted the back of his head and released a bright light, as well as the golden, shining mill of Dao, which was wrapped in a purple mist. Behind Ji Hao's head, the two parts of the mill which were created from the great Dao of destruction and creation spun in two opposite directions and generated a magical devouring power that quickly dragged the evil power released from the giant black hand in.

Even the evilest and dirtiest power of Pan Gu world could be destroyed, as long as it 'existed'!

Ji Hao activated the mill of Dao with all his strength. The millstone of the Dao of destruction sparkled with a black light and ground the evil power, turning it into the purest original power of Pan Gu world for Ji Hao to absorb.

The suppression that had been given to Ji Hao's embryo of Dao by Original Devil was immediately gone as Ji Hao was under the protection of the golden light and purple mist of the mill of Dao, which was generated from a measureless natural reward power.

"It is impolite not to reciprocate. Original Devil, take this!" Ji Hao gave a bright shout and pointed at the giant black hand. Following his moves, the sunlight, which covered the entire Pan Gu Motherland, suddenly concentrated to a hair-thin golden light beam. Ji Hao then threw out the Pan Gu sword and let the golden light land on the sword tip.

Clank!

The Pan Gu sword transformed into a tremendous golden streak of light and lunged out.

The sun power was the strongest evil destroyer in this world. The Pan Gu sword had merged with the Pan Gu axe, and could be counted as the strongest weapon in the world.

Ji Hao pointed at the sword light and concentrated his spirit power on the giant black hand which descended from the sky. He launched the sky-opening move and discovered the nearly undetectable weakness of the giant black hand.

"Break!" Ji Hao growled and made this sword move with all his power.

The golden sword light rolled in the air and struck straight at the giant black hand. Along with a series of puffing noise, the giant hand was split up from the tip of its middle finger to the end of elbow. Clouds of dark mist spurted out of this giant hand, but a golden flame immediately set the dark mist on fire.

"Ji Hao kid!" Ji Hao heard a deep, hoarse, emotionless voice from the black hole in the sky, "I have important things to do, and cannot deal with you myself...I will make you pay for this sword strike!"

Ji Hao sneered and sent all his power into the Pan Gu sword, letting the sword light cover the entire sky. Beams of sword light struck at the dark giant hand and shredded it. Original Devil howled in pain as wisps of dark mist flew all over the sky, only to be set on fire by the sun power.

"Master, help!" From Wu Bi's black mist, Wu Bi screamed with a dry voice.

Original Devil remained silent for a while, then the black hole in the sky slowly disappeared. "Trash, you are not worth saving." Original Devil said coldly.

Wu Bi howled with desperation. He cried and begged, but Original Devil showed no mercy.

Ji Hao raised the Pan Gu sword and swung at Wu Bi's dark mist. Along with a shrill shriek, the dark mist was wiped out by the sword.

"Thud!"

As Ji Hao killed Wu Bi for good, Xing Tian landed heavily on the ground, like a meteor. He stooped down, and coldly stared at Emperor Xun and the group of Gong Sun Family elders, who had just crawled out of the collapsed jade stage, with the pair of nipple-eyes.

"Human emperor?" Before Emperor Xun, the group of elders, and clan leaders said a word, Xing Tian burst into raging roars, "You're not even as good as animals. How dare you usurp the throne? If a scum like you can be the emperor, where is the hope of our humankind?"

Xing Tian was roaring, and while doing that, this violent and

wild warrior abruptly dropped his shield and battle axe, untied his armor skirt, took out his strong p*nis, and took a leak. His urine poured down like a waterfall.

Following the sound of water gushing, the urine collapsed the entire palace and sent Emperor Xun and the group of Gong Sun Family elders tens of miles away!

"Wow!" In shock, Ji Hao looked at Xing Tian and said, "I like this guy!"

Chapter 1856: Keep Quite Out of Fear

He was wild and rude and unruly. He was Xing Tian, who had the courage to swung his battle axe at divine emperors back in the ancient time!

Emperor Xun and the group of elders were sent tens of miles away by the 'flood'. On the way, all tents and barracks were destroyed, while countless supplies and a great amount of food were soaked by this stinky 'flood'; a heavy loss was caused.

Before Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi started fighting, Emperor Xun was already drunk, and could barely control his body. While being swirled away by the 'flood', Emperor Xun desperately reached his hands out to grasp anything that could be grasped, and widely opened his mouth to cry for help. Accidentally, he drank a couple of mouthfuls of the warm 'flood' that Xing Tian released.

Finally, the 'flood' flushed into the nearby rivers, and Emperor Xun was held up by a few Gong Sun Family guards from the mud. He shook his head hard, then began vomiting. The best wine, the delicate dishes, the fresh fruits, he threw up everything in his stomach, even including the food he ate three days ago.

He couldn't stop vomiting. After his stomach was emptied, he threw the green bile up. But, he still couldn't stop vomiting. While retching, he kept sensing the horrible smell from his own body, and recalling the large mouthfuls of urine that he swallowed when he was struggling in the 'flood'. He wanted to die right now!

Not to mention the fact that he had gotten used to an extravagant life as the human emperor, even back when he was still an unimpressive Gong Sun Family member, he was a child who wore good clothes and whose hands were always clean.

But at the moment, he was drenched with somebody's urine, and he even...

"Kill him! Kill him! Kill him!" Emperor Xun's eyes turned red as he raised his head. Wisps of wet hair stuck on his face, dripping, and the pungent smell lingered just around his nose. Emperor Xun leaped up and pointed at Xing Tian as he screamed hysterically, "Anyone who kills him can be an earl, a marquis...You can have anything you want!"

The group of Gong Sun Family elders were stunned by Xing Tian as well. They stood there like startled gooses, without knowing what to do as they looked at Xing Tian in panic and confusion. They looked at his enormous body, the pair of eyes on his chest, and the giant mouth on his belly!

The tens of thousands of meters tall Xing Tian rested his hands on his waist and stood sturdily on the ground like a mountain. He stooped and looked at Emperor Xun and his people, unable to help but laugh out wildly. His laughter quaked the moisture in the air and raised strands of mist along his body, forming a blood-red cloud above his head.

Ji Hao released his spirit power and scanned across Xing Tian's body with curiosity.

How on earth did he do that? His head was cut off, yet he turned his nipples into eyes and bellybutton into a mouth? He could think, move, and even fight people... And he was so powerful! How did he do that?

As his spirit power swept across Xing Tian's eyes and mouth, Ji Hao widened his eyes in shock.

Xing Tian's eyes were two beads which were pre-world spirit treasures, containing pre-world powers of Yin and Yang. The powers of this pair of beads weren't as great as the extreme negative power and the sun power, but were highly concentrated and filled with the power of creation.

Xing Tian's mouth was a large black cauldron, which had a terrifying devouring power. This cauldron had been absorbing the

surrounding natural powers and turning them into spirit blood energies to replenish himself. Therefore, even though Xing Tian didn't have a head and couldn't eat, his body was still capable of producing spirit blood and strengthening itself.

Most importantly, Xing Tian had a high-grade dragon pearl in his heart!

A dragon pearl contained all the soul power and spirit power of a dragon. Dragons inherited Saint Pan Gu's strong body, but their souls were pitifully weak. Logically speaking, they shouldn't be able to control their strong bodies with their weak souls. But nature was magical. Dragons had weak souls, but each of them was born with a dragon pearl. The dragon pearl concentrated all the soul power and spirit power of a dragon, and also contained a vast, magical power. Dragons controlled their strong bodies through dragon pearls. A dragon pearl to a dragon was like the three souls and seven spirits to a human being!

The dragon pearl in Xing Tian's heart was as powerful as the dragon pearl of an ancient dragon emperor. His three souls and seven spirits had merged with the dragon pearl, hidden deep in his heart to control his entire body. Beyond this, after merging with the dragon pearl, his heart became especially strong, and had been providing his body with an even more thriving life-force.

Therefore, apart from the fact that Xing Tian didn't have a head and looked quite scary, his body was functioning as well as the bodies of the other human beings, and was even stronger and healthier.

Tens of miles away, Emperor Xun was still pointing at Xing Tian while yelling and shouting. The group of Gong Sun Family elders and clan leaders all remained silent while looking at Xing Tian with weird expressions.

Xing Tian was a powerful being who existed in ancient legends!

According to the legends, Xing Tian felt that divine emperors

hadn't been treating the humankind fairly. Therefore, he marched into the heaven with his battle axe and launched a fierce offensive all alone. In that battle, over ten-thousand divine gods and a million divine warriors died under Xing Tian's axe. The five divine emperors encircled him and attempted to kill him, but he injured three of them. At last, he was exhausted, and the Central Emperor cut off his head.

After that, he forcibly absorbed the essence natural powers from the heaven, turned his nipples into eyes and bellybutton into a mouth, then continued fighting. In the end, he was wounded severely by the divine heaven and earth formation, but didn't die. He carried his battle axe and jumped down from Buzhou Mountain. Except for his lost head, he escaped almost unscathed!

Since the beginning of the world, Xing Tian was the only one who managed to challenge the heaven alone and survive!

No one knew where he disappeared. But in the Western Wasteland, Xing Tian was the spirit totem of at least a thousand large clans. Hundreds of large clans took his name as their family name and worshipped him as their ancestor!

Now, this fierce warrior had returned to Pan Gu world from Chaos...Had he been traveling in the Chaos all these years?

Who would dare to offend such an intimidating, powerful being?

"Emperor Xun is a kid. He knows nothing. This is Xing Tian...Let's not offend him and just agree with whatever he says, shall we?" All elders and clan leaders who had heard about Xing Tian's name remained silent. They blinked their eyes and didn't respond to Emperor Xun's orders.

"Go! Go! Whoever kills this guy will be awarded!" Emperor Xun screamed shrilly, "Why aren't you doing anything? How dare you disobey my order? I am the human emperor! I am Emperor Xun!"

The broad camp was quiet. Even the bravest and most combative

warriors had now lowered their heads with respect, daring not to say a word.

Chapter 1857: The Devil Moves All Living Beings

As Ji Hao waved his hands, the sunlight immediately illuminated the sky. Treading on a fiery cloud, he smilingly descended and landed before Xing Tian's 'face'.

Looking at the giant mouth on Xing Tian's belly, Ji Hao felt so strange, as it felt too weird to talk to a 'face' like this. But, this was Xing Tian, the legendary warrior. Ji Hao grinned and cupped his hands as he bowed deeply to Xing Tian and said, "Elder Xing Tian, I am Ji Hao. It's a pleasure to meet you!"

Ji Hao was wearing a divine emperor robe. The embroidered robe glowed brightly. Following Ji Hao's moves, the light of the robe shone through the space and seemed to connect with the entire world. Any relatively knowledgeable person could recognize this divine emperor's robe at first glance and figure out who Ji Hao was.

"A divine emperor?" Xing Tian murmured with a muffled voice. Next, his bones bumped against each other and caused a series of noises that sounded like dragon roars. Following the noise, his body shrank slowly, until he was about fifteen meters tall.

Crossing his arms around his chest, Xing Tian stared at Ji Hao with the pair of eyes on his chest in an unfriendly way, then said with a dry and cold voice, "I don't talk to divine emperors...You b*stards stand high above the whole world, never knowing about the pains in the moral world. You're a bunch of greedy scums...Pah!"

Abruptly, Xing Tian opened his mouth and spat at Ji Hao.

What a bad-tempered old man!. He 'flooded' Emperor Xun, that was fine, but he spat at Ji Hao!

Ji Hao dodged that giant stream of saliva with a bitter smile.

"Elder, you misunderstood me. I am also a human being from the Gold Crow Clan in Southern Wasteland. I'm not like those natural divine gods!" Said Ji Hao, also with a dry voice.

"Eh?" Xing Tian paused in surprise. He immediately stooped down and fixed one large eye on Ji Hao, looking at him from head to toe. Next, he burst into laughter and slapped on Ji Hao's shoulder.

Thud!

An air blast burst from between his palm and Ji Hao's shoulder and formed a hurricane that swept across a hundred miles and blew countless people down.

"Haha! You're a good human boy! Good! Good! Good!" Xing Tian clicked his tongue and said, "Did those scums in the heaven all die? Otherwise, how can our human boy possibly become a divine emperor? Hah, like I said, one day, we will turn the heaven upside down, replace the five divine emperors, and make our human heroes the gods of all natural stars!"

He slightly upturned his belly, seeming to gaze into the sky while sighing loudly and continuing, "If the king of every natural star is a human hero...If our Supreme Magi replace all the star kings, we will become the owners of Pan Gu world...If gods go against us, we kill gods; if ghosts hinder us, we kill ghosts; even saints..."

Ji Hao coughed out loud and raised a finger, sending a strand of magnetic power to Xing Tian. The magnetic power wrapped a stream of air and sealed Xing Tian's mouth. Xing Tian had a giant mouth, and he did have the courage to say anything.

'If gods go against us, we kill gods; if ghosts hinder us, we kill ghosts', that was alright. But rivaling saints...? Cold sweat oozed out of Ji Hao's back. How could humankind ever rival saints before seven to eight human saints emerged?

One might think about rivaling against saints, but one should

never say it!

Xing Tian's mouth was sealed suddenly. He mumbled, staring at Ji Hao for a while, then angrily slapped on Ji Hao's shoulder again. Next, he puffed his belly and laughed out loud.

Xing Tian's laughter was filled with happiness and delight, even tearing the clouds in the sky into thin shreds.

Tens of miles away, Emperor Xun was still barking like a mad dog. He threw his arms up and stomped his feet as he pointed at Xing Tian and Ji Hao, then snarled, "Go! You bloody scums! Kill that headless monster! Kill Ji Hao...Kill them! I'll give you women, territories, money; I'll give you whatever you want after you kill them!"

Still, no one responded, including Zang Yuanzi and his few brothers, even including the few Chi Wu Clan elders who followed Wu Bi here.

The power difference was way too huge. Xing Tian was a powerful being from the ancient world. He lived in an uncivilized and wild era, when the prehistorical era had just ended. He got famous in those savage years, that people called him 'god of battle'. His power was obvious.

So many years had passed, and Xing Tian had been growing stronger. He flooded Emperor Xun and his people away with piss, but not even those powerful Gong Sun Family elders managed to stop him. Exactly how strong was he?

Emperor Xun's eyes suddenly turned dark. Wisps of dark mist rose from his head as he laughed in a strange voice. He turned around, gripped a small clan leader behind him, and yelled, "Original Devil, I know you can hear me...They killed Wu Bi. Aren't you angry about that at all? I know you can do it. Go, kill him!"

Emperor Xun shouted, "Go, kill the headless monster! He's so

strong. If you turn him into a devil..."

Before Emperor Xun finished, three-feet-long streaks of flame spurted out of the clan leader's eyes. At the same time, the few Chu Wu Clan elders took out black bone bugles and blew shrilly towards the sky.

Sharp howls could be heard from tens of thousands of miles away, sounding like cries. Black mist suddenly rose from the bodies of countless human warriors in this camp. These warriors raised their heads as their eyes burned with a devil fire while looking at Ji Hao and Xing Tian.

"Kill!" An Eastern Wasteland commander roared resonantly. He hopped on the back of his mount, which was a golden-wing cloud roc, and patted its head. The roc screamed and flapped its wings to rise, transforming into a beam of light as it lunged towards Xing Tian.

Eastern Wasteland archers were the nimblest human warriors. They hopped on the backs of their flying mounts and flew up wave by wave, composing numerous battle formations to support each other while approaching Xing Tian.

From over a hundred miles away, they pulled open their longbows and shot countless arrows at Xing Tian. The arrows penetrated the air and caused high-pitched noise while flying at Xing Tian.

Tens of small clan leaders leaped up and shrieked with laughter in the sky, "Xing Tian? While I was busy, you killed my people. Hehe, you killed Wu Bi mercilessly. Now, let's see if you have the heart to...kill these...pure human beings."

The arrows descended while numberless Eastern Wasteland warriors charged at Xing Tian.

Chapter 1858: The Three ‘Pengs’ Against The Original Devil

Countless human warriors charged at Xing Tian. They were all the elites of their clans!

The Pan Gu bell floated above Ji Hao's head and released streams of Chaos power to defend Ji Hao against the arrows. Xing Tian let the arrows land on his body as a blood-red mist had been flowing on his skin. Every arrow was shredded the moment it touched the blood mist, whether it was an explosive arrow or a penetrative one, or with other evil powers.

"Can't fight them, can't touch them!" Ji Hao looked at those human warriors with a frown. In the sky, the Eastern Wasteland warriors mounted on flying beasts, swooshing towards him and Xing Tian, while on the ground, heavily armored warriors approached with rumbling steps like a tide.

Xing Tian snorted coldly. He clenched the handle of his battle axe and slightly raised his hand, but eventually restrained his intent of killing, "Retreat...I, Xing Tian, cannot face human boys with my axe! Not matter how...disappointing they are!"

Xing Tian gave a bright shout as his entire body glowed with a fiery light. He transformed into a fiery meteor and rose into the sky, flashing through the space and reaching the highest sky within a blink. Next, he roared towards the sky as loudly as he could. His thunderous voice came down to the earth and threw numberless Eastern Wasteland warriors down from the backs of their flying mounts.

Xing Tian had flown to the highest sky. These human warriors couldn't possibly rise as high as he did to attack him. Xing Tian looked like a violent, rude man, but he avoided a conflict with these human warriors smartly and directly.

Ji Hao dealt with the situation in a simpler way. He stayed midair, about three-hundred meters higher than the ground, and shielded his entire body with the Pan Gu bell, covering the surrounding area with a strong magnetic force field. Anyone who approached this area would be thrown out by a strong invisible force.

The first human warrior who approached Ji Hao was thrown out, then the ten-thousand behind him flew out as well. Countless warriors charged at Ji Hao while roaring in rage, but all of them were thrown far away.

These human warriors, whose eyes were burning with the fire of devil, looked at Ji Hao in confusion. Ji Hao was unassailable. They couldn't even approach him.

Among these warriors, some Maguspriests cast spells and attempted to curse Ji Hao to death. But, no magic curse delivered any effect. The mill of Dao spun slowly behind Ji Hao's head and swallowed all the magic curses, turning them into strands of natural powers to nourish him.

"Hehe, hehe... Good, good, good!" Original Devil's deep and hoarse voice came from the air, "Good, you didn't only kill Wu Bi, you also wiped out the entire Chu Wu Clan. Good, very good! Those Chu Wu kids were the roots of my devil-kind. I valued them! You murdered them, then..."

In the air and on the ground, all human warriors who had the devil fire in their eyes, who were controlled by the devil seeds in their hearts, raised their weapons to cut their own throats.

On top of the mountain, Fuxi and Emperor Shun frowned slightly, then sighed while shaking heads.

In midair, Ji Hao stared at these human warriors who were about to commit suicide together with shock. Every human being had a devil seed in his or her heart. Did that mean Original Devil could make every human being commit suicide?

As millions of human warriors were going to kill themselves right on the spot, suddenly, they all paused. Pale-white light beams shone out of their foreheads, hearts, and lower abdomen simultaneously.

From the white light that shone on each human warrior, a tiny figure emerged. The slim and tiny figures quietly sat in the white lights with their legs crossed. They were translucent like shadows, yet a very strange power could be sensed from them. When they showed up, the whole world seemed to be stirred.

Desires, happiness, anger, sadness, delight, all kinds of extremely complicated emotions spread from these human warriors' bodies. These emotions waves were weak, but seemed to never end. Wave after wave, the complicated emotions covered the entire Pan Gu world in a moment.

The sky, the earth, oceans, every grass blade, every gust of wind, every grain of sand...Every single thing in this world was affected by the strange emotion waves. Except for the ones like Ji Hao who were protected by powerful treasures, all living beings and their souls were submerged in emotions, and were stirred along with the subtle emotion waves.

The sky was undulating, and so was the earth, the oceans, and every other thing in the world.

Ji Hao trembled intensely. This power... Through these strange emotion waves, the tiny figures in the white lights almost affected the whole Pan Gu world. Ji Hao released his spirit power to feel the Dao of nature, and he clearly felt that the great Dao of Pan Gu world was also stirred by the emotion waves.

The entire great Dao of Pan Gu world and all the natural laws were undulating.

The sunlight waved like water, the natural stars swayed slightly, and even the never-changing star orbits were disordered. Some mysterious and measureless natural laws, such as reincarnation,

seasons...All these imperceptible natural laws began changing as well.

Before, the Pan Gu world was like an ink painting. But suddenly, someone poured a bowl of gruel that was made from emotions and desires on this large painting. The clear painting was blurred, entirely covered by gruel.

No one but the people who made the gruel could easily see the painting again!

As the world undulated more and more intensely, Ji Hao felt it was harder and harder for him to understand the great Dao of nature. He had already learned quite some essence about the great Dao of Destruction and Creation, as well as the extreme negative and the sun. But now, it seemed like a membrane appeared between him and all these Dao, disabling him from borrowing the powers of the great Dao!

"Like I said before, only the pure power that belongs to you is the true power." From Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man could be heard.

A tremor went through Ji Hao's body. He wanted to ask the mysterious man some questions, but the millions of warriors who were controlled by Original Devil to attempt suicide but then were stopped by the tiny figures in the white lights, burst into raging roars in one voice, "Pengs! How dare you hinder me?"

A soft, weak voice spread in the air, "In order to free yourself, you have to slaughter all human beings...If all human beings died, how would we continue to learn about the great Dao? How would we control Pan Gu world?"

Ji Hao was stunned. Finally, he understood the irreconcilable conflict that existed between Original Devil and the three 'Pengs'.

No wonder Zang Yuanzi and Wu Bi argued upon 'fighting a commanders' battle' or 'launching an all-out attack'. All their

thoughts came from the three 'Pengs' and Original Devil!

Chapter 1859: Old Stories

Wisps of dark fire rose from the bodies of countless human warriors as Original Devil's voice echoed through the clouds, "Pengs, that year, if you didn't stab me in the back, how could my soul ever be shattered by Priest Jun and his disciples? How could I ever be sealed inside human bodies? Finally, the human hearts were shaken. Nourished by their evil thoughts, my seeds grew strong, and earned a chance of freedom. But, why are you hindering me again?"

Pan Gu Motherland suddenly turned black and red as an enormous face emerged from the thick clouds. Original Devil consumed a giant amount of power to show his face and roar at the entire Pan Gu world with an extreme rage, "I swear with the name of Pan Gu...Pengs, I will destroy your souls. I will make you disappear."

"Disappear?" Said that weak and soft voice, "You don't even know if we have souls or not. You don't even know who we are. Destroy our souls? How can you even say that?"

Pengs laughed scornfully, then continued in a bland tone, "Alright, why would we waste time talking to you? You are a descendant of Pan Gu...But, you are a trash abandoned by Pan Gu. Except the name of Pan Gu's descendant, what else do you have that can be valued?"

"Three b*stards, you..." Original Devil widely opened his mouth, prepared to give vent to a torrent of abuse.

From the bodies of the human warriors who were controlled by Original Devil and the three 'Pengs', soft streams of white light spiraled up at the same time, rising into the sky and merging into a vast glowing cloud. The cloud was rolling, while a giant hand emerged from it and pointed at Original devil.

The moment this finger strike was made, the entire world, as

well as the entire great Dao of Pan Gu world quaked. An indescribable, original power of Pan Gu world supported this finger strike as the finger landed heavily on Original Devil's face.

Following a furious roar, Original Devil's face collapsed. The black and red clouds in the sky faded quickly, and the devil fire in the eyes of the human warriors dimmed. Soon, those eyes were clear again.

Confusedly, these warriors looked at their weapons, which were gripped in their hands and put right against their necks. Some of them even accidentally cut their skins. Exclamations could be heard from every direction as these human warriors completely forgot about what happened earlier.

The white lights that shone from their foreheads, hearts, and lower abdomens faded as well, as if nothing had happened at all.

Emperor Xun and the group of Gong Sun Family elders were dumbfounded. They were rooted to their spots by surprise, without being able to move. The sudden and weird move made by the three 'Pengs', as well as the brutal action taken by Original Devil, astonished them badly.

"Go, let's go. Xing Tian might lose his temper again if we let him wait too long!" Fuxi and Emperor Shun came to Ji Hao without being noticed. They were both wrapped in the black and white mists released from the Taiji pattern behind Fuxi's body. Therefore, none of the stunned human beings down on the ground discovered them.

Ji Hao lowered his head and glanced at those people, then sighed slightly. He politely bowed to Fuxi and Emperor Shun, then transformed into a streak of light, and flew to Yao Mountain City.

The force of Pan Yu world nobles, which was led by Yu Huo's clone, was wiped out by Ji Hao. Yu Meng, Yu Hu, and the other colony world nobles had been eliminating the devil people from Chu Wu Clan for the humankind. The non-humankind forces from

the east and the west stayed actionless, resting quietly.

Emperor Xun and his people were stupefied by this series of twists, and still hadn't recovered from shock. Therefore, the human force from the south didn't send even one warrior to challenge Yao Mountain City either.

On this day, Yao Mountain City was quiet and peaceful, with no battle to be fought.

In the city, Ji Hao, Donggong, Ximu, Ao Bai, Zhu Rong, Qing Qiang, Ji Xia, Qing Fu, Shaosi, Man Man, Taisi, Feng Xing, Yu Mu, Yuan Li, Shermie, and Wuzhi Qi guided Fuxi and Emperor Shun into a meeting hall together.

Among this group of people, the human beings had all been passionately eyeing Fuxi, who was tall and strong, looking like a god. The non-human ones such as Donggong, Ximu, Ao Bai and Qing Qiang were polite to Fuxi, but had been showing different and strange expressions in their eyes, especially Donggong and Ximu, who were smiling meaningfully.

The other people each took a seat in the hall while Xing Tian carried his battle axe and walked around, curiously poking his finger into the wall and the pillars in the hall. Soon, over a hundred holes were left on the walls and pillars. Man Man followed behind Xing Tian with curiosity, and from time to time, she came to before him to see his weird 'large face'.

No small talk was made at all. After sitting down, Fuxi began speaking, "We left Pan Gu world and traveled in the Chaos for countless years. Our journeys have been quite fruitful."

Taking a deep breath, Fuxi continued blandly, "At the very least, we found Pan Yu world...That world is..."

All the others immediately concentrated their attention on Fuxi. "Emperor, may I ask what exactly is happening in Pan Yu world?" Said Ji Hao in a deep voice.

Fuxi remained silent for a short while with a frown, then slowly nodded and said, "Extreme greed, endless consumption... They have not only been consuming the resources that they looted from other worlds, they were also consuming the original power of the world itself...Pan Yu world is even consuming Yu Clan people, Jia Clan people, and Xiu Clan people!"

Fuxi waved a hand, smiled at Zhu Rong, and said, "I have a detailed record about Pan Yu world. You can all read it later...I need to congratulate Emperor Zhu Rong, because the one who found Pan Yu world and entered there to figure out the truth about it with three-thousand years of severe efforts was your ancestor from twenty-nine generations ago."

The expression on Zhu Rong's face changed dramatically. He immediately stood up and seemed to say something, but could not.

Fuxi smiled and continued with a gentle voice, "Now, seriously, the true disaster of Pan Gu world is one of those three, and it's about to explode...We need to unite in a concerted effort, so that we can survive."

"Emperor, who are they? What powers do they have?" Asked Ji Hao.

Fuxi raised his head and looked at him, then responded gently, "Do you know how the non-humankind came to Pan Gu world in the beginning? Those three controlled their minds and brought them here from the Chaos.

Smiling coldly, Fuxi continued, "The ancestors of the twelve Yu Dynasty families believed they luckily found Pan Gu world, but never knew that they were just some chess pieces of those three."

Chapter 1860: Priest Yun Talk to the Devil

Everything in the world had a side of 'Yang', and a side of 'Yin'.

The 'Yang' side of Pan Gu world was the side where billions and billions of creatures lived and developed. On this side, the natural sceneries were picturesque, the weather was good, the soil was rich, and the plants were thriving. This side of the world was a warm, fertile place, nourishing all living beings.

But, the 'Yin' side of Pan Gu world was dark, covered in snow, cliffy mountains, and sharp rocks. The fierce wind blew like wriggling serpents, screaming through rocks and mountains and raising clouds of dark snow. The snowflakes bumped against the mountains and rocks and caused muffled thunderous noises.

Countless dark and cold earth meridians, caves buried in this side of Pan Gu world. Never-melting essence glaciers gradually accumulated in the earth meridians, neutralized with the warm and positive earth meridian powers from the 'Yang' side of the world. Yin and Yang supported each other, generated an inexhaustible power of Creation.

But this dark and cold place was also where the evils hid. The evils creatures which could not see the sunlight and hear the thunders, which weren't able to touch even a slight positive power, had been hiding and resting in this place. These rare evil creatures who survived the prehistorical era saw this side of the world as a paradise.

The Original Devil built a magnificent devil palace in the center of the Yin side of Pan Gu world, forcibly turning tens of thousands of evil creatures which lived since the ancient time into devils, to follow his orders.

He gathered the dark and cold earth meridian powers in the palace. The devil palace turned the earth meridian powers into the darkness devil power, which condensed into a large pond in the

palace. He then killed countless creatures, poured their blood into the pond, and created a blood sea. Day and night, Original Devil quietly bathed in the blood sea to absorb the dark devil power and the spirit blood power from it.

This day, Original Devil was bathing in the blood sea as usual. But suddenly, he burst into a scream. Streams of blood rose into the sky and formed blood bombs. The bombs exploded one after another, tearing down the devil palace and destroying countless devil creatures which were turned by Original Devil forcibly.

"Pengs! How dare you?! Let's...go and see!" Original Devil expanded his body to tens of thousands of meters tall, covered in sticky and stinky blood, while pointing at the sky and cursing.

He wanted to find the three 'Pengs' and put up a desperate fight against them right now. But, despite the fact that he was extremely brutal and violent, he wasn't stupid at all. He hadn't restored even one in ten-thousand of his power by now. Therefore, if he challenged the three 'Pengs' right now, he would definitely end up being sealed again by them!

He didn't want to become an unconscious devil seed again. He didn't want to be sealed in the heart of an ordinary human being, then being split up and weakened again and again as the human bloodline developed.

"Let's go and see!" He roared with rage, then angrily sat back into the blood sea. He shrank his body to the size of ordinary human beings and sat quietly in the blood sea as he sank into thoughts.

He wanted to free all the devil seeds and remerge all the pieces of his soul to restore his greatest power. In order to do that, he needed to kill all human beings in Pan Gu world.

But, he wasn't able to!

Before the three 'Pengs' showed up, Wu Bi, who he cultivated with great efforts, was killed quite easily by human beings, and the

entire Chu Wu Clan was being wiped out by a non-humankind force.

In order to free himself, he needed to destroy the humankind; and in order to destroy the humankind, he needed his power. But, without being free, where could he find his power? Difficult, this was truly difficult. Should he develop another helper like Wu Bi? That wasn't as easy as it sounded.

A man without an evil intent would not be possessed by a devil.

Among all human beings, the leaders and elders from quite a lot of large clans and families were possessed by the devil, but they were still far away from turning into devils. Only the mad and ruthless Chu Wu Clan people were the best choices to turn. Only Chu Wu Clan people could be turned into devils so easily!

When Original Devil was struggling, a nicely scented wind blew over from a long distance away. He saw an overwhelming purple mist cover the sky, while the wind and a warm glow rolled to his face. A red-crowned crane spread its meters wide wings and slowly flew towards him.

A white-robed old man quietly sat on the crane's back with his legs crossed.

The old man had silver hair and beard, and a round, silver-bowl-like, mild face. He sat silently on the crane's back, with beams of bright light shining out of his body. The bright light penetrated the space and waved slightly; the whole world seemed to be breathing and flowing along with these lights.

"Priest Jun?" Original Devil recognized this face. He trembled out of fear, then leaped straight up and floated in midair, prepared to run at any moment. He couldn't stop trembling. Clearly, he wasn't so confident about escaping successfully.

"Even you thought I'm him too?" The white-robed priest grinned as the red-crowned crane flew up to Original Devil.

"Think carefully. Don't you really know my name?" The white-robed priest smiled faintly while taking out a dark jade ruyi and holding it with both hands.

The moment the ruyi was taken out, a cold light dominated this area and Original Devil's face paled, because he realized that he was disabled from moving!

"You, you..." Original Devil stared at the priest. He wanted to cry, but failed to shed any tears. "That year, you cut me, you cut my soul into one-billion, two-hundred and ninety-six million pieces, then sealed me in the hearts of one-billion, two-hundred and ninety-six million human beings...It has been so many years, and those human beings had sons, grandsons...They created hundreds of generations; their population rose by at least ten-thousand folds!"

"My soul has been splitting up and weakening and resealing...If those human beings didn't grow so many desires and emotions in their hearts, I wouldn't have a chance to escape...If that situation goes on, one day, I might sink in sleep forever..."

"Priest Jun, now, I finally have a chance of survival. But, why won't you let me live?" Original Devil looked at the priest bitterly and said, "No matter what, I was the evil side of Pan Gu. We are related after all."

"We are indeed related, but I am not Priest Jun." The priest smiled at Original Devil and said, "Don't be silly. Look carefully, look at who I am."

Original Devil paused and looked at the priest from head to toe. A long while later, he abruptly shouted out loud, "Priest Yun! You, you, you were sealed in the great Dao of Pan Gu world by Priest Jun. You should never have a chance to escape. How can you possibly be here?"

Priest Yun grinned and responded slowly, "If the great Dao remained stable, I surely wouldn't have had a chance...But, what

do you think Gong Gong broke Buzhou Mountain and raised the flood for? Why do think some people guided those Pan Yu world saints here?"

Chuckling, Priest Yun put the jade ruyi against Original Devil's forehead and said, "The three 'Pengs' are my disciples. They said you're always hindering them...Now, follow my orders, and you live. Disobey, you die immediately! Choose."

Original Devil remained silent shortly, then kneeled before Priest Yun.

Chapter 1861: Priest Yun Takes An Action

Pan Gu world, outside the gate of the heaven...

Priest Yun and Original Devil trod on a cloud, looking down at the vast Pan Gu Motherland.

The front gate of the heaven was connected with Yao Mountain City by a colorful beam of light. Countless divine warriors and commanders had been walking in or out of the gate, but none of them noticed Priest Yun and Original Devil. They stood right before the gate, but were isolated from the world by a strange power.

"What a wonderful world!" Priest Yun sighed slightly. He spread his arms to embrace the world while saying, "Fantastic creatures! Especially human beings! Great nature, human beings are truly masterpieces, incomparable masterpieces."

"I've traveled to countless worlds around Pan Gu world. I've seen the creatures in those worlds. They all have weaknesses. Bodies, souls, wisdom, personalities...Or, the most basic bloodlines. None of them was perfect." Priest Yun laughed, "But human beings... are perfect."

"Newborn human beings are weak, fragile, without sharp claws, teeth, scales, or feathers, that even a tiny poisonous bug can kill a human baby. In the babyhood, human beings are confused too. They know nothing about the world, can't understand the secrets of this world; they can't even speak, or listen, or see, or walk...They seem to be full of flaws, but seriously, they are perfect."

"The most intimidating thing about human beings, they can learn anything, and only if you give them time, they can do better even than the ones who they learned from."

"I brought back ninety-thousand, seven-hundred and forty-five

types of magic from the surrounding worlds. I secretly taught these magics to human beings. Without exception, all these magic have been mastered by human beings in years. Within ten years, a large number of human beings mastered these magics, and within a hundred years, they made new development upon over ten-thousand types of magic, and even upgraded them."

"They also inherited Saint Pan Gu's fertility. They are reproducing at such a high rate. After years of calculation, I discovered that... If we give human beings enough resources and space, they can occupy every corner of this world."

"Human beings are so perfect. But, Priest Jun used them merely as cages to seal you poor thing!"

Original Devil dropped his face and remained silent.

"But, I am not like him. I saw greater value from human beings that is worth exploiting. So... long, long ago, back when I was still sealed deep in the great Dao by Priest Jun, I took the three 'Pengs' as my disciples."

"Look, Priest Jun and me are just like this. He is Priest Jun, while I am Priest Yun; he took the three who were generated from Saint Pan Gu's soul, while I took the three who were 'pre-world gods' and existed inside Pan Gu's body. He used human beings as cages to imprison your soul, to weaken you, suppress you, to disable you from waking up."

"But, I used human beings as my eyes, to see the origin of this world. If one compared the origin of Pan Gu world to a vast ocean, these human beings would be like tiny drinking straws, because they have been taking powers from the great Dao of nature and learning about the great Dao. And, the powers of Dao that they took were all absorbed by the three 'Pengs' clones, which existed inside their bodies."

"A human being can only understand a limited part of the great Dao, and absorb a limited amount of original powers of Dao. But, if

you put countless human beings together, their understandings and harvests will be tremendous!"

"So, you fought the three 'Pengs', you felt their powers! With your current power, you can't survive a random strike from them. They have attained the power of creation and merged their bodies into the great Dao. They have..."

Sighing slightly, Priest Yun smiled at Original Devil and continued, "All in all, they're very powerful. With their help, I have the confidence to kill Priest Jun and his three disciples, vanish the pair of greedy stupid troublemakers from the west, then destroy that soft-hearted woman who always protected Pan Gu."

After embracing the sky, Priest Yun continued with a deep voice, "The measureless great Dao of Pan Gu world will eventually be mine. After dominating this world, I will finish what Saint Pan Gu didn't manage to do! I will attain my great Dao with strength, break all magic with strength; I will be the god of all gods, and I will make saints bow!"

Smiling again at Original Devil, Priest Yun said, "So, these human beings and Pan Gu world is my opportunity to attain the great Dao. You want to destroy the humankind and swallow the entire Pan Gu world, which is highly beneficial to you. But... I can't let you!"

"Shifu...then..." Original Devil looked at Priest Yun in confusion.

"I took you as a disciple because you're valuable! You're good at controlling people's hearts and starting conflicts. Wherever you go, that place will never be in peace. You're such a sharp blade!" Priest Yun grinned and said seriously and confidently, "In the future, when I achieve the supreme level, I will surely be facing more enemies. By then, you will become my...dog! You will bite my enemies!"

Slapping on Original Devil's shoulder, Priest Yun laughed brightly and said, "You're good at damaging things in darkness. Once people are possessed by devils, the devils will never

disappear. How great! Especially, you're not afraid of death. If you're killed, I can simply kill a random human being, and raise the devil seed in his heart into another Original Devil. You share all memories with your devil seeds, which means you can never die!"

Eyes shining brightly, Priest Yun looked at Original Devil and carried on, "You are very helpful to me, which why I take you as my own disciple, and don't want you to grow too much hatred against the three 'Pengs'! But you're too weak now, so I will...raise your power a little!"

Lowering his head, Priest Yun looked at the vast Pan Gu Motherland, then smiled and said, "Do you know what kind of human being are the best? The violent, brutal, ruthless, simple-minded ones are the best human beings."

"We don't need human beings to be smart and wise. We just want them to be in a sufficient quantity, so their bodies can contain enough clones of the three 'Pengs'. As long as human beings with a large enough number exist in all surrounding worlds, they will be the best human beings. What do we need those smart, brave, decisive, and capable human beings for?"

"To me, they provided just as much as the ordinary ones did. On the contrary, they invented a secret magic to cast away the 'three corpses' from human bodies, and that threatened the three 'Pengs' clones! Therefore, your goal is destroying all human beings, but I am only targeting the elites among them! That's how we're different."

"Now, my disciple, are you ready to take action with me? Feel all the clan leaders, elders, commanders, and elite warriors that you have controlled with your devil seeds. Forget about the ordinary ones, but select the elites...Look, those two non-humankind military camps, make those elite human beings march to the two camps!"

"Haha... Fuxi, Shennong, Suren, Cangjie, Taihao, Shaohao, Xuanyuan...These old human beings have sneaked back. Do they think I don't know that? Let's show them our power...I really like the color of human blood."

"Back in the old days, if they didn't run so fast, I would have destroyed them one by one...Shame."

Chapter 1862: Tusks

Priest Yun laughed out on the cloud. His eyes glowed with a bright light, fixed on the meeting hall in the center of Yao Mountain City.

Yao Mountain City was covered in countless seals and defensive formations, and the hall was surrounded in numberless spell symbols. However, all these defensive means were useless in Priest Yun's eyes. Through the layers of glows and seals, Priest Yun clearly see Fuxi, who sat in the hall.

"Fuxi, back then, you ran so fast, each only left a clone to guard the humankind. Had you sensed something already? Shame, what a shame, I should have killed you back then. But, you ran so fast, and the three 'Pengs' were guarded too strictly."

"Yet, you actually had the guts to come back, how come? Where did you find your confidence from?"

Priest Yun fiddled with the black jade ruyi, smiled scornfully, and said, "You're back, so what? You're nothing but human beings. You're wiser than the ordinary people...But Pan Gu world belonged to the powerful ones!"

Clenching his hands, Priest Yun snapped the jade Ruyi into two, which was a pre-world supreme treasure. Strands of light shone out of the broken ruyi, while the deep cries of the ruyi could be faintly heard.

Priest Yun conveniently threw the broken Ruyi to the earth, then murmured to himself with excitement, "It has begun, it has begun...Priest Jun, are you still hiding? You and your three disciples, when are you gonna show your faces? Are you still expecting the tree and the flower to do something? Not to mention their natures, they can barely protect themselves by now, don't you know that?"

In Emperor Xun's camp, Emperor Xun was stomping his foot while hysterically growling to a group of elders and clan leaders with wrath. Some of these elders were his families, yet he just pointed at their noses and cursed them one by one. A few branch elders argued slightly, and Emperor Xun directly slapped on their faces!

Emperor Xun screamed, yelled, and ordered his people to figure out a way to kill Ji Hao and Xing Tian, to wash off the burning shame that he suffered when he was 'flooded' away!

The group of speechless people looked at the impregnable Yao Mountain City with a bitter look on their faces.

Yao Mountain City's defense way scarily strong. No matter how many warriors they sent out, the city would swallow them all. In the past months, which human clan under Emperor Xun's lead didn't suffer a severe loss? Those warriors were just captured alive by Yao Mountain people, but that was still a great loss.

Not to mention the fact that Ji Hao had shown his power earlier. The essence sun fire incinerated the entire Pan Yu world force in a moment. Which one under Emperor Shun's command could possibly hold off such an immense power? Ji Hao was a divine emperor chosen by the world itself; he was able to control the tremendous powers of the world, while every clan leader or elder around Emperor Xun was just an ordinary human being, no matter how strong he was!

Rivaling against the world as a human being, some people could do that indeed, but not the ones around Emperor Xun!

While Emperor Xun was screaming and cursing, a faint dark mist suddenly rose from the bodies of the elders and clan leaders around him. With a devil fire burning in their eyes, these elders and clan leaders turned around and walked straight away without saying a word. Stiffly, they rushed out of the central tent in giant steps, then burst into roars.

In Emperor Xun's camp, the clan leaders, elders, and the bravest and strongest commanders, smartest Maguspriests, and the most outstanding young warriors from each clan all rushed out from their tents and gathered together.

"What do you want? Rebellion?" Emperor Xun chased behind as he stared at these people who had gathered together and snarled, "What are you doing? Come back! Back!"

Dragon Mother showed up in midair with Shixin and his brothers. She was wearing a long red dress and a golden crown, holding a golden staff. She looked at Emperor Xun and laughed out loud, "Human emperor kid, you just eat and drink and have fun. A useless kid like you should stay out of the important things...Hehe, what can you help with anyway?"

Dragon Mother gave a bright shout, then raised her golden staff and pointed at the west and east. Following her moves, the elders and clan leaders who were controlled by devils immediately led all the elites to march to the military camps located in the east and west, and belonged to the colony world nobles.

Emperor Xun's camp was thrown into a chaos. The ordinary warriors didn't know what their leaders were doing, and neither did they know if they should follow up or stay in the camp. At the moment, people shouted, horses screamed, while countless warriors were running about like headless flies.

The chaotic situation of Emperor Xun's camp caught the attention of Ji Hao's scouts. They reported step by step, and soon delivered the news to Ji Hao and the other leaders.

Donggong activated his magic mirror, letting it float in the hall. Through the mirror, people saw two forces march out of Emperor Xun's camp. Clearly, even the weakest ones among these warriors were Magus Kings, because they were all flying! After all, only the ones who had achieved the level of or above Magus Kings could fly, but Senior Magi couldn't.

"Is Emperor Xun out of his mind?" Ji Hao stood up as he looked at the mirror. He carefully observed the expressions on those warriors' faces, then shook his head and said, "It's not Emperor Xun. It's the Original Devil. What does he want?"

"The ones who came out are all elites from the clans under Emperor Xun's lead." Fuxi shook his head. He looked calm and serious, without showing any emotion on his face, but his face was glowing with a bright light of thorough understanding. "These people are under Original Devil's control, as their hearts and spirits have been possessed by devils. But, only the elites were sent out, without the ordinary ones...As same as before, have they started taking out human elites again?"

Fuxi raised his head, as black and white mists wove into an enormous pattern of Taiji behind him. The ceiling of the hall suddenly turned transparent, as the black and white mists rose from his eyes to tens of thousands of miles away. The others followed his eyes, and immediately saw Priest Yun and Original Devil in the sky.

Original Devil looked at the hall, bared his teeth, and laughed ferociously.

Priest Yun smiled and slightly lowered his head. Suddenly, his voice could be heard from the hall, "Fuxi...do you remember the young man who hunted you in that rainy night? That was a clone of mine. You're such a survivor. You suffered seventy-two blade strikes in a row, yet you didn't die!"

While looking at Priest Yun with a pair of sunken eyes, Fuxi slowly nodded and said, "As I thought, all these years, it was you who had been attempting to destroy our wisdom and turn us into wild beasts, over and over again!"

Priest Yun smiled at Fuxi and responded, "What do you human beings need wisdom for? I just need your strong fertility. I need you to reproduce, to expand...Apart from that, the simpler, the

more naive you are, the better..."

Sighing slightly, Priest Yun continued in a bland tone, "Wisdom, culture, you even wrote books to pass on the civilization...What do you need those for? You eat, drink, sleep, make love, that will be just enough for you. Why do you have to pursue something that is unnecessary?"

Shaking his head, Priest Yun said coldly, "Priest Jun has been treating you, ant-like people too kindly. Things will naturally be different when I have killed him."

Chapter 1863: Efforts

Fuxi remained silent, and so did the others in the hall. They quietly looked at Priest Yun and listened to him shouting.

"Human beings are beautiful living treasures! They're Pan Gu's descendants, chosen by the world. As long as they remain alive, the world naturally protects them. The three 'Pengs' clones lived in their bodies, and naturally absorbed all the essence natural powers."

"As time went by, the three 'Pengs' clones learned some of the secrets of this world, and understood some of the great Dao. After their hosts died, they would fly back to three 'Pengs', and all they had learned would belong to three 'Pengs'."

"Therefore, the more human beings lived in this world, the more three 'Pengs' clones existed, and the more of the great Dao they understood...Human beings are living treasures, are the best pathway which leads to the great Dao. The three 'Pengs' minds were connected with mine, which meant that whatever they learn, I learn it too."

"Upon that, human beings' emotions and desires are the nourishment of the three 'Pengs' clones. The more emotional they are, the stronger the three 'Pengs' clones are. But, what kind of people are emotional? Of course, not the well-cultivated ones, but the wild, naive, natural ones!"

"I took the three 'Pengs' as my disciples. Our minds are connected, so fifty percent of all the powers that their clones collected belongs to me. Therefore, the more powerful they are, the stronger I am."

"So, I keep human beings, like I keep livestock. I wipe out their wisdom, and let them live and reproduce like animals. That is the best for the three 'Pengs' and me. Fuxi, people like you are over-wise. Your spirits are clear, and hearts are strong. You suppressed

the three 'Pengs' clones, and made them sleep for years without making any progress. You should die, shouldn't you?"

How ridiculous! He treated human beings as animals, as the tools for him to learn about the great Dao and grow his power!

"Our dragon-kind..." Ao Bai said abruptly.

Priest Yun laughed in an especially strange way and interrupted him, "You dragons are Pan Gu's descendants too, but you are completely brainless. You are reckless, wild, and rude. Aside from fighting and killing what else do you know? So, I didn't need to do anything, but the three 'Pengs' clones naturally existed in you."

Sighing slightly, Priest Yun continued slowly, "Some phoenixes have great wisdom. It seems that with their help, human beings found some traces of the three 'Pengs'...So, some old phoenixes died suddenly. Of course, we killed them!"

The expression on Qing Qiang's face changed instantly. She clenched her teeth and remained silent.

"Hah." Laughing coldly, Priest Yun cast his eyes at Ao Bai and his brothers, and said, "The few old phoenixes deserved to die. If it weren't for them, how could you brainless dragons ever know how to abandon dragon bodies, extract spirit blood to forge dragon souls, and do that 'Hibernated Dragon Nine Death' thing?"

The faces of Ao Bai and his brothers paled immediately. They trembled and subconsciously took a few steps back.

"So, where is the dragon ancestor? I'm curious!" Priest Yun looked at Ao Bai and his brothers and said slowly, "Before Priest Jun sealed me, the three 'Pengs' were helping me, fighting against his three disciples. If the dragon ancestors and the few people who liked to poke their noses into others' businesses didn't step in, how could I be sealed so easily?"

"Back then, we sealed you once..." Finally, Fuxi began talking.

"It'll never happen again!" Priest Yun interrupted him

immediately. "Do you think that I just luckily escaped from the great Dao?"

"Why did Pan Yu world people come? Why did the ancient heaven fall? Why did the sky devils invade? Why were the clones of the tree and the flower possessed? Why have the real them been isolating themselves..."

Proudly, Priest Yun stated his great achievements one by one. Ji Hao and the others were stunned on hearing him. It turned out that so many unreasonable things happened in Pan Gu world because he and the three 'Pengs' were hiding in darkness and controlling all those people!

"Without my secret help, how could that loser Gong Gong break the Buzhou Mountain so easily? Without my help, how could they move the twelve water worlds? Not to mention those Pan Yu world saints... Hehe, they came here quite easily, because I've made my efforts for it!"

"Priest Jun? Where can he find the strength to fight me now?" Priest Yun laughed madly. He pointed at Ji Hao and the others, and burst into brighter laughter and continued, "I've left countless holes in Pan Gu world. Only after he has fixed all those holes can he have the power to fight me."

"But, since I've already done so much, how can I ever give him a chance to pull himself out from what he has been doing?"

"Otherwise, you see, the chaotic prehistorical era was ended by his might. He cleaned up the world, restrained the great Dao, made the divine rules. Those idiots from the ancient heaven were his teeth and claws; they maintained the order of this world for him. Based on his personality, he should have slapped Gong Gong to death back when the latter started taking actions. But, why do you think he did nothing?"

"He was busy. He didn't have the time and energy to spend on Gong Gong!" Priest Yun laughed delightfully and brightly.

"I know he and his three disciples have been planning something, but I have prepared an unprecedentedly strong enemy for them!" Priest Yun laughed. His eyes shone brightly, filled with elation.

"Strong enemy?" Fuxi's voice sounded strange.

"An unprecedentedly strong enemy...that even I feel hard to deal with...But of course, after he and Priest Jun have fought an internecine battle, he won't be a strong enemy anymore. By then, I can easily finish him!" Said Priest Yun, "Then, I won't seal Priest Jun. Instead, I will cut him into pieces, then devour his soul, and rule Pan Gu world in the way I want. I will turn Pan Gu world into a giant livestock farm."

"Human beings will live in this world with no worries. They won't have a culture, nor wisdom. They just need to keep their animal instincts. The three 'Pengs' and I will peacefully learn the great Dao in here. After we thoroughly understand the great Dao of Pan Gu, we will try to attain our ultimate Dao through strength, to earn the final freedom."

Ji Hao's scalp was numbed. He looked at Priest Yun and asked without thinking, "The strong enemy you prepared...Where is he?"

He recalled what Evil Yu Yu said back in Feng Dao Mount.

Priest Yun smiled at Ji Hao and said in a soft voice, "In the past countless years, numberless Pan Yu world people became rich in Pan Gu world, such as those elders from the twelve families in power. They built their families in Pan Yu world with the wealth they attained from Pan Gu world."

"With the wealth they brought back from here, those elders have been working hard in Pan Yu world. Their families weren't noble, but many of them are now in quite high positions."

Priest Yun's laughter sounded weirder and weirder.

Chapter 1864: The Lost Holy Blood

Like a large apple which was awfully damaged by worms, Pan Yu world was operating based on its special natural laws.

Measureless resources had been shipping to this world from countless colony worlds, filling up the Pan Yu world, which was collapsing. In the past countless years, Pan Yu world had swallowed immeasurable amount of resources from colony worlds, but this greedy world was never satisfied. It had been on the verge of destruction, and the situation never got better.

The leaders of the top-grade nobles families, the true power-holders, were still running all kinds of secret discussions. Even though they had received the distress signals from their young family members from Pan Gu world, they showed no sign of sending out reinforcements.

These Pan Yu world nobles had sunken into a strange state of anxiety. Ever since a nobleman made the proposal of abandoning Pan Yu world and moving the entire Yu Clan to Pan Gu world, these noble family leaders seemed to be bewitched. Day and night, they had been sighing with bitter faces.

Abandoning Pan Yu world, which could fall apart at any time, then moving to Pan Gu world, which was beautiful and rich like a newly risen sun, and was surrounded by a giant number of worlds, full of life-force and an enormous potential?

This proposal was so tempting!

But, Pan Yu world was the area of origin of Yu Clan, Jia Clan, and Xiu Clan after all. It was not easy to abandon the hometown. Abandoning the area of origin and moving to Pan Gu world, was this really good?

Countless natural stars which were drained of resources floated lifelessly in Pan Yu world's starry void. A giant amount of ore

sands and dust left thick streams of smog among the stars. The lights of the three suns and nine moons shone upon the smog and created bizarre and motley shadows.

Deep in the starry void, an unknown distance away from the nine continents, thirteen pyramids towered on a square, ink-dark, transparent pedestal.

Looking from the sky, one would find that the relatively smaller twelve pyramids composed a circle, while the tallest one stood in the center. The ground was thickly covered in dimly glistening spell symbols and marks. Strong strands of power had been flowing out of the twelve smaller pyramids, into the central one.

The twelve smaller pyramids quaked from time to time. Occasionally, deep buzzing noises could be heard from under one or a few smaller pyramids. Each time this happened, the spell symbol which looked like a large, black erect eye above the central pyramid would release a bolt of thunder to strike at the buzzing pyramids.

As the dark thunderbolts fell on the smaller pyramids and drilled in, the buzzing noise would fade immediately, and the whole area would quiet back down.

Surrounding these twelve pyramids were countless palaces, differently scaled. In each palace, numberless heavily armored Jia Clan warriors were on patrol. Each of them had an incomparable solemnness and an obvious numbness on their faces.

Some of these warriors had been guarding this place for uncountable years. No one ever invaded this lifeless area, and not even a grass was growing in here. Even the 'saints' of Pan Yu world remained extra careful and cautious and when visiting occasionally with great reverence, without daring to show any disrespect.

This place didn't need guards at all, but in order to make it look sacred and important, these top-grade Pan Yu world warriors guarded here generation after generation. Some of them grew old

silently, then died in this place without being known.

A meters tall, especially strong Jia Clan warrior stood before the gate of a palace, expressionlessly looking at a brick under his feet. Suddenly, a pale-white light shone out of the spot between his eyebrows. After a tremor went through his body, he raised his head immediately and cast his eyes at the tallest pyramid with a weird expression.

"Where the three suns and nine moons fell asleep...and the legendary tomb of Pan Yu!" This Jia Clan warrior sneered, "If Pan Yu is dead, why is his tomb absorbing so much natural power through the three suns and nine moons every moment?"

"The entire Pan Yu world is on the verge of collapse because of his greedy, immoderate devouring. No matter how much resources they looted from colony worlds, or how many colony world creatures were sacrificed, Pan Yu world is dying, with no chance to recover."

Holding the heavy long spear, this Jia Clan warrior left his spot and walked to the central pyramid step by step.

No one noticed him. About ten patrol squads brushed past him, but no one asked him about what he was doing.

This place was where Pan Yu's tomb was located, and where the three suns and nine moons, which were the spirit totems of Pan Yu world, rested. No Pan Yu world creature dared to cause trouble in here. For this reason, this Jia Clan warrior smoothly came to the central pyramid and walked inside the only door of it.

The inner space of the pyramid was suffused with a thick black mist. A strange power sealed the space off. In here, no one would know where to go. The pale-white light again shone out of the Jia Clan warrior's forehead and showed him a straight way in the darkness. Following the light, the Jia Clan warrior quickly came to a small altar in the core area of this pyramid.

No other thing but a three-foot-tall pure golden bottle was on the altar, containing half a bottle of sticky liquid, which had been emitting a cold, evil power.

This was Pan Yu's blood. Any Yu Clan noble who had touched the great Dao, wanted to merge his or her soul with the great Dao, and step into the world of saints, needed to borrow the power of Pan Yu's blood to melt their erect eye!

The erect eye of a Yu Clan man was his best fortune and contained measureless power, but was also the heaviest chain that left him no opportunity to upgrade himself. Only Pan Yu's blood could help Yu Clan nobles melt their erect eyes. Without melting the erect eye, a Yu Clan man could never become a real saint, nor truly merge with the great Dao, no matter how noble his bloodline was.

"In many Pan Yu world creatures' eyes, this is the most precious supreme treasure in the Pan Yu world. But, it is just put in here!"

The Jia Clan warrior sneered again, took out a three-inch-long pale-white jade talisman, and gently put it on the bottle. Wisps of white light shone out of the jade talisman and wove into a large cocoon, wrapping the bottle up. Following a buzzing noise, the cocoon flew out with the bottle, tore apart the space, and flashed for a few times before disappearing without a trace.

The enormous pyramid quaked intensely. Next, a long, long sound of breath could be heard in the pyramid, following which, a cold, dry voice said slowly, "What...is the time now? Who dares to take my thing?"

From the dark mist before the Jia Clan warriors' body, a bowl-sized erect eye suddenly opened and released an extreme coldness, immediately turning the Jia Clan warrior into an ice statue.

Pop!

In the following moment, this Jia Clan warrior's body exploded

into strands of blood mist, being absorbed by the erect eye.

"Eh? Pan Gu world? No one prayed to me!"

Chapter 1865: The Suns and Moons Rise Together

Among the high-grade Pan Yu world nobles who had been wrestling against each other for power and benefits, the ones who had achieved a certain power level trembled suddenly and simultaneously, whether they were partying or running a secret meeting.

A strange sense of fear came from the deepest areas of their souls, made them quiver intensely, boiled their blood, and paled their faces. All of them felt so disturbed, as if a destructive disaster was going to happen.

They walked out of the luxurious palaces, raised their heads, and looked at the sky.

In the sky of Pan Yu world, the natural stars, which were dimmed since countless years suddenly burst into dazzling lights. The never-changing star orbits were badly disordered, and the stars scattered towards all directions, creating a giant, empty space in the middle.

Three brightly glowing suns, and nine smaller sized, but also dazzling, moons appeared in the sky simultaneously. These were the three suns and nine moons that had been worshipped by all Pan Yu world people. Following a rumbling buzzing noise, the three suns and nine moons formed a perfect circle in the empty space, which was surrounded by natural stars

Along with the rumbling noises, twelve enormous pyramids appeared in the center of the circle formed by the three suns and nine moons. Every pyramid was entirely black, carved with countless oddly shaped, complicated spell symbols and marks, which glowed blindingly. At the moment, the light emitted from the spell symbols and marks even dimmed the three suns and nine moons.

A sigh could be heard from the sky. All Pan Yu world nobles who were powerful enough saw a large throne rise from the top of each of the twelve pyramids, then twelve tall and strong figures silently emerged and released intimidating powers. They quietly sat in the thrones and lowered their heads to look at the people in this world.

Each of these twelve figures only had one large erect eye, dazzling between their eyebrows as bright as the suns and moons. Pan Gu world creatures on the ground could not even look directly at those their eyes. Numberless Pan Yu world nobles exclaimed. Their single eye meant the legendary supreme power level in Pan Yu world, and also meant that these people each had thoroughly merged with a part of the great Dao of Pan Yu world.

The three suns and nine moons shone in the sky, while these twelve people showed up together. Seeing this. The Pan Yu world nobles from the top-grade families, which had the longest histories, all recalled the records in the oldest scriptures in their family collections, which they had been reading as legends. Billions of years ago, when Pan Yu world was just created, the original powers of the three suns and nine moons transformed into living creatures who lived in this world.

According to the legends, the bloodlines of the top-grade, noblest Pan Yu world families, which had the longest history and were in the highest positions, were partially descended from the embodiments of the three suns and nine moons. For this reason, a large number of elites emerged from these families, and the members of these families were far more powerful than the others.

Also according to the legends, Saint Pan Yu, the creator of Pan Yu world, instinctively wanted to devour the embodiments of the three suns and the nine moons, and the embodiments of the three suns and nine moons resisted determinedly. A great war happened between them. The three suns and nine moons combined their powers and killed Pan Yu, cutting his body into countless pieces and forging it into the most powerful batch of inherited treasures

in Pan Yu world. Pan Yu's brain, which belonged to Yu Huo, and Pan Yu's leg bone, belonged to Yu Man, were both included in this batch.

"Supreme three suns and nine moons!" All Pan Yu world creatures kneeled on the ground and gave the three suns and the nine moons their highest respect.

Inside the circle formed from the three suns and nine mons, a tremendous black vortex emerged, and the entire world quaked intensely at the same moment. Measureless natural powers flooded into the dark swirl like boiling rivers.

The swirl was shrinking quickly. Once it had absorbed enough natural powers, it became stable. Following a deep buzzing nose, countless Pan Gu world creatures suffered a pain from their chests and vomited blood. The thunderous noise injured them severely. The lowest slaves, the large family leaders, elders, the group of 'Yu' who possessed the highest power in the mortal world in the Holy Realm, and the saints like Yu Huo, who had been hiding in darkness and controlling the entire Pan Yu world, were all injured badly, coughing blood. The saints, who were hiding in the space, were forced to show their faces by the thunderous noise.

The three suns and nine moons sat motionlessly in their thrones and looked down at all Pan Yu world creatures meaningfully.

Nearly a hundred figures jumped out of the space. A strong power could be sensed from each of their bodies. They glanced at each other, then raised their heads and carefully observed the three suns and nine moons.

A long while later, these people slowly, reluctantly, and slightly bowed to the three suns and nine moons, with strong doubts. Unlike the other Pan Yu world creatures, they didn't kneel and kowtow, and neither did they say a word.

"The whole world worships you...The three suns and nine moons, the supreme totems, how great you are, how marvelous

you are! But, no one remembers me, who created this world and these bloody creatures!"

The stable, dark swirl expanded a little, now looking like a black sun, or a black hole, quietly floating in the sky. A gigantic black pyramid emerged in the middle of the black hole, then a blurry figure, which was woven from strands of dark mist, emerged on the top.

Pan Yu looked down at the nine continents, at the Pan Yu world creatures who kneeled on the ground or stood in the air, and laughed with a deep voice, "But, what changed? You risked your lives to seal me for so many years. You ceaselessly extracted the essence of my soul with the circulation of the three suns and nine moons, attempting to put me in eternal sleep."

"But, what changed? While you were extracting my soul essence, I was also absorbing your original powers. And I was way faster than you! All these years, I've been recovering, while you....Look at this broken world. It's all your fault!"

"But, it's fine...It's really fine. Some idiots melted their erect eyes with my essence soul and broke into the world of saints. They owe me a debt, and they're gonna pay that...You ants. I created you, so I should destroy you!"

"Do you remember my ultimate Dao? Devouring and destruction... I devour everything, then destroy everything...Last time, the twelve idiots saved you, but this time...I'll do whatever I want. Because... I am Pan Yu. I created you, so you shall be devoured by me, and become a part of me!"

Pan Yu opened his mouth and took a long inhalation towards the nine continents of Pan Yu world.

On the top-layer continent, the members of the top-grade families quivered simultaneously, then all became strands of pure life-force and flew to Pan Yu.

The top-layer continent collapsed, as countless living beings were devoured by Pan Yu.

Then the second-layer continent...Then the third-layer continent...

The entire Pan Yu world collapsed quickly towards Pan Yu.

Chapter 1866: The Cauldrons Guard the World

High up in the air, a white light flashed across. Priest Yun raised a hand, then an oddly shaped, golden bottle landed in his hand.

He lowered his head and looked at the dark blood in the bottle. Then, he smilingly nodded at Fuxi, Ji Hao, and the others, and said, "It's about time. Since I am already freed, I don't want to waste more efforts...I've prepared for many years. In these couple of days, the winner has to be determined."

Pointing at the sky, Priest Yun laughed, "This sky!"

Then pointing at the earth, he continued, "This earth!"

Next, he pointed at the surrounding area and burst into a louder laughter, "This vast Pan Gu world, numberless living beings, boundless void... will eventually be under my control! If I can't have this world, I will destroy it. That's how simple it is!"

The meeting hall in Yao Mountain City fell into a deathly silence. Everyone in the hall was stunned by what Priest Yun said, and couldn't say a word. Priest Yun was crazy, but he did have the power to do everything he said. A crazy man wouldn't be scary, but a crazy man who was powerful enough would be intimidating.

"You...Who are you?" Ji Hao trod on a streak of golden light and rose straight to the sky. After flashing for a few times, he came up to Priest Yun and stared at him with a pair of sword-sharp eyes.

"I..." Priest Yun gave a mystic smile and said, "I share the same origin with Priest Jun. I was born shortly later than he was, yet he occupied the great Dao."

Priest Yun handed the golden bottle to Original Devil, then took out a jade tablet from his sleeve, smiled at Ji Hao, and said, "Let's see this piece of jade as the entire great Dao of Pan Gu world, or, we can say it is the spirit of Pan Gu world."

Clap!

As he tapped the jade board gently with a finger, a small piece of jade fell off from it. "When Saint Pan Gu created Pan Gu world, the origin of Pan Gu world quaked, and this... is Priest Jun." Said Priest Yun smilingly.

Next, he tapped the jade board again, and made a smaller piece fell off. "And this... is me! So, once I have killed Priest Jun, the whole world and all living beings in this world will be under my control!"

Ji Hao lowered his head to look at the elite human forces, which had been crazily charging at the two non-humankind camps, while asking coldly, "Aren't you afraid?"

Priest Yun tilted his head, squinted at Ji Hao, and sneered, "Afraid? Of what? Why? Do you mean natural trials? Natural punishments? Don't worry, I'm not afraid of either of those. Except for Priest Jun, no one in Pan Gu world can hurt a hair of mine."

Priest Yun laughed and abruptly hissed, knitting his brows as if pondering. A while later, he laughed again and said, "No, no, there was another man in this world could hurt me! Hah, if Pan Gu comes back alive, and has his giant axe, he may have a chance to kill me. But Pan Gu...Haha, haha, haha!"

He raised his head and laughed hysterically towards the higher sky, but Ji Hao didn't know what he was thinking. He then turned around, took the golden bottle back from Original Devil's hands, and said carelessly, "Disciple, I'm too lazy to kill a kid like this. You just kill him. When I am crowned with success, I'll make you a divine emperor too!"

While laughing, Priest Yun trod on a flowing cloud and flew away in a moment. The cloud which was treading under his feet seemed to be nothing special, but it flew much faster than the golden bridge. Within a second, Priest Yun disappeared from Ji Hao's

sight, and after that, Ji Hao couldn't find him anymore, not even with the sunlight.

Ji Hao's heart sank. This Priest Yun was so powerful!

Original Devil laughed with a hissing voice. His body was wrapped in coiling dark mists, emitting a strong evil power. "Interesting, interesting! I didn't even think of this before...Priest Yun, Priest Jun... Ji Hao, which one of them do you think will win?"

Ji Hao remained silent, looking at Original Devil who was laughing.

"I think, no matter which one of them wins, I may be the final winner!" Original Devil looked at Ji Hao excitedly and said, "Do you know that this is a chance to replace them? If we combine our powers, we may..."

Ji Hao responded with a sword strike in the heart. The Pan Gu sword shone with a dark light and instantly penetrated Original Devil's body. Original Devil lowered his head and looked at the bowl-sized hole on his chest, then laughed carelessly, "It's useless, Ji Hao, you can kill a body of mine, but you can't kill my soul. I have countless devil seeds, and every single one of them can grow into a new me...You can never kill me, unless you destroy the humankind to gather all the pieces of my soul. After that, you need to be powerful enough to kill my soul!"

Strands of dark mist gathered in the wounds and healed them quickly.

Original Devil slapped hard on his own chest, then continued saying to Ji Hao seriously, "But, your sword is indeed powerful. It penetrated my supreme devil body so easily, and because of its killing power, I spent so much time to heal the wound. A great sword, that is a great sword really."

Letting out a high-pitched laughter, Original Devil pointed at the

earth and said, "Even though he told me to kill you, you're protected by supreme treasures, and are hard to kill...Why don't we see how these people will die first?"

Original Devil smiled brightly. These suicidal human elites who had been marching towards the two non-humankind camps were all controlled by him...He was about to kill so many people all at one time, and this made him feel so great.

Even though these elites who were killing themselves down there were only a slight part of the humankind, but after harvesting the devil seeds in their bodies, Original Devil would grow stronger by at least a hundred percent!

"Ji Hao, look at them. They're in such a hurry to die. How do you feel?" Original Devil laughed out loud.

Ji Hao remained silent. Abruptly, he raised his head and looked at the sun. Seven green light spots emerged from the higher sky. Along with muffled sounds of wind and thunder, seven, millions of miles tall, three-legged cauldrons descended from the sky.

These cauldrons fell to different areas of Pan Gu Motherland, and one of them landed straight to Yao Mountain City. Before the cauldron fell on the ground, it suddenly turned as weightless as a dandelion seed, then lightly landed on a square, which was located in the middle of the city.

Along with a thunderous sound, the patterns of mountains, rivers, cities, and living beings changed quickly on the surface of the cauldron, then a splendid green light was emitted from it, momentarily sweeping across the entire area.

At the same time, all human elites who had been rushing madly to the two non-humankind camps began vomiting black blood. As the dark devil fire dimmed in their eyes, they soon came back to their senses.

On the cauldron in Yao Mountain City, a figure of Origin Devil

quietly emerged.

Original Devil, who was standing right in front of Ji Hao, suddenly quivered, then powerlessly fell from the sky.

Chapter 1867: Yu Yu's Talisman

"I am Original Devil, a true descendant of Pan Gu! What is this cauldron? How can it suppress me?"

Original Devil fell down from the sky, with his entire body limp and soft. The dense black mist which wrapped his body had faded, exposing his real face. His angular face was filled with panic. He screamed hoarsely, then threw up his arms and twitched his legs, without knowing what to do. He didn't have wings, and couldn't stop his body from falling down by desperately waving his arms.

Ji Hao trod on a cloud and followed Original Devil down.

Looking at Original Devil, who was screaming and howling meters away, Ji Hao smiled happily and said, "Each of these nine giant cauldrons has a story...I don't know a lot about them, but I do know that they are related to the natural fortune of the humankind."

"And you, are dying but not dead. The pieces of your souls, so-called devil seeds, are sealed in human bodies. Due to this, everything you do is related to the humankind. Since the nine cauldrons are connected with the natural fortune of the humankind, it's a reasonable thing that these cauldrons can suppress you."

"Nonsense!" Original Devil hollered, "Who am I? I've never heard of this cauldron. And, it's still warm! It's not a pre-world treasure. It's forged after the world's creation...How can I ever be suppressed by it?"

Ji Hao spread his hands and smiled at Original Devil. What in this world was impossible? Original Devil was a 'parasite' on human beings. Based on this fact, he could be suppressed by a powerful treasure, which was connected with the natural fortune of human beings. Wasn't this perfectly reasonable? Original Devil refused to admit that this was possible, but Ji Hao felt that Original

Devils' existence should be a real impossible thing.

Thud!

Original Devil fell heavily on the ground. The ground of Yao Mountain City was strengthened by layers of magic seals and was especially hard, almost indestructible. Original Devil fell down from the gate of heaven. He had an extra tough body indeed, but still, he shrieked when fell on the ground, as his bones were all broken.

The three-legged giant cauldron which towered in Yao Mountain City quaked slightly, while emitting streams of green light to sweep across the surrounding area.

After being scanned by this green light, countless human warriors felt their bodies cool down immediately, and the comfort went straight into their internal organs. Their minds turned much clearer, as if their brains were suddenly activated. Even those 'silly muscle guys' now felt they were smarter than before.

However, the non-human creatures, including Ao Bai, Qing Qiang, and the other dragons and phoenixes, all trembled slightly, as they felt something was taken away from their bodies by a strange power.

Along with a buzzing noise, the figures of Ao Bai's eight brothers suddenly emerged on the surface of the cauldron. Except Qing Qiang, the figures of all phoenixes appeared on the cauldron's surface as well. Ao Bai and Qing Qiang were divine emperors, and were protected by the world. Therefore, their figures didn't appear on the cauldron. The other dragons and phoenixes quivered, and suddenly had a strong fear of this three-legged cauldron in Yao Mountain City.

Somehow, these phoenixes, dragons, and all the other non-human creatures around Yao Mountain City felt that an invisible, sharp sword was hanging right above their heads. Once the sword fell, they would suffer horrible harm. If this sword fell, the result

could range from severe injuries to death, even to the destruction of souls!

With shock, Ao Bai's brothers, countless phoenixes, and all the non-human creatures in Ji Hao's army cast their eyes at this three-legged cauldron, at their figures on the cauldron which existed under the patterns of clouds, between the patterns of mountain and rivers.

"This is..." Hearing the news from their people, Ao Bai and Qing Qiang both burst into raging roars, "Why is this cauldron threatening our people? You have to know that we are Pan Gu's descendants too!"

"But, you are not human beings!" Without being noticed, Si Wen Ming stood on a foot of the cauldron with his head lowered, looking at the infuriated Ao Bai and Qing Qiang, "These nine cauldrons are the supreme treasures of our humankind. They suppress all living beings in this world but our humankind. If you live in harmony with us, good, but if you can't..."

Ao Bai and Qing Qiang were enraged. Ao Bai gave a bright shout and rolled up his sleeves, prepared to pounce on Si Wen Ming.

At this moment, Qiu Niu grabbed his wrist, stopped him.

Snorting coldly, Qiu Niu raised his head and asked, "Si Wen Ming, will the humankind use these nine cauldrons for evil purposes?"

"Of course, we won't." Si Wen Ming smiled mildly and responded with a gentle voice while showing a trace of tiredness on the corners of his eyes.

"Who can guarantee that?" Qing Qiang stared at Si Wen Ming and shouted harshly.

Ji Hao took a few steps forward, waved his hands to Si Wen Ming, and said, "Uncle Wen Ming, what took you so long? If you came later, the humankind would be ruined by Emperor Xun. I

couldn't do a thing...I can't just slaughter those human clans one by one, can I?"

Ji Hao clearly understood that despite his good reputation, he could never be compared with Si Wen Ming. Si Wen Ming was an important human minister, and had a very high prestige among human beings. No matter what kind of mess the humankind might derange into, Si Wen Ming would always be the only one who could save humanity without leaving any future trouble.

If Ji Hao took action, what could he possibly do but kill all the clan leaders who followed Emperor Xun?

Ji Hao would never be supported by all human leaders like Si Wen Ming was. Not to mention the other facts, Ji Hao was born in Gold Crow Clan from the Southern Wasteland. And, because he was a 'Southern Wasteland barbarian', those large human families and clans would never follow his words!

Si Wen Ming smiled at Ji Hao, then nodded seriously and said, "You're right, you're right. The humankind has been messy these days. It's time to put our society in good order. I can't do it all alone. You need to help me."

Ao Bai and Qing Qiang's face darkened so badly, because they suddenly realized that Ji Hao was a diehard supporter of Si Wen Ming.

What was even worse, they clearly knew about the man behind Ji Hao. That was the fiercest being in this world. Therefore, if they offended Ji Hao, they would definitely cause themselves great roubles. Except for the dragon ancestor and the phoenix ancestor, who dared to offend Ji Hao now?

Ao Bai and Qing Qiang angrily glanced at the figures of countless creatures on the cauldron and pondered shortly. At last, they restrained their anger. They were just thinking about how they should talk to Si Wen Ming about this after the enemies were defeated. They needed an explanation from Si Wen Ming.

Donggong and Ximu stood aside smiling, as this had nothing to do with them. They were confident, and had no worries.

Si Wen Ming leaped down from the cauldron and gave Ji Hao a high five. The two of them delightfully ran a short conversation about what happened lately. Afterward, Si Wen Ming frowned, seeming to be lost in thoughts.

At this moment, a purple streak of light descended from the sky and threw a jade tablet heavily in Ji Hao's hand.

After scanning the jade tablet with his spirit power, Ji Hao was shocked. With a bitter smile, he shook his head to Si Wen Ming and said, "Uncle, I may not be able to help you reorganizing the humankind. I have something to do."

Raising the jade board, he continued, "It's a talisman from my Shifu. It's an emergency."

Chapter 1868: Trapped Saints

In the Chaos, Yu Yu gave a resonant shout and threw both arms forward. His sword formation was deactivated, transforming into four-colored light streaks as it merged into his hands. Distance away, Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and their disciples all stopped fighting and looked at the empty Chaos, then burst into a bright laughter.

Yu Man was destroyed for good. His soul perished, and even the memories buried deep in his soul were extracted bit by bit, then studied by Yu Yu and his brothers thoroughly.

Yu Yu roared sonorously towards the Chaos, took out his wine calabash, and poured some wine into his mouth. "Great, great! We've fought a great battle. Good, good, he was so strong, yet we eventually destroyed his original soul."

Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwel both grinned as their eyes shone brightly.

This place was close to Pan Gu world, but far away from Pan Yu world. Yu Man was a saint who had already merged with the great Dao of Pan Yu world. Killing him here and even destroying his original soul and erasing him from the universe was an unprecedented challenge for Yu Yu and his brothers.

With the experience they gained through this battle, they would now easily destroy other saint-level invaders, without spending so much effort and time.

Following their laughter, a series of rumbling noises could be heard from their bodies. The blood in their hearts was boiled, while their minds were stimulated. Suddenly, they each achieved a major improvement. Their bodies glowed with a faint colorful light while tremendous powers flooded out of their bodies, even quaking the surrounding Chaos.

"Let's go!" Yu Yu again gave a sonorous shout. Following him, Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei led their disciples to return to Pan Gu world as well. Beams of light flashed across the Chaos and drilled into the starry void of Pan Gu world within a blink.

On the golden bridge, Ji Hao was expecting them in the starry void.

Seeing Yu Yu and the others return from the Chaos, Ji Hao delightfully bowed to Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Yu Yu respectively. Yu Yu grabbed his shoulder and dragged him up, then said carelessly, "Save that. This time, we want to take some advantage of you...Earlier, did that Priest Mu promise to help you with full power three times?"

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows. Days ago, Priest Mu and Priest Hua marched to the heaven aggressively, but soon, their nest was broken by ten Pan Yu saints. In a great haste, they returned to their peaceful world to rescue their people, and before that, Ji Hao made them promise to help him with all of their powers three times."

"Yes, Shifu. Are they making a move now?" Ji Hao laughed, "I'm just worrying that they might eat their words!"

"If you go ask them, they will eat their words." A cold light shone out of Yu Yu's eyes as he sneered and said, "But if we go together, they won't be able to eat their words. In the worst case, we can combine our powers to destroy their billions of years of cultivation, to see if their hearts will ache or not!"

"Apart from that, we have some debt for them to clear this time...They guided sky devils to our world, and they will pay for that." Priest Qingwei snorted coldly, as his eyes also glowed with a frosty light.

Priest Dachi remained as calm and mild as always. He smiled and silently listened to Yu Yu and Qignwei talking through clenched teeth.

The golden bridge transformed into a million-miles-long golden rainbow. Controlled by Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Yu Yu, it flashed through the space at a scarily high speed.

Ji Hao stood behind Yu Yu. Before he had a chance to finish his greeting to Po, Gui Ling, and the other few of his brothers and sisters, he saw splendid starlight in the front. Within this short span of time, the golden bridge had already violently penetrated tens of well-hidden magic seals and broken into a beautiful starry area.

In this vast area, a nine-miles-wide, round-shaped island floated quietly. Standing in the middle of this island was a three-hundred-meters-tall linden tree. Lying under the tree was a three-hundred-meters-wide, colorful lake. A seven-colored lotus quietly floated on the water, emitting strands of warm, colorful light.

The linden tree had flourishing roots. The faintly glistening, dark golden roots penetrated the island and reached in all directions for countless miles. Some roots drilled in the starry void, and some directly merged into the space.

Every moment, a measureless amount of natural powers and essence power of creation would be absorbed by the roots of the linden tree, and gather inside it, going through a magical and complicated conversion. The luxuriant, crystalline, and sparkling leaves of the linden tree swayed without being blown by a wind. From time to time, glistering, colorful dew drops would drip from the leaves.

The tiny dew drops fell into the colorful lake and caused silvery tinkles, sounding like pearls falling into jade trays. Some of the dew drops fell on the colorful lotus and raised strands of multicolored mist along with a sizzling noise. The mist coiled in the air and wove into some blurry spell symbols.

Yu Yu laughed out loud and stomped his foot heavily against the golden bridge, generating a thunderous bang. The golden bridge

vented a blinding golden light and lunged violently towards the island where the linden tree and the lotus were located.

An extremely bitter sigh could be heard. Suddenly, layers of images emerged around the golden bridge; beautiful girls flying all over the sky, dancing, playing instruments. High up in the air, divine gods were enjoying banquets while numberless creature were living on the ground, and countless evil ghosts were roaring down underground.

All kinds of magical scenes of the heaven, the mortal world, and the Netherworld emerged before Ji Hao's eyes, while a nicely scented wind gust into his head, shaking his soul. Ji Hao felt that his soul was even flying out of his body.

The golden bridge quaked and suddenly slowed down. Before, it was fleeting, but now, it had been moving forward almost inch by inch.

Yu Yu sneered and pointed at the island. The four-colored sword lights shone out of his sleeve and composed a giant circle that shredded the space. Following a long-lasting series of screams and howls, the endless images were broken by him with a single move. Ji Hao even saw countless twisted hazy human figures being cut into pieces.

"Sky devils?" Ji Hao was shocked.

"Sky devils indeed." Dachi blandly responded, "My friends, you created multiple worlds with sky devils to reach your great Dao. You guided sky devils here, but you failed to restrain them. Now, even your bodies are trapped by sky devils. Do you need a hand from us?"

The linden tree and the colorful lotus shook slightly. Countless twisted, human-shaped figures emerged around them, each releasing a strong power. Clearly, these sky devils were much more powerful than Yu Zun, Xia Zun, and the other sky devils that Ji Hao had once encountered.

Suddenly, a colorful light shone eye-dazzlingly. Above the tree and the lotus, a clean, peaceful, glass-like world was faintly visible. In that glass world, two golden men were lying under two small pagodas, with bitter looks on their faces. They wore all kinds of jewels, and their bodies glowed brightly with a golden light. They were wrapped in layers of colorful human-shaped figures, which pressed them down like two hills.

Obviously, they were trapped in this glass world.

Chapter 1869: Raise the Cauldrons

Si Wen Ming returned, and the entire humankind was refreshed.

The clan leaders and princes who were close to Si Wen Ming, along with some other capable human beings, all gathered in Chong Mountain with heavy gifts, to congratulate Si Wen Ming. Si Wen Ming refused the gifts, but held a banquet to treat his friends.

The clan leaders who followed Emperor Xun were now in a constant state of anxiety. Every day and night, they sank in a panic and murmured to themselves without knowing what to do. Some of them took their troops and sneakily escaped from Pu Ban City, as they dared not to have anything to do with Emperor Xun anymore.

For now, Si Wen Ming didn't have the time to hold these people responsible for what they had done. He led an enormous force and traveled across the mountain ranges and rivers, which had the most important earth and water meridians buried underneath. In each of these areas, he connected the nine cauldrons with the earth meridians and water meridians, leaving the patterns of all mountains and rivers of Pan Gu Motherland on the nine cauldrons.

According to the agreement between Ji Hao and Wuzhi Qi, because of the contributions that Wuzhi Qi made to the humankind in the later period of the flood-control mission, Si Wen Ming didn't seal Wuzhi Qi. Instead, he let Wuzhi Qi create a clone, then sealed the clone in the Huai Water eye.

After that, the figure of a roaring fierce ape emerged in the core area of the Huai Water on the surface of a cauldron. The true spirit of this ape was connected with the nine cauldrons. Therefore, the Huai Water was added with a spirit, which allowed Si Wen Ming to easily borrow the Huai Water's power through the streamflow hydrograph of Huai Water on the cauldron.

Barefoot, Si Wen Ming traveled across Pan Gu Motherland with

his countless followers. Countless fierce creatures from the flood period had still been hurting human beings, and most of them were water-kind spirit creatures. Si Wen Ming took their true spirits and left their figures on the cauldrons, then sealed them under mountains or in rivers.

The true spirits of these beasts were suppressed and sent into the earth meridians by the cauldrons. Thus, their breaths were connected with the earth meridians. Through the measureless power of the nine cauldrons, the owner of the cauldrons was able to control the powers of these earth meridians. With one thought, Si Wen Ming now could turn the oceans into desert, and turn the mountains into plains.

During the first few months, Si Wen Ming and his followers trudged through the mountains and rivers with difficulties. But, as more and more fierce creatures were sealed under the rivers and mountains, and as more and more rivers, mountains, and figures of fierce beasts emerged on them, the nine cauldrons grew more and more powerful.

By now, with one single thought, Si Wen Ming could teleport his people and himself to millions of miles away with the power of earth meridians. As long as Si Wen Ming continued to tread on Pan Gu Motherland, he and his people could move as fast as Ji Hao with the golden bridge.

As they moved faster and faster, their working efficiency grew higher and higher. As the dangerous, harmful creatures on Pan Gu Motherland were all suppressed by the nine cauldrons, the earth meridian power of the entire Pan Gu Motherland gradually connected with the nine cauldrons, and the powers of the cauldrons grew stronger and stronger.

In less than a year, Si Wen Ming and his people finished this work. Afterward, he returned to Pu Ban City with the nine cauldrons, his countless supporters, and also Ao Bai, Qing Qiang, and the other important members from the dragon-kind and

phoenix-kind.

The nine cauldrons floated above Pu Ban City. From the Magi Palace, eight-thousand elite Magi trod on clouds and flew over. The eight-thousand were all peak-level Divine Magi, upon which, they had all been cultivating themselves with the secret soul-cultivation method which was given by Si Wen Ming, and came from Ji Hao.

Human Magi never cultivated their souls. As their bodies grew stronger and stronger, their spirit blood would nourish their souls and naturally improve their soul powers. But, these eight-thousand carefully selected Magi had already grown primordial spirits after cultivating themselves with the soul-cultivation magic from Ji Hao. They had powerful souls, that made them stronger than ordinary Divine Magi by at least a hundred folds.

In a luxurious palace in Pu Ban City, Emperor Xun was screaming at his trusted followers, ordering them to raise an army and attack Si Wen Ming. He said that it would be the best if they could cut off Si Wen Ming's head!

However, these followers of Emperor Xun, who would usually tried everything they could to flatter him, were now so quiet. Even the most arrogant elders from Gong Sun Family was now sitting on the ground hopelessly, trembling while looking at the people behind Si Wen Ming.

Those people were tall and strong; their bodies glowed with bright and magical lights, and every single move of theirs was supported by a tremendous natural power, which even quaked the whole world...

Their faces could be found from some books in the secret library in the Magi Palace. They were Fuxi, Suiren, Shennong, Xuanyuan, Shaohao, Taihao...Cangjie, who invented writing, and other ancient powerful human beings. Hundreds of famous powerful human beings had all been standing quietly behind Si Wen Ming.

These people were the ancestors of all the large families and

clans...The Gong Sun Family elder on the scene would never dare to attack their own ancestors, no matter how brave and arrogant they were.

Emperor Xun screamed hysterically. He shouted that he was the true human emperor, that he took over the crown from Emperor Shun's hands in a decent abdication ceremony. He wielded a small dagger, bared his upper body, and rushed out of the palace while howling shrilly, fearlessly charging at Fuxi and the other former emperors.

In the next moment, the world began shaking. Strong streams of spirit blood power rose from the eight-thousand Magi' heads as they activated their internal spirit stars and composed a tractive magic formation as they touched their chosen natural stars!

Right above Pu Ban City, in front of countless human beings, these eight-thousand Magi determinedly challenged the level of Supreme Magi!

Since the beginning, only twelve known Supreme Magi existed among all human beings!

But at this very moment, eight-thousand Magi challenged this level together. The entire sky was suddenly illuminated, as countless natural stars dazzled and poured streams of starlight down into these eight-thousand Magi' bodies.

An old, mottled altar appeared above the city. Strands of magical will power gathered from all directions. The bodies of some relatively weaker Magi were nearly burst by the tremendous natural star powers. The souls of some of them were strong enough, and consequently, their minds were almost absorbed by their stars. But, with the help of this will power, these Magi made it.

A mighty star power began spreading from their bodies. Their bodies blurred slowly while being wrapped in layers of starlight. They were clearly making the breakthrough!

Eight-thousand Supreme Magi were going to emerge from the humankind in one go!

Si Wen Ming smiled. Under his control, the nine cauldrons composed a square formation and surrounded the eight-thousand Magi.

Gradually, numerous natural stars emerged from the cauldrons' surfaces, representing the eight-thousand Supreme Magi. Si Wen Ming wasn't a divine emperor, but through the eight-thousand Supreme Magi, through their spirit stars, and through the nine cauldrons, he was now able to control the powers of eight-thousand natural stars!

These were merely eight-thousand Supreme Magi. If more and more Supreme Magi emerge from the humankind, and if every natural star had an owner...By then, Si Wen Ming would be even more powerful than divine emperors. Ancient divine emperors couldn't command all the star kings, but Si Wen Ming could command all Supreme Magi who belonged to the humankind!

As long as the nine cauldrons existed, Si Wen Ming would be able to command divine emperors and rule the world!

Sensing the formidable power, Emperor Xun's tiny dagger suddenly dropped on the ground. He kneeled on the ground and burst into cries, "I'm innocent...Emperor Shun did this to me! He forced me to be the emperor! I quit, I quit. Si Wen Ming, I'll give you the crown! You'll be the emperor...Please don't kill me! Please!"

Chapter 1870: The Three 'Pengs' Make a Surprise Attack

In the glass world, things were beautiful.

The two golden men were surrounded in strands of light. One of them had a bitter look, while the other one was laughing happily. The light surrounding them was boundless as an ocean, and the air was suffused with the magical feeling of Dao that emitted from their bodies.

Sacred, solemn, indescribable, immeasurable... The two golden men quietly lied in the glass world like the owners of that world. Soap-bubble-like light spots were sparkling around them. Each light spot was a world, and within each second, countless stories would happen in those worlds.

Ji Hao silently sensed the powers which had been releasing from those small worlds. If one put a cultivator into one of these small worlds, he or she would go through thousands of lives in there within one Pan Gu world second. In that small world, the heart of this cultivator would be strengthened, and he would see through everything, revealing all the ultimate natural secrets.

This was indeed a supreme cultivation method.

But, judging by the colorful figures wrapped tightly around these two golden men, and all kinds of negative emotions were spreading from their bodies. With the twisted faces and weird creatures in those sparkling light spots, Ji Hao knew that these two golden men weren't good!

These nearly tangible sky devils were only slightly weaker than Master Spirit-slaughter, but there were billions of them. Uncountable sky devils clung on these two golden men like greedy leaches, absorbing the bright light which had been emitting from their bodies. The small worlds they created were also polluted by

sky devils.

Ji Hao even saw a colorful light glowing on the two golden men's foreheads, which meant that their true bodies might have been invaded by sky devils as well.

The red-robed Yu Yu raised his wine calabash and poured some wine into his mouth, then threw a sideways glance at the two golden men and said coldly, "I think we should let them sleep like this. If we wake them up..." Clicking his tongue, he continued, "Look at those two unruly clones of theirs, who believed that they were the real Priest Hua and Priest Mu. In the future, they would certainly go against us."

"We need them." Priest Dachi hid his hands in sleeves while looking at the two golden men with a pair of deeply sunken eyes, saying, "In the old days, our Shifu sealed Priest Yun in the great Dao, and they helped...Now, Priest Yun has escaped, and we still need their help."

"Let's free them. We're true descendants of Pan Gu after all. The natural fortune of Pan Gu world is always under our control...Besides, Yu Yu, you alone can deal with both of them. What's there to worry about?" Said Priest Qingwei blandly.

Ji Hao curved a mouth corner down. Indeed, Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu were true descendants of Pan Gu, and the natural fortune of Pan Gu world would always be under their control. If the three of them united in a concentrated effort, Priest Hua and Priest Mu could surely never win. Yu Yu alone could defeat both Priest Hua and Priest Mu. But, what if Dachi and Qingwen decided to join their side?

Of course, Ji Hao couldn't say it out loud!

"Ji Hao, go, ring your bell." Priest Dachi smiled faintly and said, "That is a supreme treasure made from the Buzhou Mountain. Its power is measureless, can banish and destroy all kinds of evil. It will be enough to wake our two friends up. And conveniently, it

will let them owe you another favor."

Priest Qingwei also smiled and said, "Even though our two friends have always been shameless, they will thank Ji Hao at least with one top-grade pre-world supreme treasure for freeing them from sky devils. Otherwise, how can they ever face any other people?"

Ji Hao smiled. Beside him. Po, Gui Ling, and his other brothers and sisters looked at him with envy.

As Qingwei said, how could Priest Hua and Priest Mu be shameless enough to not give Ji Hao anything in return after being woken up by Ji Hao with the Pan Gu bell? Western Wasteland was poor, and they might not be as wealthy as Priest Dachi and his two brothers...But, they could certainly give at least one top-grade supreme treasure. After all, they were the masters of a large sect!

Ji Hao trod on a fiery cloud and shielded his entire body with the Pan Gu bell, carefully flying to the island.

The linden tree and the colorful lotus remained motionless, as if they had never changed since the beginning of time. However, the colorful figures which tightly wrapped the two golden men were stirred. Thousands of figures left the two golden men and transformed into all kinds of phantoms, encircling Ji Hao.

Ji Hao gave a bright shout as he pointed his finger at the sky. Nine enormous suns rose from his head. The dazzling golden sunlight swept across the whole area along with the power of sun, which was the most positive power in the world. As a result, the phantoms approaching Ji Hao were set ablaze.

Following shrill screams, countless phantoms around Ji Hao burned with a colorful fire. Strands of smoke puffed out of the fire, along with a thick aroma. Thousands of colorful figures showed their faces from the phantoms and fled desperately in every direction, with the colorful fire burning all over their bodies.

Ji Hao pulled out the Pan Gu sword and tinkled the sword edge with a finger. Beams of sword light silently flashed across the space and penetrated these colorful figures. The Pan Gu sword could be labeled as the fiercest weapon in Pan Gu world now. The endless intent of killing shredded these colorful figures, destroyed their souls, and left jelly-like colorful light spheres scattered in the air. From the Pan Gu bell, streaks of light spiraled out and swirled all the colorful lights into the bell. Inside the bell, the Chaos power vibrated and purified these colorful soul lights, turning them into the purest soul grains.

Ji Hao approached the island. Suddenly, Priest Dachi snorted coldly. Black and white mists rose from his head and wove into a giant hand, slapping down to the area right by Ji Hao's side.

Bang!

A figure was thrown out of the space by Priest Dachi. He laughed and released a pale-white light from his head. The light immediately turned into thirteen devils with white armors and long spears, which roared thunderously and charged at Ji Hao.

The nine-meters-tall, heavily armored devils looked ferocious, releasing a cold power that made Ji Hao's heart thump. Any of these thirteen devils was stronger than Ji Hao!

"Peng Zhi, aren't you ashamed? Stabbing a kid in the back? Pah!" Yu Yu burst into bright laughter.

He spouted a mouthful of wine; the wine drops became sharp, crystalline, flying swords. They swished up and lunged towards the thirteen devils from all directions, leaving a series of arc light beams in the air.

At this moment, Ji Hao suddenly sensed a coldness coming at him. He hurriedly turned his body and swung the Pan Gu sword sideways.

Clank!

A three-feet-long white needle collided against the sword. Ji Hao couldn't stop trembling as a strange cold power drilled aggressively into his body through the Pan Gu sword. Ji Hao wasn't able to stop it, but the Pan Gu sword buzzed shrilly and blasted the cold power.

"Eh? Yu Yu, you took a good disciple…And, he has a good sword!"

Following a soft, warm voice, three pale-white figures showed up. Looking at these three immortal-like beings who were wrapped in powers of Dao, Ji Hao couldn't help but feel good; he felt like a newborn baby who saw its mother.

Chapter 1871: Dragon Mother Suddenly Attacks

Looking at the Three 'Pengs', Ji Hao felt his tightened spirit power suddenly loosening. He wanted to kneel before them, to think nothing and do nothing, but relax, fall asleep...Sleep, sleep...forever and ever.

At that moment, the Pan Gu bell rang, and a tremor went through Ji Hao's body. He immediately lowered his head and saw a faint white light shine out of his heart and lower abdomen, then burst into raging shouts. He realized that just now, the 'three corpses' inside his body were activated and had directly controlled his mind!

"Pengs!" Ji Hao stared at the three priests yelled.

The three 'Pengs' were wearing pure white robes as they smilingly stood in the air, looking quite amiable. Their bodies were blurry; it seemed that they didn't have physical bodies. While looking at then, Ji Hao felt like looking at himself in a mirror!

Yes, after being awakened up by the Pan Gu bell, Ji Hao carefully observed the three 'Pengs'. They made Ji Hao feel like looking at himself in a mirror, clear, familiar. But a while later, Ji Hao had a strange feeling, that made him ask himself over and over again, 'Who are you?'

At first, he asked the reflection in the mirror 'who are you?', and then, he couldn't help but starting asking himself, 'Who am I?'

He was confused again, and began doubting his own existence. Was he really 'him'? Was this body, which was now standing in the air, really his? Was he 'Ji Hao'? But, who was 'Ji Hao'? Why was he 'Ji Hao'? What did this name mean? Why...Why did this body named 'Ji Hao' exist?

A strange power began corroding Ji Hao's body and embryo of

Dao. From the roots of 'cause and effect', this power aimed to wipe all traces of Ji Hao. If Ji Hao failed to stop this power, he would cease to exist!

In the past, in the future, even at present, once this power succeeded, Ji Hao would be gone; no one would remember him or think of him; anything and anyone that once related to him would twist and change.

Even his parents, Ji Xia and Qing Fu, would forget him...No, it shouldn't be called 'forget', because this thing would never happen...They wouldn't have a son named Ji Hao; instead, they might have another child, with a different name...

Even Gold Crow Clan, Yao Mountain City, the throne of East Emperor...Everything about Ji Hao would be twisted and changed by this strange power, and the changes would be unpredictable.

This power had gone beyond the regular 'power' or 'magic' that people knew. Instead, it was derived from the original Dao. It could twist 'causes and effects', change realities; it was unpredictable, mysterious, and couldn't be understood and touched by ordinary living beings!

Buzz!

Above Ji Hao's head, the Pan Gu bell rang deeply and strongly. The sound waves generated circles of Chaos ripples that spun rapidly around him. Following a rumbling noise, the mill of Dao emerged behind. The great Dao of destruction and creation supported each other, generating a magical devouring power that began cleaning out all strange powers around Ji Hao.

An extremely thin beam of white light came from the three 'Pengs', penetrated the space, and pierced deeply into Ji Hao's heart.

The bell ring broke this white light, while the mill of Dao seized and shattered it, then ground and devoured it inch by inch, bit by

bit.

The barely visible white light contained a tremendous power. The mill of Dao devoured merely an about three-feet-long section of it, but after that, an overwhelming power was sent into Ji Hao's body by the mill. Ji Hao's embryo of Dao began swelling like a balloon, and his heart of Dao was enlightened. Somehow, his understanding of the great Dao of Pan Gu world suddenly grew much deeper than before!

Transparent marks of Dao spread from Ji Hao's body like flowing water streams. Strands of clear light shone out of his body and gradually formed a hundreds of meters wide glowing cloud above his head.

Earlier on, Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu were ready to take action to save Ji Hao when they saw the white light on Ji Hao's forehead, heart and lower abdomen. But little did they think that the Pan Gu bell would waken Ji Hao up, and the mill of Dao, which was created by Ji Hao based on what he learned, would actually absorb a part of the white light and make a great harvest!

"Haha, my three friends, are you ashamed?" Yu Yu threw away the emptied wine calabash and sent up the four sharp swords to spread the sword formation. Laughing wildly, he gripped a green long sword and rushed at the three 'Pengs'.

"You sneakily attacked my disciple, but my disciple got such a great gift from you! How many years have you been sealing the original Dao to create that 'three corpses light'? Haha... Thank you, thank you!"

Hearing Yu Yu, Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei both shook their heads and chuckled. The 'three corpses light' was a frightful power generated from the original Dao that the three 'Pengs' stole from Pan Gu world. It could twist 'causes and effects', and disorder the entire universe. A short section of the 'three corpses light' contained an immeasurable power of Dao. Ji Hao captured a three-

feet-long section of the 'three corpses light', yet what he gained from it was as great as the result of billions of years of the three 'Pengs' cultivation!

The three 'Pengs' stole the original Dao to create the 'three corpses light'. Therefore, every inch of the 'three corpses light' led to a disastrous natural punishment, and all the natural punishments had been taken by the three 'Pengs'. Ji Hao took a section of the 'three corpses light' from them, but he didn't need to take any natural punishment, or pay any price!

Yu Yu laughed out loud, while Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei shook their hands as they smiled and exclaimed over Ji Hao's luck. They each threw a quick glance at their own disciples. After absorbing the three-feet-long section of 'three corpses light', Ji Hao would probably surpass their senior disciples.

He was so lucky to be able to advance so fast! How strange! Back when Yu Yu took Ji Hao as a disciple, Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei never sensed any special natural fortune from Ji Hao. But, how could he be so lucky?

"Let's go fight outside!" The three 'Pengs' cast a meaningful glance at Ji Hao, then said slowly, "Otherwise, things might get complicated if we break those bottles and jars."

"Go, go, go!" Priest Dachi laughed resonantly. He, Qingwei, and Yu Yu gave a sonorous growl in one voice, then transformed into streaks of light and swiftly left Pan Gu world for the Chaos, along with the three 'Pengs'.

Once the three 'Pengs', Yu Yu, and his brothers left, a cold voice could be heard, "Ji Hao kid, and you little brats, none of you can wake those two idiots as long as I'm here!"

Thud!

One of Priest Qingwei's disciples, who had a jade cauldron floating above his head, was suddenly sent flying to thousands of

meters away by a golden staff.

Chapter 1872: Monsters

"Brothers, be careful!" Priest Dachi's disciple, Priest Xuandu growled out loud. A purple lantern rose from his head and released clouds of purple smoke along with scorching airstreams. The space quaked, and hundreds of figures immediately jumped out.

The group of people were led by Dragon Mother. Shixin and his brothers were armed to the teeth as they stood behind her. Behind them were a large group of dragon elders and dragon kings, who devotedly followed Dragon Mother and her sons, and arrayed for a battle.

Apart from them, the three friends from Mount Skeleton smiled and bowed to Ji Hao. Kun Peng and Xiang Liu, who disappeared after the flood ebbed, sneered at Ji Hao with nearly a hundred powerful spirit creatures.

In addition, tens of strange-looking priests, who were wearing long robes and treading on clouds, had been looking at Po and his brothers and sisters expressionlessly. Zang Yuanzi was clearly the leader of these priests. He was holding a large white flag in his left hand and a burning pestle in the other, while gazing at Po from head to toe.

"Zang Yuanzi!" Po took two steps forward, then smiled and nodded at him and said, "So, you're a disciple of the three 'Pengs'...Aren't you afraid that those two stingy masters might take away your soul and make you suffer forever?"

Bang Yuanzi and the tens of priest behind him all burst into laughter. "They need to have a chance to wake up before that. Not to mention the fact that our three masters are measurelessly powerful, those two need to be able to survive." Said Zang Yuanzi coldly and carelessly.

Without giving Po a chance to talk, Zang Yuanzi wielded the large flag in his left hand and spread a dense white mist. Fierce gusts of

wind swirled in the mist and approached Po, Gui Ling, and the other disciples of Yu Yu swiftly.

Kun Peng, Xiang Liu, and nearly a hundred powerful spirit creatures roared out. They glanced around and then laughed as they pounced on Xuandu.

Priest Dachi didn't have many disciples. Except his senior disciple Xuandu, the other few were less famous. Compared to Priest Xuandu, his younger brothers were not only less famous, but were far weaker than him. Kun Peng, Xiang Liu, and the group of spirit creatures encircled Priest Dachi's disciples and wrapped them up with strands of evil power and gusts of evil wind.

Dragon Mother gave a sonorous roar as she pointed at Priest Qignwei's disciples. Behind him, Shixin and his brothers roared in one voice and formed a great formation with hundreds of powerful dragons, encircling them.

Priest Yu Yu had much more disciples than his two brothers. Priest Dachi only had one senior disciple, while Priest Qingwei had merely about ten capable disciples under his guidance. After being encircled by hundreds of powerful dragons, Priest Qignwei's disciples sank in an arduous battle.

While the others fought intensely, Dragon Mother approached Ji Hao step by step, with a twisted smile on his face.

Behind Dragon Mother, the three friends from Mount Skeleton were smilingly proudly. From time to time, they swept across Ji Hao and the other three battling groups with their eyes. Sharp and fierce powers could be sensed from their bodies, as they seemed ready to take an action at any moment.

"Ji Hao kid...give me my brother's body back!" From tens of meters away, Dragon Mother reached her hand to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao glanced at Dragon Mother, then cast a glimpse at the three Mount Skeleton friends. He didn't want to waste time talking to

Dragon Mother. Instead, the golden bridge flashed across the space and brought him flying to the island. He clenched both fists, prepared to ring the Pan Gu bell.

"Stop him!" Dragon Mother roared while she raised her golden staff to strike at Ji Hao's back and brought up a strong gust of wind. She was incredibly fast, and had even caught up with Ji Hao.

The Pan Gu bell buzzed and released streams of Chaos power. Dragon Mother's golden staff stirred the Chaos power, but failed to do any harm to Ji Hao. Watching Ji Hao rush to the island and prepare to ring the bell, Dragon Mother burst into raging growls.

"My little friend, please stay!" Guzun laughed out loud and said to Ji Hao blandly.

Guzun looked like a mysterious immortal. As he wielded his broad sleeves, countless tiny bone pieces flew out of his sleeves and clanged against each other while piecing into a long, white bone whip, lunging to Ji Hao's waist as fast as a bolt of thunder.

Ji Hao chuckled. He too wielded his broad sleeve and vented a wave of sad and hoarse cries, which weren't so pleasant to hear. With an evil expression on his face, Priest Sadness darted out of Ji Hao's sleeve while blinking his little beady eyes.

Guzun quaked slightly. He couldn't have even dreamed that Ji Hao had Priest Sadness hiding in his sleeve. Priest Sadness's power was evil and mysterious, aimed at souls and primordial spirits. Due to his carelessness, Guzun suffered a heavily strike.

Guzun spat a mouthful of white spirit blood, then glared at Priest Sadness and yelled, "Old Sadness, why're you here?"

The bone whip dropped softly, as Priest Sadness cried louder and louder, shriller and shriller. He stared straight at Guzun without saying a word, just crying ceaselessly. His heartbreaking cries distracted Guzun, such that Guzun's eyes were even obviously a little unfocused.

Guling snorted coldly. He raised both arms and released three bone swords from his sleeve to fiercely cut at Ji Hao.

"The boys' bell has an amazing defensive power! No ordinary treasure can hurt him!"

Before her voice faded, Ji Hao raised his right sleeve. Bamboo Master sighed slightly and walked out of Ji Hao's sleeve with large steps. As he shook his bamboo stick, the entire area was immediately covered in shreds of green bamboo shadows, and Guling was immediately swirled in a bamboo formation.

Dragon Mother snarled at Ji Hao and wielded her golden staff, striking at him thousands of times. But, no matter how hard she tried, she couldn't hurt even a hair of Ji Hao. On top that, the wave of violent strike launched by Dragon Mother sent Ji Hao forward for a long distance.

Seeing Guzun and Guling being trapped and Dragon Mother's attacks delivering no effect, Gue finally made a move.

She looked like a little girl, but the moment she moved, her bones began swelling at an unimaginable rate. Within a blink, she became an over ten-thousand-meters tall skeleton and roared thunderously. A white light shone out of her eyes, mouth, nose, and ears, pouring towards Ji Hao like seven great rivers.

When the white light dazzled, the space around Ji Hao's body froze suddenly. The golden bridge emitted waves of golden light and generated a series of tinkling noise. Following the noise, a giant amount of bone pieces and dust burst out of the space, as if the space in this area had become a giant piece of bone.

Even the golden bridge was stopped by Gue's white light. Ji Hao frowned and let out the East Emperor's chariot.

The Chaos dragon, which was Dragon Mother's brother, raised its pair of enormous forepaws and created a giant hole in the space along with a thunderous boom. Next, Ji Hao trod on the golden

bridge and lunged, easily stepping on the island.

Seeing the Supreme Chaos dragon before the chariot, Dragon Mother's eyes turned blood-red.

Chapter 1873: With Up with A Start

"Idiot! Wake up! Don't stop me!"

Dragon Mother roared hysterically with rage at her brothers' body.

East Emperor's chariot floated in the air like a sun. The Chaos dragons looked at Dragon Mother emotionlessly. After being processed by Yu Yu, it had already become Ji Hao's strongest killing machine. No matter how loudly Dragon Mother screamed, it wouldn't respond.

"You, you, you...I should have devoured you! I should have turned all your spirit blood into mine!" Dragon Mother screamed. She turned away from Ji Hao, raised her pair of heavy golden staff, and pounced on the Chaos dragon.

Anyhow, it was her brother's body, and she couldn't leave it in Ji Hao's hands.

Miles long beams of blood-red light shone out of the Chaos Dragon's eyes. The dragon raised its enormous claws and lashed the air with its long tails while rushing at Dragon Mother ferociously. It was a puppet made from a corpse, but the supreme Chaos dragon's incomparable will of fighting remained in it, even purer and stronger than before. Every move it made was extremely natural, and made Dragon Mother suffer!

The enormous skeleton, which was transformed from Gue's body, burst into thunderous roars while marching towards Ji Hao. She was enraged when Ji Hao shattered her white light with the supreme Chaos dragon. She widely opened her mouth and shot a wave of white light spots at Ji Hao. The light spots became thumb-sized arrows that swished towards Ji Hao, leaving pale-white traces in the air.

"Mr. Crow, Fuso, I'll leave this one to you!" Ji Hao laughed and

wielded his sleeve to let Mr. Crow out along with the Fuso staff. Seeing the tiny white arrows coming from every direction, Mr. Crow dared not to take them with his body. Instead, he poked the Fuse staff into the space and released a streak of fiery light. Next, Fuso tree showed its real face.

The tens of thousands of miles tall Fuso tree was blazing ragingly. Layers of flame wrapped the enormous tree and incinerated the white arrows within a blink, generating a sizzling noise.

"Gue?" A giant face emerged from Fuso tree, looking at Gue with its eyes narrowed while saying slowly, "That year, I took a root of yours. Little one, don't you remember how painful it was?"

Gue immediately shut her huge mouth. With shock, she stared at Fuso tree for quite a while, then turned back into a little girl and walked straight away without saying a word. She darted to hundreds of miles away within a twinkling of an eye and joined Guzun's battleground in a haste while yelling, "Big brother, let me help you!"

Fuso tree snorted coldly, then fixed his eyes on Dragon Mother and asked, "What did you do to offend this crazy woman? In the old days, not even dragon ancestor could handle her...They were husband and wife after all...Dragon ancestor imprisoned her in that ocean eye, which caused a great sensation."

Mr. Crow squatted on a branch of Fuso tree and tilted his head, looking at Dragon Mother, who was struggling against the Chaos dragon.

Obviously, between Dragon Mother and her brother, her brother was the main strength. Dragon Mother couldn't rival her brother back when he was still alive. Evil Yu Yu had processed his body with a series of secret magic, and upgraded his fierceness and fighting instincts to an extreme degree. Therefore, once the battle started, Dragon Mother fell into a disadvantage.

Along with sizzling noises, a few bone-deep wounds were left on Dragon Mother's body. The supreme Chaos dragon tore apart her scales and almost ripped her entire body apart.

"Pengs!" Dragon Mother let out a golden light from her mouth to defend herself against the supreme Chaos dragon which pounced on her swiftly, while shrieking towards the higher sky, "Why are your helpers a bunch of trashes? All of them are useless! Are you out of helpers? Stop that Ji Hao kid!"

Dragon Mother was extremely wrathful, also scared to an indescribable point.

She was imprisoned in an ocean eye for countless years, and she was so tired and afraid of the lonely and dark life in there. She didn't want to be locked in there ever again. But, she clearly understood that if Ji Hao really woke up these two sleeping saints, she wouldn't end well!

"You idiots! You knew these two are trapped in here, but why didn't you kill them when you had a chance?" Dragon Mother complained, "Look at these idiots you brought here to help. None of them is helping, none! They're all useless, useless, useless!"

Before her voice faded, a sonorous voice could be heard. Following the voice, a giant hammer which was dazzling with purple thunderbolts and held in Po's hands, struck on Zang Yuanzi's body tens of times in a row, shattering Zang Yuanzi's three-headed and twenty-four-armed body. Zang Yuanzi flew to tens of miles away while howling in pain and landed on a cloud, then began vomiting blood.

Guiling gave vent to a resonant roar and suddenly released a dark bolt of thunder from her mouth. The thunderbolt exploded, burning and breaking the bodies of the seven to eight priests who had been attacking her, and making them shamble back.

Wudang, Jinling, and Yu Yu's other disciples all made their moves. They composed a sword formation and severely wounded

Zang Yuanzi's brothers and sisters with the sharp and swift sword power strands. The bodies of over a half of Zang Yuanzi's brothers and sisters were shredded, leaving their embryos of Dao and primordial spirits fleeing desperately.

Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei' disciples threw out all kinds of powerful treasures and forced back Kun Peng, Xiang Liu, Shixin, and his brothers. All of them were trapped in a 'Yin and Yang Taiji formation' which was activated by Xuandu; they couldn't retreat, and couldn't win either, unable to do anything but keep roaring hoarsely.

Ji Hao glanced back at the battlefield and couldn't help but burst into bright laughter.

Shreds of colorful shadows rushed at Ji Hao and created layers of images, sparkling lights, thick aromas, and dense mists, along with beautiful melodies. Ji Hao shouted out loud and punched the Pan Gu bell with both fists and with all his strength.

"Priest Mu, Priest Hua...Didn't your clones contact you?" Ji Hao yelled, "Wake up, wake up, wake up! Your home is being turned upside down by some other people!"

Along with a sonorous bell ring, a giant figure emerged on the Pan Gu bell. A clear light shone from the bell and became a glowing rain that softly fell to the island. The light landed on the colorful figures and made them scream shrilly and run desperately. Then, the light fell on the two golden men who were lying on the ground, and made them open their eyes.

From their eyes, Ji Hao saw the changes of season, the circulation of life and death, the sun, moon, and all natural stars, and all the living beings which struggled and wandered in the mortal world. Ji Hao made an eye contact with each of them, and immediately felt like he had lived through billions of years within the last moment, that even his heart of Dao turned as lifeless as a dried well. Ji Hao felt like an old man who had been cultivating himself

for billions of years.

"So that is what it is!" The two golden men straightened their bodies and each reached out a hand, shaking them together. Suddenly, a raging golden fire spiraled up from behind them.

Thud! Thud!

Their bodies exploded into a dazzling golden light, then from the light, two figures emerged slowly.

"The 'quietus'...is attained!" Ji Hao's pupils shrank to the size of needle points while he watched the linden tree and the colorful lotus vanish along with the two golden men.

Chapter 1874: Eat Their Words

"The long dream in thousands of worlds!" Amidst the golden light, a scrawny priest drawled. He had a bitter face, with his hair coiled in a pair of buns, and each bun having a lotus on it. A colorful branch was held in his hand.

"The fruit of Dao is harvested today." Another priest slowly walked out of the golden light. This priest was smiling while holding a brightly glowing staff. His hair were tied in three buns on his head, and each bun also had a small lotus.

"Priest Mu? Priest Hua?" Ji Hao looked at them with shock and asked without thinking.

The white-skinned smiling priest, who looked like an immortal, shook his head slowly and responded, "Priest Mu and Priest Hua have ceased to exist in this world. Now, we are...The Great Master and Second Master of our sect. As for names, we haven't decided yet."

This priest grinned as he glanced at the Pan Gu bell which floated above Ji Hao's head. As a beam of cold light flashed across this priest's eyes, and a tremor went through Ji Hao's heart. As Ji Hao expected, this priest gave a long sigh and said, "My little friend, your bell is destined to belong to our sect. If I can hold this bell, I can certainly defeat the evils, destroy the devils, and protect the whole world."

He looked at Ji Hao seriously and continued with a deep voice, "For all living beings in the world, my little friend, please devote this bell to me, will you? Or, are you willing to join my sect to live happily ever after?"

Ji Hao coughed slightly and responded, "Masters, you have attained the great Dao of quietus, freed yourselves from your physical bodies, and achieved the ultimate freedom. In the future, you can choose every part of the great Dao of Pan Gu world.

Congratulations."

The two priests smiled faintly and nodded slightly at Ji Hao, but their eyes lingered on the Pan Gu bell, which floated above his head, the Pan Gu sword in his hand, and the golden bridge treading under his feet. From time to time, they cast glimpses at the East Emperor's chariot. When they saw the Chaos dragon which pulled the chariot and had been fighting against Dragon Mother, their eyes shone brightly.

Ji Hao sighed. Priest Mu was a linden tree while Priest Hua was a colorful lotus. They were limited by their physical bodies; therefore, no matter how talented they were, they didn't have much choice in the great Dao of Pan Gu world. They were gifted, but their gifts limited their development. Both the linden tree and the lotus had a nature of green, for which reason, if Priest Mu and Priest Hua chose to cultivate themselves with the Dao of fire or metal, they would surely be weaker than the other cultivators.

Ji Hao didn't know how long they had slept in here, or what did they learn from the thousands of small worlds that sky devils created. But, once they woke up, the linden tree and the colorful lotus vanished as their physical bodies. Thus, Priest Hua and Priest Mu disappeared, leaving these two masters in this world. They were Priest Hua and Priest Mu, but they weren't exactly Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

They freed themselves from the limitations given by the linden tree and the colorful lotus, and went beyond a certain level to reach the higher great Dao. That was why one of them said 'The fruit of Dao is harvested today'. Today, they were finally free, and had achieved their dreams.

"My little friend, you are a clear-minded person. You perceived our results of the great Dao of quietus, which means you are destined to be one of us." The three-bunned priest smiled at Ji Hao and said, "Why don't you be my disciple? We don't easily take disciples, but if you..."

Ji Hao interrupted him, "I don't want to give you my treasures. Do you know why? Because you owe me a debt!"

The two priests immediately stopped talking. The bitter-faced priest showed an even bitterer look, that every single wrinkle on his face was growing deeper. The smiling priest smiled brighter and brighter while looking at Ji Hao with his eyes sparkling. Ji Hao didn't know what he was thinking.

Abruptly, the smiling priest bowed to Fuso tree, which stood a short distance away. "Long time no see, Fuso, my friend. How have you been?" He said.

A wrinkled face emerged from the tree trunk and cast a meaningful glance at the two priests. "My two friends, you have such great constancy, cultivation, and power. You...You actually made it. Congratulations, congratulations! You've freed yourselves from your bodies and earned the ultimate freedom. Like the golden lotus in the fire and the light in the water, now that you have made it, your future will be boundless." Fuso tree sighed with envy and said.

The smiling priest responded, "My friend, are you willing to join us and be the third master of our sect? If you join us, we will surely share this result of Dao with you!"

Fuso tree remained silent shortly, then his branches began shaking like an old man shaking his head. "Not likely. That result of Dao of quietus fits your nature, which is why you attained it...I am full of fire, so how can I achieve quietus? If I go on that path, I will become a tree-shaped piece of coal, won't I?"

The two priests dropped their faces. Ji Hao coughed loudly and said in a deep voice, "Since you have woken up, you should remember what your clones have done all these years. Do you remember what you promised me when those Pan Yu saints broke your peaceful world? Help me with your full powers three times..."

The bitter-faced priest sighed heavily and closed his eyes, as if he

cared about nothing.

The smilingly one bowed to Ji Hao and gave a reply, "My little friend, you came to the wrong people. Priest Mu and Priest Hua made promises to you...But, they don't exist in this world anymore. Why did you come to us?"

The smiling priest wielded his sleeve and sent a tremendous force to Ji Hao. The Pan Gu bell buzzed and emitted a bright green light as Ji Hao tightened his muscles to withstand this ridiculously strong force.

Streams of Chaos power puffed out of Ji Hao's pores. In order to defend himself against this force, he boiled his spirit blood and activated his Pan Gu body. He suddenly grew to tens of meters tall while some faint marks of the great Dao of Chaos emerged on his skin.

A pure, vast, and wild power spread out from his body. Seeing this, the eyes of the two priests and Fuso tree shone simultaneously. The smiling priest praised, "What a strong physical body! You're perfect to join us and be our guard!"

Ji Hao gave a cold smile and responded, "I'm afraid you can't afford me...You two, are you really gonna shamelessly eat your own words?"

The smiling priest frowned and hollered, "Go to the ones who made the promise, who owed you the debt! I am not Priest Hua. What have I ever promised you?

The priest wielded his sleeve again as he smiled at Ji Hao while continuing, "If you don't want to give up, feel free to kill the two clones of Priest Hua and Priest Mu!"

Ji Hao clenched his teeth tight, even causing a creaking noise. These two had become truly shameless after they earned the ultimate freedom!

Chapter 1875: Twist the great Dao

In the peaceful world, Priest Hua and Priest Mu sat on lotuses as they cast a spell to control the great formation. They had firmly trapped the ten Pan Yu saints in the formation. Numberless disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu sat in the important spots of the formation and guarded the golden pagodas while ceaselessly attacking the enemies, who were sitting in a circle.

Yu Huo and the other Pan Yu saints sat quietly in a circle. While defending themselves against the strong pressure from the great formation, they had been communicating silently about how to break this formation. Strands of strange energies were flowing around their bodies, as they had been casting all kinds of magic to feel out the formation while discussing.

Pan Gu world had been suppressing them too strongly. Due to this reason, they were only allowed to exert less than ten percent of their powers. Therefore, Priest Hua and Priest Mu managed to trap them with the formation, even though they were merely two clones.

But, this group of Pan Yu saints wasn't anxious. Invading a great world was never an easy thing to do. They were patient enough to drill into the great Dao of Pan Gu world, and were experienced enough to adapt the suppression that Pan Gu world had been giving them. They had been restoring their powers bit by bit. Once they restored thirty to forty percent of their powers, any of them could easily kill Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

They had realized that the ones who had been fighting against them weren't the real Priest Hua and Priest Mu, but two powerful clones. They sneered in their minds — No one ever dared to be so careless when facing an invasion from Pan Yu world!

Suppressing them with two mere clones? This group of Pan Yu saints had made their minds. They decided that once they got a

chance, they would make Priest Hua and Priest Mu regret. If they captured these two clones alive, they would be able to directly attack the real Priest Hua and Priest Mu, and show their great powers to Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

The peaceful world remained peaceful as a faint glow loomed on this area, with Yu Huo and the other Pan Yu saints sat inside. The great formation that Priest Mu and Priest Hua built was dangerous and powerful indeed, but from the outside, it looked especially peaceful and harmless.

Occasionally, a few transparent golden flowers would descend from the sky. The weightless flowers slowly fell on the bodies of the group of Pan Yu world saints and became a wave of golden ripples that spread in the area. Then the group of Pan Yu saints trembled intensely, as if they were hit by a towering mountain.

Sometimes, gentle breezes would blow across. The bodies of the group of Pan Yu saints would sparkle with colorful light, which would entangle with the breezes. If the light dimmed and let the breezes sweep across their bodies, large pieces of skin and muscles would be blown off.

Sometime, drizzles would fall from the sky. When the raindrops fell, the group of Pan Yu saints would immediately activate their oddly shaped pre-world supreme treasure to shield themselves from the rain. The raindrops fell on the treasures, melted them slightly, froze them in a thick layers of ice, or dimmed their lights and weakened their powers.

This great formation was so dangerous yet peaceful-looking. Yu Huo and the other Pan Yu saints were confident indeed, but in this formation, they could barely breathe. While trying their best to defend themselves against the formation, they had all been absorbing the great Dao of Pan Gu world bit by bit.

"It's hard, isn't it?" A bland voice could be heard, as Priest Yun suddenly showed up like a ghost.

The expressions on Priest Mu and Priest Hua' faces changed instantly. They pointed at Priest Yun, unable to say a word.

Yu Huo and the other Pan Yu saints also stared at him with shock. Their powers were suppressed by Pan Gu world, but their eyes were still sharp. Yet, they failed to notice when Priest Yun showed up!

This great formation was the most powerful one that Priest Hua and Priest Mu built in their home. Its power was measureless and nearly inexhaustible, that ten Pan Yu saints were trapped in this formation without being able to break out. However, Priest Yun just walked in as if he were taking a stroll. His power was seriously intimidating.

"It'll soon end!" Priest Yun smilingly looked at the group of Pan Yu saints and said, "You're all good kids, good kids...Good, go destroy things and cause troubles. Do whatever you want...Remember, don't slaughter too many human beings. That is your bottom line."

"As long as you do not slaughter human beings, you can do whatever you want!" Priest Yun grinned and waved a hand. Following his move, the peaceful world was shattered like the reflections in a mirror.

The vast peaceful world collapsed. The boundless linden woods and lotus pond and the mountains, which were piled up by countless precious crystals and natural treasures, suddenly became strands of pure natural powers, being sent to the rest of the world by fierce gusts of wind. Countless palaces, pagodas, and numberless treasures in the treasuries were all turned into nothingness by Priest Yun, with just a wave of his hand. Since the beginning of the world, Priest Hua and Priest Mu had been collecting treasures and accumulating wealth. But just then, everything was gone.

All treasures had become strands of pure natural powers that

spread to the rest of Pan Gu world.

"People say that Western Wasteland is poor...But, you collected so many treasures. How can this place be called 'poor'?" Priest Yun looked at the dumbfounded Priest Hua and Priest Mu with an evil and twisted smile, then said, "Now, you're really poor! Hah, I didn't leave you even one jade coin! Hah! Haha! Haha!"

Priest Hua and Priest Mu's hearts sank. They tremblingly looked at Priest Yun, wanting to curse, but didn't have the courage.

If the real Priest Mu and Priest Hua were here, they might dare to put up a fight against Priest Yun. But sadly, they were just clones. They dared not to say a word at the moment, unless they were controlled by sky devils again.

"Yun, don't do this!" A bright shout came from a long distance away.

"Priest Jun, you're late!" Priest Yun chuckled, said, "That year, Buzhou Mountain was still there, serving as the core of Pan Gu world. You sealed me in deep in the great Dao with the power of Buzhou Mountain...But now, Buzhou Mountain has gone, and we can really wrestle!"

Laughing out loud, Priest Yun pointed both forefingers at the sky and then swung his arms down.

A thunderous boom could be heard. It seemed that something had happened in this world, but it also seemed that nothing had happened. Only the well-cultivated ones, who were closely connected with the great Dao, faintly sensed that the great Dao of the entire Pan Gu world had twisted in a strange way.

Yu Huo and the other Pan Yu saints leaped up from the ground. They were thrilled as they burst into a hysterical laughter.

The Pan Gu world was no longer suppressing them. By now, they could exert a hundred percent of their powers! These ten saints from Pan Yu world could now release all their powers!

"Die!" Yuji coldly smiled, threw a sideways glance at Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

The two clones didn't even manage to let out a scream before they were ground by an invisible, immense force, and turned into a strand of smoke.

Chapter 1876: Share A Bitter Hatred of the Enemy

The peaceful world collapsed. Since the prehistorical era, Priest Mu and Priest Hua had started to build this small independent world by adding every single brick and tile, every spell symbols and every magic seal themselves, with measureless time and efforts. But today, it collapsed just like that.

The whole peaceful world was turned into pure natural powers that merged into Pan Gu world.

Since the beginning of Pan Gu time, Priest Hua and Priest Mu had been collecting all kinds of treasures by fair or foul means, including lying, extortion, fraud, and plunder. All these treasures which were 'destined' to be theirs, the pearls and crystals which had piled into mountains, the golden sands and jades which had paved the earth, the coals which accumulated like water in an ocean, and other uncountable natural treasures...

They went back to where they came from.

The wealth they accumulated with solid efforts were thoroughly gone. Priest Yun said that he didn't leave them even one jade coin, and he truly didn't. Everything that belonged to Priest Mu and Priest Hua had become the purest natural powers and merged back into this world.

Also, since the prehistorical era, Priest Mu and Priest Hua had been trying their best to recruit disciples, and spending immeasurable time and energies to cultivate those disciples. At the moment, countless of their disciples were hiding in the collapsing peaceful world. After the humankind rose, Priest Hua and Priest Mu sent their disciples to travel across the world to recruit human cultivators, and these human cultivators were also in the collapsing peaceful world now.

Countless confused priests and cultivators stood on the ground, not knowing what to do.

This was the westernmost area of Pan Gu Motherland which used to belong to Western Wasteland. This place was rich in metal power. Nothing but deserts and cliffy monitions could be seen in this area. On the horizon, a few dead trees could be seen scattered on the ground, while withering grasses were growing sparsely on the ground.

A minute ago, these priests and cultivators were in the beautiful peaceful world, but suddenly, that world collapsed and they fell out of all kinds of secret spaces, landing in this poor wilderness.

All disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu were stunned. They looked around, not even knowing what just happened, whether they were the powerful ones who followed Priest Hua and Priest Mu since the ancient era, or the human disciples who had only cultivated under Priest Mu and Priest Hua' guidance for less than a thousand years.

Priest Yun laughed. Three streams of white mist rose from his head and glowed with a pale-white light. Within the light, the three 'Pengs' figures emerged. Immediately, the same white light shone out of the foreheads, hearts, and lower abdomens of all Priest Mu and Priest Hua' disciple. Next, they all kneeled on the ground and kowtowed to Priest Yun.

"Good!" Priest Yun laughed again and raised an arm, swirling all the priests who kowtowed to him into his sleeve. Then, he transformed into a streak of light and flashed away.

A cloud slowly flew over from the higher sky. On the cloud, a purple mist spread for tens of thousands of miles. A man stood inside the cloud and glanced down, then chased after Priest Yun.

Yu Huo and the other Pan Gu world saints suddenly felt cold when the man in the cloud glanced at them...After the quick glance, they felt their every single cell was cut out of their bodies

into pieces, and all their secrets and thoughts seemed to be fully exposed to the man.

If the man wanted to kill them, that would be as easy as them killing the two clones of Priest Hua and Priest Mu. They felt that the man could kill them by simply casting a glance at them. But fortunately, that man seemed to have no interest in doing that!

"The ruler of the great Dao!" Yu Huo trembled intensely. Scared by the man's glance, he nearly fell to the ground. "A ruler of Dao actually exists in this world...Fortunately, fortunately, we're like ants in his eyes..."

"No, he has an enemy!" Yu Ji also trembled, but he soon calmed back down. Next, he burst into hysterical screams. "The one who twisted the great Dao is his enemy...Hah, I've never heard anything like this, but it's real!"

"Let's do whatever we want!" Yu Ji reached his hands towards the sky. A dark sun emerged above his head and released a dreadful power of killing that swept across the whole area. Suddenly, the sky above Pan Motherland was entirely covered by dark clouds. "They didn't have time for us! This is our chance! This is our chance!" Said Yu Ji.

"Let's talk about how we should start...If that man truly has an enemy, we might really have a chance..." Said Yu Fan in a deep voice.

The group of Pan Yu saints gathered together. Momentarily, they exchanged billions of thoughts and made a decision which fitted their interests the most within the shortest span of time.

After Yu Huo and the other Pan Yu saints made their plan, the loyal disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu, who weren't taken away by Priest Yun, finally realized what had happened — Their sect, their home, was destroyed!

Even their Shifu, Priest Mu and Priest Hua, were killed!

'Run. Run as fast as possible. Run away from these saints from another world!'

These young cultivators hadn't even touched the true meaning of the great Dao. How could they ever rival whole ten saints?

They screamed and flew desperately up into the sky, casting their speed magics and fleeing as fast as they could. Among them, nearly a hundred priests who were valued the most by Priest Hua and Priest Mu triggered magic talismans which were made from linden leaves or lotus petals to help them run.

"Your souls all belong to me!" Yu Huo smiled. He opened his mouth and let out Pan Yu's brain. Thunderbolt-like strands of black mist spurted out of the brain and penetrated the bodies of ninety-nine percent of those fleeing priests. Their bodies collapsed, and their twisted souls were dragged into Pan Yu's bran, immediately becoming soul power after being absorbed by the brain.

Apart from the nearly a hundred who had magic talismans, all of Priest Mu and Priest Hua's disciples were almost wiped out!

Their home was destroyed, and their disciples were killed. The efforts that Priest Hua and Priest Mu had been making ever since the world was created were wasted. The wealthy Priest Mu and Priest Hua suddenly lost all they had and became 'paupers'.

...

In the starry void, the two priests were smiling at Ji Hao. No matter how sharp Ji Hao's gaze was, they just continued smiling.

They denied that they had anything to do with Priest Mu and Priest Hua, and firmly refused to pay any debt that was owed by Priest Mu and Priest Hua. Ji Hao asked them for help, but they just smiled and refused.

Suddenly, their eyes turned blood-red. Glaring at Pan Gu Motherland, they burst into a shrill scream in one voice.

"My little friend, how can Pan Gu world tolerate those brutal devil creatures?" They snarled, "We will pool our efforts together to kill those evil creatures! As cultivators, that's our duty!"

Chapter 1877: All Make Efforts

What happened?

Ji Hao closed his eyes. The sun shone upon the world, then 'saw' and 'memorized' everything happened in Pan Gu Motherland. After knowing what happened just now, Ji Hao smiled.

Their home was destroyed, and even their roots were broken. No wonder these two shameless priests were suddenly infuriated.

"My two friends, why are you so angry? Without discarding the old, there would be no coming of the new. The peaceful world went to quietus, and this perfectly proves the existence of your results of Dao. Congratulations, congratulations my friends! There is no making without breaking, that's true indeed!" Ji Hao laughed.

Ji Hao wielded his broad sleeve and continued laughing loudly, without worrying that he might offend the two priests, "My two friends, you've freed yourself from your physical bodies, and now, you can expect your ultimate great Dao. You have also been freed from your sect, which was a burden. When you found a new sect, it will certainly develop worldwide!"

The faces of the two priests twitched. Both the bitter-faced one and the smilingly one stared at Ji Hao with dagger-drawn eyes. They even wanted to cut Ji Hao into pieces. What Ji Hao said was...too sarcastic and ruthless!

What they had been accumulating ever since the creation of the world was destroyed by almost ninety-nine percent! They were well-cultivated beings with stable hearts of Dao, but still, they wanted to leap up and give vent to a torrent of abuse right now!

Snorting coldly, they rushed out with giant steps. Their bodies glowed with a golden light, and their faces were dark.

Dragon Mother was struggling against the supreme Chaos dragon. She was clearly weaker than the supreme Chaos dragon, as

she barely defended herself with a few powerful treasures. The supreme Chaos dragon left tens of bone-deep wounds on her body and nearly tore her body into pieces.

The two priests went to Dragon Mother as swiftly and quietly as ghosts. One of them gripped Dragon Mother's neck while the other one pressed a hand on the Supreme Dragon's head. In one voice, they hollered, "You are destined to join our sect. We could just use a guard!"

Dragon Mother roared ragingly as the bitter-faced priest grabbed her neck. She swung her golden staff at the bitter-faced priest's waist. But, as the priest pointed a finger at her, a string of shiny golden beads fell out of his sleeve and wrapped around Dragon Mother's neck.

Dragon Mother's body was softened instantly. She kneeled in the air and couldn't help but showed her real shape. The priest gripped her horn and threw three punches in her face in a row, making her vomit blood and raise a fiery light from her head. "Evil creature, are you willing to follow me? If not, I will kill you!"

Dragon Mother gave a sonorous roar, then screamed with fury, "If the dragon ancestor were still here, would you dare to bully me?"

The bitter-faced priest cast a spell and swept across Dragon Mother's throat with a pair of dagger-sharp eyes, then responded, "If the dragon ancestor were here, he would be destined to be a part of our sect too, and I would bring him in with all my power."

Feeling the strong intent of killing from this priest, Dragon Mother shut her mouth and dared not to say another word. Their home was destroyed, and countless disciples were slaughtered. They were so infuriated at the moment. Not to mention the dragon ancestor, even if Saint Pan Gu was standing right before their face, these two priests would roll up their sleeves and put up a fight against him.

The smiling priest pressed a hand on the supreme Chaos dragon's head. The chaos dragon roared ferociously and attacked the priest with its sharp teeth and claws. But, as the priest's fingers sparkled with a golden light, the Chaos dragon trembled, seeming to kneel.

Ji Hao gave a roared out loud. Treading on the golden bridge, he transformed into a streak of golden light and lunged to the smiling priest with the Pan Gu bell floating above his head. He covered the surrounding space with a shapeless and traceless magnetic force field, then raised the Pan Gu sword and cut at the priest's hand with the combined move of the five, bringing up a frosty beam of light.

"My friend, this one is mine. It pulls my chariot, so it's not destined to be yours!" Ji Hao smiled brightly and activated his Pan Gu body. A strong Chaos power wrapped up his tall and sturdy body. Every move he made would quake the surrounding space.

"I said it's destined to be a part of our sect, and it certainly is!" The priest smiled. His fingers shone with a bright light, and from it, an exquisite horsetail whisk flew at Ji Hao's sword light.

Along with a clear crack, the horsetail whisk was cut into two, as easily as cutting a cucumber with a knife. The sword light tore apart the whisk through a weird track and lightly cut at the priest's fingers.

The priest shouted with both anger and shock. He immediately took his hand back, but how could he ever dodge? The sword landed straight on his finger and left a three-inches-long wound. Drops of golden blood spurted out of the wounds and transformed into golden flowers, flying all over the sky. The blood was wrapped in a purple mist.

"Little b*stard!" The priest was so angry. Earlier on, he was calling Ji Hao 'little friend', but now, it had turned into 'little b*stard! Now.

"My friend, don't forget who you are!" Ji Hao nodded at him and

said blandly, "You have to know that you're just some being beyond the mortal world, while I am the divine emperor chosen by the world itself. You're a saint. I am not as powerful as saints, but I am at a higher position than saints are! My friend, do you agree?"

Both the two priests knitted their brows.

Saints were beyond the mortal world, having measureless powers and unlimited abilities. But as Ji Hao said, they were merely some unoccupied beings outside the noisy world, while divine emperors were admitted by the world itself to rule and guard the world, and control the great Dao.

Divine emperors weren't as powerful as saints, but in terms of authority, Ji Hao was truly at a higher position than saints!

"The heaven!" The two priests glanced at each other, their eyes shining with a frosty light. Clearly, Ji Hao's words led them to some other thoughts.

The two priests sneered and mounted on Dragon Mother, then swiftly flew away. Next, a shrill howl could be heard. Following the howl, Guzun was sent flying up, then swirled' into a priest's sleeve as he was 'destined' to be one of them. Next, Guling was dragged out by a golden hand from the boundless bamboo formation and thrown into a sleeve as well.

Gue transformed into a giant skeleton and fled away through the space. But, before she could make ten miles far, the space around her shattered, then an enormous sleeve descended. As same as her two brothers, she reluctantly followed her 'destiny'.

Straight after that, Dragon Mother lunged towards Shixin and his brothers, who were fighting. The two priests laughed resonantly and sent out a wave of golden light spots from their fingers to fall on the bodies of Shixin and his brothers, as well as a large number of powerful dragons under their command.

Once the golden light touched their bodies, Shixin, his brothers,

and the other dragons couldn't help but show their true shapes, lying in the air and screaming in pain. Afterward, Kun Peng, Xiang Liu, and the other spirit creatures all followed 'their destinies', being thrown into the two priests' sleeves.

The disciples of Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei had their expressions changed. They hurriedly stepped back and dared not to go against these two crazy priests.

Ji Hao trod on the golden bridge and followed closely after them. They tried to attack Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness, but were stopped by his sword lights. As they were quite afraid of Ji Hao's Pan Gu sword, they gave up on Bamboo Master and Priest Sadness without having a choice.

All of a sudden, a thunderous noise sounded from Pan Gu Motherland. The people in the starry void fixed their eyes on Pan Gu Motherland and saw an enormous black arm suddenly reach into Pan Gu world through the portal above Liang Zhu City.

Chapter 1878: Pan Yu

The dark, thousand-mile-long arm suddenly broke into Pan Gu world through the portal.

The entire Pan Gu world quaked. The hearts of all Pan Gu world creatures were shaken, as faint images emerged before their eyes. They all saw that enormous arm.

That arm was dark as ink, yet smooth as the best jade, without even one fine hair. It also had a strange luster. Through the translucent dark skin, one could see countless spell symbols and marks of Dao which had condensed into clouds-like patterns, rolling and spinning inside this arm.

This enormous and slim arm didn't look scary. On the contrary, it had a weird, strange, and extreme beauty. At the following moment, the portal above Liang Zhu City spun crazily. Shreds of dark clouds flew out of the portal and spread towards all directions along with shrill swishing noises. The portal expanded rapidly, such that within a couple of breaths, it was enlarged by a hundred folds.

A hundred-million-miles-wide black hole appeared above Liang Zhu City.

Countless Yu Clan, Jia Clan, and Xiu Clan people ran about in the city as they cried and screamed without knowing why.

They were Pan Yu world people, but most of them were born and raised in Pan Gu world. Most of their knowledge was related to Pan Gu world. They didn't know where this enormous dark arm from, but when they saw it, an extreme desperation and fear erupted like a volcano from the depths of their bloodline.

This arm to Pan Yu world people was like an eagle to a chicken, a poisonous snake to a frog, a fierce tiger to a sheep, a shark to a shrimp...It was their natural destroyer...No, it was even more

intimidating, more lethal than a natural destroyer.

The purer bloodline a Yu Clan man had, a stronger fear he would sense from this arm!

Ever since the twelve families in power of Yu Dynasty got rich in Pan Gu world, they were connected with quite some high-grade families in Pan Yu world through marriages. Thus, quite some high-grade bloodlines had blended into Yu Dynasty families.

The lower-grade nobles who had lowly bloodlines could still cry and shout and run, while the ones with noble bloodlines were frozen. They stood where they were in a daze, or fell to the ground with softened limbs and burst into cries.

High up in the air, the black hole was still expanding. Fierce gales roared out of the black hole and blew down, instantly flattening all mountains and hills around the city.

The shield of Liang Zhu City was activated. A thick light shield covered the entire city. But in the following moment, a strong gust of wind came from the sky and struck violently at the light shield. Along with a deafening cracking noise, the shield was shattered, and so were the countless divine towers in the city. The beautiful buildings near the divine towers were torn down, killing and injuring countless Yu Dynasty people.

Thud!

Another tens of thousands of miles long, slim and dark arm thrust out of the black hole and slapped heavily on the ground. The pair of arms towered outside Liang Zhu City like two pillars. A while later, the two hands suddenly moved in opposite direction and created a tremendous crack in the natural screen of Pan Gu world above Liang Zhu City, causing a thunderous noise.

A dark eye gazed into Pan Gu world through the crack like a naughty child gazing into a deep bottle to see the bugs in it. The edge of the eye glowed with a faint blood-red light as the giant

eyeball rolled in the eye socket. Next, along with a sudden 'whoosh', a smooth, lustrous, bald head reached into Pan Gu world through the crack.

The original power of Pan Gu world was especially strong. Therefore, the natural screen of Pan Gu world was incomparably tough, and the spatial structure of the entire world was exceptionally sturdy. This whole world was like a safe box made from thick alloy steel, indestructible and without any crack. On top of all that, this safe box was filled with all kinds of traps of the great Dao, which meant that any invader would be suppressed by the entire great Dao of Pan Gu world. No matter how powerful the invader was, once it intruded into Pan Gu world, it would only be able to exert no more than ten percent of its power!

Nevertheless, Priest Yun twisted the original great Dao of Pan Gu world, by doing which, he widely opened the door of this safe box, allowing anyone to come in. Also, he had also turned off all the traps of the great Dao in this safe box. Therefore, whether it was a shrimp or a violent dragon who invaded this world, it would be able to release a hundred percent of its power.

This giant, dark, and bald head easily squeezed into Pan Gu world without any difficulty. The head was raised slightly as it slowly looked around. Immediately, the hearts of all Pan Gu world creatures twitched intensely. No matter where they were, they saw this dark head simultaneously.

Like the pair of arms, the head was slim, with smooth curves and textures, without any fine hair. A thin horizontal crack existed in this slender face, which should be his mouth. A soft curve existed on both side of this head, which should be his ears.

Other than the ears and mouth, the frontal side of this head was occupied by a large erect eye. If he had eyebrows and nose, this erect eye would be extending from between eyebrows to the tip of the nose. The eye was dark and glowed coldly, wrapped in a faint blood-red light. Inside the eye, countless beams of dark light had

been swirling like a black vortex, devouring a giant amount of natural powers moment by moment.

"What a beautiful world!" The thin mouth was opened slightly, and a deep, hoarse voice which was filled with an evil power echoed through the entire Pan Gu world, "The original power of this world is so strong, so rich, full of life-force, creation. This world should belong to me, Pan Yu...With the original power of this world, I will recover soon...Perhaps, I can go beyond my current level with it."

"You lowly useless things... Your existence is unnecessary. You betrayed your original belief, you betrayed Pan Yu. You worshipped the twelve sinners, the three suns and nine moons! So, you should all die."

"You have always been a mistake. Now, it's time to fix it."

"You, everything you have, your flesh, your soul, are all mine. You are derived from my body, and you will eventually become a part of my body. Cheer, laugh, then despair, cry... I am Pan Yu, and since I have woken up, all other living beings shall die."

Along with a series of cracking noise, Pan Yu put forth his strength through his arms and reached his head forward, squeezing a big half of his body into Pan Gu world. Then his waist, legs, and slowly, his entire body squeezed in.

Chapter 1879: A Debt Needs to be Paid

In the starry void, Ji Hao's Pan Gu sword, which was lunged forward, suddenly paused in the air. Ji Hao raised his head and cast a meaningful glance at Liang Zhu City.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu woke up from quietus, yet they refused to admit that they had anything to do Priest Hua and Priest Mu. At the moment, they were looking at Pan Gu Motherland with faces darkened and eyebrows knitted.

Po and the others all turned around, looking in the same direction.

Black and white mists wove into a large Taiji pattern and spun slowly above Priest Xuandu's head as he said in a serious tone, "A foreign devil is here...Sky devils are shapeless, but this one is..."

"Sky devils are shapeless and devour souls. But this devil has a shape and destroys worlds. Comparing sky devils with him is like comparing fireflies with a sun." The two priests gave a bright shout and said in a deep voice.

Dragon Mother had been turned into a mount by the two priests. She shifted back into her Chaos dragon shape and struggled while roaring hysterically, spouting large amounts of white sticky saliva out of her mouth. Somehow, after being forced back into her original shape by the two priests, Dragon Mother couldn't even talk anymore, but had only been roaring with rage like a beast.

However, she was a famous powerful being back in the ancient time after all. She too sensed the frightful power from Liang Zhu City.

An indescribably powerful being had aggressively invaded into Pan Gu world. Deep down, Dragon Mother felt hopeless. She sensed a tremendous power from that powerful being, which even reminded her of Saint Pan Gu!

Dragon Mother roared deeply and furiously twisted her giant body. The nature of Chaos dragon, which was buried deep in her bones, had been urging her to run as far as possible. It would be the best if she could run away from Pan Gu world, from this group of large worlds.

Pan Yu, who had invaded into Pan Gu world, had the power to destroy the Chaos space in this area, and the countless great worlds around Pan Gu world!

'So, run!' Dragon Mother roared ferociously and spouted large streams of foam and sticky saliva. Why did these bloody priests chain her? Run! Were they going to fight that horrifying being?

Above Liang Zhu City, Pan Yu's entire body had squeezed into Pan Gu world.

His body was tall and slim, with smooth and clean curves. He even restrained his power, such that he strangely looked like a free and relaxed old pine, or an old crane.

He quietly floated above Liang Zhu City and glanced around with his large erect eye, then laughed abruptly and said, "My brain, is it here?"

He crooked a slim finger and caused a loud and clear 'pop'. Following the noise, a long and thin black space crack appeared in the space of Pan Gu world. Through the space crack, Pan Yu's brain, which was held in Yu Huo's hands, flew to Pan Yu. The tens of thousands of miles tall Pan Yu narrowed his eye and carefully looked at the human-fist-sized brain which floated before his face.

"Look at what have you done!" He licked his lips, said, "Did you wreck my body like this?"

"Look at this forging technique...You are humiliating my brain!"

Pan Yu opened his mouth and blew at the brain. The dark, crystalline brain immediately collapsed int countless black light spots that rose into the sky, then fell back down and formed an

enormous, hazy brain above Pan Yu's head.

Pan Yu's skull split up and exposed a dense cloud of dark mist inside his head. The hazy brain slowly sank into his head and merged with the dark mist.

A cold light flashed across his giant erect eye as he laughed with a hissing voice, "Ah, have you been through so many interesting things these years? And so many powerful souls...These are all mine."

Turning around, Pan Yu grinned to the stupefied Yu Huo, who stood upon the ruins of the peaceful world, and said, "These years, you have kept my brain in such a terrible way. You deserve to die. What do you think?"

Yu Huo growled out loud, then suddenly transformed into a shred of dark shadows and rose straight into the sky. After flashing through the space for a few times, he flew to the natural screen of Pan Gu world, trying his best to run away from this world.

"Run? Too late!" Pan Yu's laughter vibrated the entire Pan Gu world, "You melted your erect eye with Pan Yu's blood, and merged with the original great Dao of Pan Yu world, didn't you? Lowly, ignorant idiot, how can anyone who has used Pan Yu's blood escape from my control?"

Pan Yu pointed his finger at Yu Huo. At the following moment, Yu Huo's body exploded into a cloud of blood mist, along with his soul.

The glistering blood mist momentarily drifted to Pan Yu, being swallowed by him.

Pan Yu clicked his tongue with satisfaction, then laughed again and said, "The great Dao of soul...Not bad. Tasty! Can any of you idiots understand this? Your erect eyes are the chains laid on you by the three suns and nine moons, but are also your protection... Hah!"

"You melted your erect eyes with my blood and broke the chains, but also dragged yourselves out of their protection and exposed yourselves to me...You have merged with the original Dao of Pan Yu world, which means you're my tastiest replenishment!"

"You are derived from me. Everything you have came from me. I never wanted to create you. Your existence is a mistake. Now, it's time to fix it!"

"Give everything that belongs to me back!"

Yu Ji, Yu Feng, and the other Pan Yu saints burst into screams. They all had some supreme treasures that were made from Pan Yu's body parts. Dark lights tore apart the space and brought Pan Yu's heart, eye, palms, and all the other body parts back to him. Unhurriedly, Pan Yu put these parts back into his body piece by piece.

In the starry voice, the two priests expressionlessly looked at Pan Yu as they watched him kill Yu Huo as easily as slaughtering a chicken.

Sighing slightly, they shook heads and said in one voice, "The devil is powerful. The Dao is weakening, but the devil is growing. Since he has come, we will leave. Tide rises and falls, that's the Dao of nature."

Once they finished their speech, a colorful glow emerged from the space and shone upon the whole starry void. Spirit Wa showed up suddenly, with a mysterious smile on her face.

"My two friends, you can go, but before you go, can you pay your debt?" Spirit Wa gently swayed her tail as she pointed at Ji Hao and chuckled, "You want to shamelessly repudiate the debt you owed to Ji Hao, fine. But, you've owed too many debts, and some of the debts, you just have to pay!"

The two priests laughed. They looked at Spirit Wa and said carelessly, "Spirit Wa, our friend, we are beyond the mortal world,

free and happy. We can leave whenever we want... We can also return wherever we want. What is the debt that we have to pay? Who did we owe a debt to?"

Before their voices faded, Pan Gu Motherland quaked slightly, then a tremendous stream of natural fortune power rose from Pu Ban City, straight into the sky.

Chapter 1880: Pray Together

Outside Pu Ban City, an altar was built with five differently colored kinds of earth.

A mottled metal altar towered upon the earth altar. Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles stood around the altar with their faces twisted and paled, as cold sweat was streaming down their heads.

They sensed Pan Yu's invasion and heard his laughter, as well as what he said. They also saw Pan Yu crush Yu Huo with a finger, then turn him into a cloud of blood mist and swallow him.

More terrifyingly, they learned some negative information from what Pan Yu said. Pan Yu blood, was it a trap? A colony world noble who wasn't able to melt his erect eye with his own power needed to drain the resources of a big half of his colony world to trade for a drop of Pan Yu blood, all to melt his erect eye, break the seal inside him, and help him merge with the great Dao of nature. But, was it Pan Yu's trap?

The people who had used Pan Yu blood could never escape from Pan Yu's control. Was that real?

Knowing this, Yu Meng and the others who had used Pan Yu blood, had their faces turned ghastly pale. But, the ones who hadn't used it, such as Yu Hu, weren't happy either.

What Pan Yu had done to Yu Huo clearly explained his character. The fear that came deep from these colony world nobles' bloodlines urged them to try their best to find any possibilities of survival, at all costs.

"It's a surprise!" Fuxi and a group of powerful human beings stood under the altar. Emperor Xuanyuan clasped his hands behind his body and said smilingly.

Facing the threat from Pan Yu, only the powerful human

emperors like Xuanyuan, who once led the humankind through a bloody time of war, had the strong and determined heart to show a smile.

"It's a surprise indeed." Shennong, Suren, and the other few former emperors smiled at the group of colony world nobles on the altar. Pan Yu's sudden invasion made everyone panic, also forcing these colony world nobles to make up their minds!

These colony world nobles, who watched Yu Meng become a saint with the power of the altar, now made their minds and put down their pride, finding the humankind and offering everything they had to the human beings. They asked the humankind to award them for destroying Chu Wu Clan, also strongly urging the humankind to help them in becoming saints!

According to Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles, as long as the humankind agreed to lend them the Praying and Sanctification altar, they would accept any condition! Therefore, led by Fuxi, the group of powerful human beings made their demands, and thus, these colony world nobles became a happy surprise of the humankind as they gathered around the altar.

On the altar, all colony world nobles who had made their agreements with the humankind were looking northward with desperation on their faces. They looked at the enormous figure that floated in the sky. From such a long distance away, the power released from Pan Yu's body was still intimidating. It filled up the hearts of all non-humankind beings and left no space; making them feel so heavy and repressed.

Somehow, all non-humankind beings in Pan Gu world now understood that the only purpose of Pan Yu was destroying all Yu Clan, Jia Clan, and Xiu Clan people! Due to this, Yu Hu and the other three-eyed colony world nobles decided to put up a struggle. Desperately and blindly, they needed to make their voices heard before they died. They had to borrow the Praying and Sanctification altar to gather the faith power from billions of

creatures of their colony worlds and become saints!

As for the ones like Yu Meng who had used Pan Yu blood, if they were doomed, they would just die! But, Yu Hu and the others who hadn't used Pan Yu blood were lucky. If they became saints, they might still have a chance to escape from Pan Gu world, even returning to their colony worlds!

Yu Hu and the other three-eyed colony world nobles had made their decisions. Once they returned to their colony worlds, they would immediately seal off their worlds to hide their powers, then cut off all connections with Pan Yu world and wipe out all their traces.

There were so many colony world nobles and millions of colony worlds. They didn't believe that Pan Yu would search through all colony worlds! Even if he had the patience and energy to do that, how long it would take him to find all colony world nobles? When he finally found the ones who were now standing on the altar, billions of years would have passed. Living longer was much better than dying sooner, wasn't it?

Unexpected changes might happen!

Si Wen Ming stood beside Fuxi and the other former emperors, with the Xuanyuan sword strapped to his waist. His body was wrapped in rolling clouds and smokes, which sparkled with starlight. Within the clouds, mountains, rivers, as well as countless living beings were faintly visible. He was still a peak-level Divine Magus, but amidst the starlight, the power he released was much, much stronger than the power of a Supreme Magus.

"They are truly scared, that they even accepted such harsh terms." Si Wen Ming smiled at the group of colony world nobles on the altar, "I didn't think that the massive invasion of these non-humankind monsters this time is actually a gift for us! So many colony worlds! Can this altar really drain all those worlds' natural fortune?"

"As long as agree." Fuxi chuckled and said, "The altar was forged with countless years of severe efforts. So many of us collected materials for it in the Chaos. It is a sacred treasure of natural fortune, forged for our humankind. It is powerful and functional. They have brought the gifts to us, and the harvest will be easy."

"That is Pan Yu!" With a strong will of fighting, Emperor Xuanyuan looked at the enormous black figure in the north and said, "Thanks to him, these non-humankind beings accepted our harsh terms. It's strange though. Why does he want to destroy the people from his world?"

"All kinds of things exist in the universe. How can we ever understand them?" Emperor Shun smiled and raised his head to look at the sky, "For example... This time, we human beings suffered a disaster of devils. Terrible things happened. Gong Sun Xun's people..."

Emperor Shun didn't finish, and neither did the others say anything.

Abruptly, Yu Hu and the other three-eyed colony world nobles sat on the ground and crossed their legs. Strong energy waves spread from their bodies while their erect eyes shone with dazzling lights. They released their powers as much as possible, connecting their hearts and spirits with the altar.

Through the altar's magical power, these colony world nobles made connections with their colony worlds.

In countless colony worlds, all kinds of creatures heard the voices of their rulers simultaneously and felt a vast power erupting from their hearts. They couldn't help but begin calling the names of their rulers.

A blinding light rose into the sky and slowly spread in all directions along with a deafening noise that sounded like a tsunami.

Above Liang Zhu City, Pan Yu, who was busying at retrieving his body parts, suddenly fixed his eyes on Pu Ban City.

Chapter 1881: The Great Xia of the Humankind

"You lowly things!" Pan Yu was putting a dark piece of spine into his body, but suddenly, he sensed the powers of countless Yu Clan beings who had been growing rapidly stronger.

They were not only powerful, but also free and beyond his control.

These colony world nobles didn't merge with the original Dao of Pan Yu world, which was represented by the three suns and nine moons and was derived from Pan Yu. Instead, they chose to merge with the great Dao of their colony worlds.

The great Dao of those colony worlds flushed through the bodies and souls of these colony world nobles over and over again, fading and weakening the marks that Pan Yu left in their bloodline. Gradually, quite some of them had their erect eyes shattered, and their appearances changed.

Yu Hu was from Pan Jin world, which was predominated by metal creatures. After his erect eye disappeared, the connection between him and Pan Yu world was gone instantly. A cold, metallic luster emerged from his skin, while his internal organs gradually turned into metals. His body condition was improving rapidly.

An unprecedentedly pleasant sensation was generated from the hearts of these colony world nobles. Both their powers and strengths had been rising sharply. With the help of the Praying and Sanctification altar, they would become saints by thoroughly merging with their colony worlds.

If one compared Pan Yu world to a bowl of dark, dirty ink, those colony worlds were like colorful springs, while Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles would be like drops of dark ink from Pan Yu world. No matter where they were, they were always

connected with Pan Yu world. But at this moment, their powers had been changing quickly. They merged into the springs and changed to the spring water from the dark ink. They became exactly like the creatures of their colony worlds.

"Interesting lowly things!" Pan Yu chuckled as he carelessly put the spine back into his body, then counted his fingers to calculate. "I still have a leg bone out there. How come I didn't retrieve it? Hmm, not a problem. I just need to regrow one by consuming some of my original world power."

"The original power of Pan Yu world is almost drained, but this world has such a thriving original power." Pan Yu laughed as he fixed this erect eye on the Praying and Sanctification altar from hundreds of millions of miles away. That eye sparkled with a cold light.

Crack!

Thin space cracks suddenly appeared near Pan Yu's body. He leaned slightly forward, then took a huge step towards Pu Ban City. His one single step covered millions of miles. He tore apart the space and left a man-shaped, enormous path behind. He was like a bug sealed in amber that moved suddenly and caused severe damage to the amber.

He took another step, and created a giant crack in the space again. In this space crack, tens of thousands of flying mountains all vanished, being devoured by Pan Yu's body.

"Every piece of stone in this world contains such a strong original power. Pan Yu world is broken, completely drained. That world should have been destroyed long ago."

Step by step and while murmuring, Pan Yu was approaching Pu Ban City and the group of colony world nobles, who were breaking into the level of saints on the Praying and Sanctification altar.

"You are derived from me, so you should come back to me. You

called the names of the three suns and nine moons, but they cannot save you." Twelve spheres of light emerged in Pan Yu's chest. Three suns and nine moons spun swiftly inside his chest, shining brightly. But, all of their lights were devoured by Pan Yu's body.

"In order to keep me from waking up, they chained you. Because of your erect eyes, you can only return to them after death...They didn't want me to restore any power!" Pan Yu laughed evilly, "But, all their calculations were useless. You came from me. To me, you have no secrets...How can you ever escape from my control?"

He reached out his pair of slim arms and raised clouds of dark mist. He clenched his fingers towards Pu Ban City and generated a long series of cracking noise. Following the noise, the clouds scudded in the sky while a strong wind rose and a ridiculously strong force descended to Pu Ban City.

Hundreds of millions of miles long, bottomlessly deep rifts appeared on the plain area around Pu Ban City. The strong, invisible force tore apart the space and tried to uproot Pu Ban City entirely out of Pan Gu Motherland, then knead it into a giant ball.

"It's time for us to do something!" Fuxi's body glowed with a beautiful golden light as he smiled and said, "We have been worshipped by human beings for countless years, absorbing measureless natural rewards powers from the humankind. We have become human saints through the Dao of Praying and Sanctification. Now, it's time for us to do something!"

"In this world, human beings will never be chess pieces!" A square cauldron flew out of Shennong's head while his body glowed with the same golden light. "Perhaps, we once were...But, never again!"

"Why do you make it sound so complicated?" Emperor Xuanyuan gave a resonant roar. Behind him, uncountable brave warriors souls roared out, and a blinding sword light pierced into the sky.

"In one line, no one can ever sh*t on us...Neither the heaven, nor the earth, or all devils and ghosts and gods! If anyone disagrees, we kill it!"

Tens of powerful human beings rose into the sky, with a dazzling golden light shining out of their bodies. They lined up and calmly looked at Pan Yu, who was approaching step by step. The golden light emitted from their bodies merged together and stabilized the space, fixing the rifts around Pu Ban City one after another.

"Si Wen Ming!" Fuxi turned back and growled to Si Wen Ming.

"Yes!" Si Wen Ming put his left hand on the hilt of Xuanyuan sword and walked onto the stairs of the five-colored earth altar in large steps. Step by step, he walked to the top of the earth altar. He cupped his hands, bowed to the east, west, north and south, then puffed out his chest and said with a bright voice, "From this day on, we have no families and clans...The humankind will be united with the name of... 'Xia!'!"

The moment he said the word 'Xia', a hurricane was raised from the entire Pan Gu Motherland.

Suddenly, the fires of offering burst from the altars in the ancestral temples of all clans and families, hundreds of meters high. In the ancestral temples of some large families, the fire even reached to the sky like the eruption of a volcano. Surrounding the five-colored earth altar, countless clan and family leaders kneeled and kowtowed to the altar. Thus, the fires of offering rose from the altars in their ancestral temples burned even more ragingly.

The natural fortune power which was scattered among human clans and families now gathered rapidly to Pu Ban City, on the Praying and Sanctification altar, on Si Wen Ming's body.

At last, a tremendous stream of natural fortune power took three circles around the whole Pan Gu Motherland, then rose into the sky and crushed the gales and clouds. It disappeared into the starry void, quaked the starry void, and vibrated countless natural stars.

Next, enormous-dragon-like strands of natural fortune power roared out of the Praying and Sanctification altar and merged into this tremendous stream of natural fortune power which belonged to the humankind.

Chapter 1882: The Masters Trap Themselves

The natural fortune power reached straight into the sky, towering on the earth like an enormous pillar.

Within the splendid pillar of natural fortune, sparks of light were faintly visible. And, inside every light spark was the face of a human being; one could even hear this human being praying fervently.

The natural fortune was mysterious and immeasurable, only to be discovered and perceived by top-grade powerful beings. However, the natural fortune which belonged to the humankind in Pan Gu world was so strong that even ordinary human beings could now see this enormous pillar of natural fortune standing firmly in the world. The vast natural fortune power was highly concentrated and nearly tangible. This giant pillar of natural fortune had almost replaced Buzhou Mountain, becoming the new core of Pan Gu world, as the sun and all of the natural stars had begun to slowly move around it.

"How can this happen?" The bitter-faced great master and the smiling second master exclaimed in one voice. Their faces paled and froze with shock, looking like granite; even their eyes were unfocused.

Ji Hao looked at them, as if absorbed in thoughts, but Spirit Wa laughed coldly and said, "My two friend, this is the debt you owed."

The great master and second master dropped their faces as they silently gazed at the natural fortune pillar. Suddenly, second master swung a hand fiercely at Pan Gu Motherland. A stream of air gusted out of his forefinger, cutting at the pillar of natural fortune.

While he was making a move, the second master said in a deep voice, "We were related with the humankind indeed. We can pay what we owed, but how can we be involved in these measureless

'causes and effects'? We didn't owe the entire humankind such a huge debt."

The gust of air momentarily approached Pan Gu Motherland and landed violently on the natural fortune pillar.

The tremendous natural fortune streams, which had taken three circles around Pan Gu Motherland three times, surged like a ferocious dragon. The moment the sharp airstream landed, the torrent of natural fortune moved strongly upward and generated a thunderous boom. The airstream coiled on the second master's forefinger was crushed instantly. He trembled and staggered back for quite a few steps, his face turning ghastly pale.

"This..." The second master couldn't stop trembling, and couldn't say a word either. In his hand, his staff was glowing brightly and vibrating intensely.

"What do you want?" Spirit Wa crossed her arms before her chest, then slightly raised her chin, and said while sneering, "I am quite close with the humankind. The new human emperor founded Great Xia, and my natural fortune is connected with the natural fortune of Great Xia...My friend, are you trying to cut my natural fortune?"

"You?" The great master looked at Spirit Wa seriously and asked, "Have you thought about this?"

Spirit Wa grinned happily, even squeezing her eyes into a pair of curves. "How could I not? Back then, when my brother reincarnated as a human being named Fuxi and became the first human emperor, I had thought about this already. In the future, my temple would be built in every area of Great Xia, and I will be enjoying the measureless natural fortune and natural reward of the humankind." She said slowly.

Spreading her arms, Spirit Wa clenched her fists. Along with a creaking noise, a frightful power actually erupted from her slim fists. She tilted her head and looked at the great master and the

second master, then continued, "Ah, I had no choice anyway. If I didn't do this, everyone would bully me as I had the weakest strength of all. That would be so annoying!"

"Whoever dared to bully you, my friend?" Great Master looked at her with a dark face.

Spirit Wa narrowed her eyes, which glowed with a dangerous light as she stared at the two masters like an infuriated cat. "You don't think so? Do you really want me to make a list?"

The two masters immediately shut their mouths. But a while later, the second master sighed as he looked at Spirit Wa and said to her, "My friend, what you did... is really unkind." He sounded a bit complaining.

Spirit Wa was enraged. She took two steps forwards and quickly wagged her long tail, generating a swishing noise. Then, she began speaking very quickly to contradict the two masters. Hearing her, Ji Hao, Po, and the others were all deeply shocked.

A while later, Ji Hao burst into laughter. Spirit Wa spoke fast, and hadn't been saving face for the two masters. Her sharp words seriously exposed the two masters. Not to mention the other old stories, the unification of the natural fortune which belonged to the humankind truly affected the two masters in a bad way.

Spirit Wa was powerful and smart. Without a doubt, she easily saw through the two masters' wishful thinking.

Pan Yu invaded suddenly and aggressively. The two masters didn't even want to pay the debt that they owed Ji Hao, so how could they ever fight Pan Yu for the humankind? Seeing Pan Yu take action, they immediately decided to gather their surviving disciples and directly leave Pan Gu world to find a peaceful place to rebuild their home. They didn't want to be a part of this messy Pan Gu world now.

However, in the past countless years, numberless disciples under

their command had recruited a great number of human disciples. Therefore, a tight connection was built between their sect and the humankind. In order to leave Pan Gu world, they needed to suffer a counterforce from this connection!

If the humankind weren't united, these two masters could take the counterforce. The human disciples they took were from different families and clans, which meant that they only needed to suffer some slight counterforce from those families and clans before they safely left Pan Gu world.

Nevertheless, once they decided to leave, Si Wen Ming completed the process for the establishment of the Great Xia, right after which, the natural fortune of the entire humankind was united. On top of that, the natural fortune of the humankind had absorbed the natural fortunes from countless colony worlds, and grown exceptionally strong. As a consequence, the power of the 'causes and effects' had turned horrifying.

These two masters had borrowed some natural fortune from some human families and clans inappropriately. Because of that natural fortune, their cultivation had been soaring all these years, and their disciples benefited largely as well. That was the debt they owed to the humankind.

Today, Pan Yu invaded, and the humankind was facing a disaster. If the two masters wanted to leave, they needed to pay the debt!

Before, their 'creditors' were merely some weak beings. Therefore, they could pay a little for the debt, then repudiate some interests with their powers. But all of a sudden, their 'creditors' turned into a ferocious giant dragon from a harmless sheep!

If they left the world without paying the debt now, they would be crushed by a counterforce of natural fortune, which did not rise from some clans or families, but from the entire humankind!

If they insisted on leaving Pan Gu world, they would have to take

the risk of being dragged down from the level of saints by the counterforce of natural force, or even losing their lives and Dao!

"My friend, good plan!" The two masters argued with Spirit Wa for quite a while. At last, they sighed, shook their heads helplessly, and said, "We will remember what you did to us today...In the future...Let's wait and see!"

Spirit Wa smiled. A rainbow descended from the higher sky, then she nodded at Ji Hao and disappeared into it.

The two masters coldly glanced at Ji Hao, then helplessly cast a glimpse at Pan Gu Motherland. In one voice, they gave an angry growl, then transformed into two long streaks of light and flew towards Pan Gu Motherland.

Ji Hao spent quite an effort to figure out the situation of these two masters. Afterward, he smiled and murmured to himself, "They can easily repudiate the debt they owed me, but I didn't think that Spirit Wa prepared a huge trap for them...Hah!"

This time, Spirit Wa and these two had seriously become enemies, hadn't they?

Chapter 1883: Pan Yu's Fierce Power

Pu Ban City, on the altar...

Nine giant cauldrons floated above Si Wen Ming's head. Clouds and smoke coiled up from the cauldrons while the natural fortune of the humankind merging into torrents, flowing into them. The nine cauldrons glowed brightly and released waves of wild and heavy powers, which boiled and surged as the space was suffused with a terrifying pressure.

This pressure had no effect on human beings, and couldn't even harm a human baby.

However, under this pressure, the group of colony world nobles who had gathered the faith power from all living beings in their colony worlds with the help of the altar, and forcibly merged themselves with the great Dao of nature of their colony worlds to break into the level of saints, felt like countless mountains were lying on both their bodies and souls, bending their bodies and suffocating them.

Logically speaking, they had already broken into that measurelessly high, mysterious level, and any of them should be able to crush Si Wen Ming with a finger.

But, this was Pan Gu world. Si Wen Ming established Great Xia as the new human emperor. At the moment, the natural fortune of the entire humankind had gathered on Si Wen Ming, and the nine cauldrons served as the foundation of Great Xia. At this very moment, these nine powerful cauldrons, which were forged by Si Wen Ming himself, were connected with the Pan Gu world through the flooding natural fortune of the humankind.

The nine cauldrons had become nine special paths that gathered the tremendous power of the entire world, and mercilessly laid it on Yu Meng, Yu Hu, and the other colony world nobles.

If Si Wen Ming went astray, he could conveniently crush all these non-humankind beings with a single thought!

Right at this moment, standing on the altar, Si Wen Ming had the lives of all invaders held in his hands. Perhaps, Pan Yu was the only exception.

A golden light illuminated the sky. Fuxi, the other former human emperors, Xing Tian, and a group of ancient strong warriors lined up in the air and blocked Pan Yu's way.

Pan Yu was tens of thousands of miles tall, but among the group of strong human beings, the most gigantic one was Xing Tian, who had expanded his body to merely tens of thousands of meters tall. Compared with Pan Yu, they were like grains of sand facing a giant.

On Pan Yu's dark face, his thin mouth slowly opened. He hissed with laughter and carelessly pressed a palm down towards Fuxi and the others. He didn't even want to talk to them. Instead, he fixed his eye on Yu Meng and the other colony world nobles and said, "Do you really think you can run away from me like this? You are derived from me. No matter how you change your looks, you will always be under my control!"

Yu Meng, Yu Hu, and the other colony world nobles gazed at Pan Yu, their faces paling. Some weak-hearted ones among them growled hoarsely at Si Wen Ming. They cried and screamed at him, begging him to ease the pressure from the nine cauldrons to let them run away from Pan Gu world as fast as possible, as far as they could.

"Run? Where to?" Pan Yu looked at them and laughed sarcastically.

A pre-world Taiji pattern rose from behind Fuxi, instantly covering the space for tens of millions of miles, then colliding with Pan Yu's palm.

Along with a thunderous sound, the Taiji pattern fell apart into strands of black and white mist that merged into the world. Fuxi gave a muffled snort while the golden light emitted from his body dimmed, and the scales on his long snake tail shattered. Blood spurted out of his wounded tail.

Xing Tian raised his battle axe and released a strand of dark mist from his mouth to swirl all of Fuxi's golden blood into his mouth. Then, he growled out loud and struck at Pan Yu's palm with his axe.

Clank!

A flame was raised from Pan Yu's palm, while Xing Tian's battle axe broke to pieces. Pan Yu flicked Xing Tian with his right little finger and blasted his entire body into a cloud of blood mist, sent flying tens of thousands of miles away.

The blood mist merged back together ad condensed back into Xing Tian's body. "How can this thing be so strong?" Xing Tian growled.

Pan Yu narrowed his erect eye as he glanced at Xing Tian and said, "What a strong intent of killing! You are indeed a peerless strong warrior...But, so what? I have merged with the entire Pan Yu world. Unless you have the power the create a whole new world, how could you ever leave even a cut on my skin?"

A buzzing noise sounded from Pan Yu's chest. The three suns and nine moons, which had been devoured by him, burst into dazzling lights. The twelve light spheres spun swiftly inside his body, seeming about to break out.

Pan Yu sneered and murmured to himself with a deep voice, "It's useless. You were born from me, so you should merge back into me. Why are you fighting against me so stubbornly? What is the meaning of this? You're just making yourselves suffer. Don't waste powers for nothing."

His hairless face shook slightly as sighed and continued, "Every struggle you put up wastes the power that belongs to me for nothing. Why? Why do you have to do this? I need to devour more worlds to replenish myself after this..."

Sighing again, Pan Yu glimpsed at the group of Colony world nobles, who had been screaming at Si Wen Ming for help. He grinned abruptly and said, "But, with so many replenishments, I can let you consume a little...None of them can run. They are all derived from me, so they all need to come back to me."

Of all, Emperor Xuanyuan was the worst-tempered one. He roared sonorously as he created a tremendous golden sword light, which surged like a divine river and fiercely struck at Pan Yu.

Pan Yu ignored Emperor Xuanyuan's sword light. He let the sword light tinkle against his chest, start a strong fire, and leave a faint mark on his skin. A faint mark was all that was left!

Pan Yu was little surprised. He lowered his head and cast a meaningful glance at Emperor Xuanyuan, then said, "Did your sword hurt my body? What a shame that you didn't become a saint with your own power, but made it to this level with a measureless natural rewards power. Otherwise, you might have been able to hurt me worse."

Pan Yu smiled. A dim light shone out of his erect eye, then a dark bolt of thunder descended from the sky and struck on Emperor Xuanyuan's body.

Emperor Xuanyuan moaned in pain. His golden armor was shattered by the thunderbolt. He fell to the ground while vomiting blood, leaving a hundred-miles-wide pit on the earth that nearly affected the altar behind.

Shennong, Suren, Taihao, Shaohao, all other former emperors burst into resonant roars and launched their moves at Pan Yu.

Pan Yu again focused on the group of colony world nobles on the

altar. He slightly waved his hands and blocked all the attacks launched by Shennong and the other powerful human beings, also injuring them severely and sending them flying away. None of them managed to take even a slight move from him.

"No rush, no rush... Let me take back what belongs to me first...Next, I will take my time and enjoy this world!"

Pan Yu opened his thin mouth, which nearly split his face into two. Clearly, he was laughing complacently.

"This is such a strong and thriving world, full of life-force. I need a very long time to enjoy it."

Chapter 1884: Suck

Pan Yu completely neglected the attacks from Fuxi and the other strong human beings. He reached out a hand and crooked a finger towards the ruins of the peaceful world, which were far away.

Along with a shrill, hopeless scream, Yu Ji appeared in Pa Yu's hand instantly. He was defenseless; he struggled and howled, but his nearly inexhaustible power had become like frozen water, no longer being activated.

"Children, you are derived from me. How can you fight against me?" Pan Yu smilingly shook his head to Yu Ji and sighed. "Your souls have merged with the great Dao of Pan Yu world. Now, Pan Yu world is me, and I am Pan Yu world. But, you tried to fight me with my own power. How ridiculous!"

Pan Yu slightly opened his mouth and inhaled deeply. Again, a shriek could be heard as Yu Ji's body exploded into a cloud of blood mist. The dense blood mist momentarily spread to tens of millions of miles away, then became a stream of blood and was swallowed by Pan Yu.

Fuxi and the other human beings stopped fighting. They shielded the altar with their bodies while coldly looking at Pan Yu.

Since Pan Yu had only been hunting the saints from Pan Yu world...Fuxi and the other powerful human beings weren't holy mothers. The group of Pan Yu saints didn't come to Pan Gu world with good intentions. Therefore, they didn't have the mood to save these Pan Yu saints.

"So useless!" Shreds of sword shadow sparkled around Emperor Xuanyuan's body as he said with a deep and strong voice, "These so-called saints brought themselves to the world of saints with the powers of their world. Their world gave them the power, but it also destroys them. Hah... When their world turns against them, what can they possibly do?"

"You're right. Only pure strength truly belongs to us human beings! Even as Supreme Magi, human beings need to remember that only their own powers truly belong to them! So, we human beings should not touch the Dao of nature..." Said Xing Tian with a muffled voice. He had found another axe, gripping it with both hands.

Xing Tian drummed his chest and laughed, "This strong body is our own power!"

"Like Saint Pan Gu..." Taihao smiled and said proudly.

Yu Fen, Yu Luang, Yu Tu...The group of Pan Yu saints were seized and swallowed by Pan Yu one after another. Facing Pan Yu, they were completely defenseless. Pan Yu devoured these Pan Yu saints with satisfaction, as if having an appetizer.

He raised his hands and quickly calculated with his fingers, then smiled, nodded, and said, "I've eaten all Pan Yu saints...Now, what's left...Oh, a clone!"

If one compared the great Dao to a plate, the souls of saints, which had merged with the great Dao, were like pearls in water. The ones outside the great Dao couldn't find the souls of saints, because they couldn't touch the great Dao, and hence, the souls of the saints. Therefore, to them, saints were immortal and unbreakable.

But, Pan Yu had merged into one with the great Dao of Pan Yu world. He was like a man standing right beside the plate, looking down at the entire plate. Naturally, he saw every single one of the pearls in the plate.

In the camp which was sealed by Ji Hao's sword formation, Yu Huo's clone was curled up in a broken tent, trembling. Suddenly, he burst into a hopeless scream while being dragged into the sky by a strong force.

He fell into Pan Yu's hand, who smiled and nodded at him, then

said, "The great Dao of soul... The souls of the people in this part of Dao are always fresh, ever-changing, and exceptionally rich in taste."

Before Yu Huo's clone could beg for mercy, Pan Yu took in a deep breath. Yu Huo's clone turned into a cloud of mist and was swallowed by Pan Yu.

"Now, I've eaten all, except these twelve naughty kids!" Yu Huo grinned brightly, then cast his 'warm' eyes on the group of colony world nobles on the altar, who had just become saints with the help of the Praying and Sanctification altar. "My kids, you are derived from me too. Are you willing to come back to me?" He said gently.

"Master Si Wen Ming!" The group of colony world saints burst into tears.

Si Wen Ming smiled. The nine cauldrons slightly spun above his head as he eased the pressure for these poor ones.

These colony world nobles felt their bodies suddenly turning lighter. They immediately rose into the sky and transformed their bodies into streaks of light to flash through the space. They cried, screamed, and howled. Without taking even one glance at the armies that they brought from their colony worlds, they fled to the Chaos outside Pan Gu world at their highest speeds.

Pu Ban City now looked like a firework tube, as countless beams of light burst from it. The fastest ones approached the natural screen of Pan Gu world within three seconds, and were about to dive into the Chaos.

"Run?" Pan Yu murmured, "That makes me sad! You're all my children!"

He slowly reached out his hands and said in a deep voice, "The power of the dark sun... Didn't you crazily follow and worship it?" An enormous black vortex emerged between his hand while a

tremendous attractive force momentarily covered the entire Pan Gu world. This attractive force was ineffective for Pan Gu world creatures, but it immediately froze all the desperately fleeting colony world saints.

The attractive force tied them up firmly, then dragged them slowly back to Pan Yu's hands.

"Don't run, come back!" Pan Yu widely opened his erect eye and said in a deep voice, "No one can run, not even one. If even one of you escaped, my body won't be perfect. So, just come back to me!"

Apparently, freezing so many saint-level Yu Clan nobles and dragging them all back was a difficult thing to Pan Yu. These running saints were being dragged back to Pan Yu at an extremely slow speed. Pan Yu pulled too hard, that clouds of warm dark mist even puffed up from his body from time to time.

In front of everyone else, the slowest saint was dragged back to Pan Yu.

As he pointed at this saint, this saint's body swelled uncontrollably, to millions of miles tall. Next, Pan Yu gripped this saint, put his mouth near it, then put this saint's head into his mouth. Then, he sucked, as if drinking some kind of juice.

In the Chaos, a medium-scale world suddenly collapsed inwards. The original power and measureless amounts of natural powers of this world were all devoured by a tiny black hole, then magically emerged inside the body of this saint who was being sucked by Pan Yu.

Through this poor saint's body, torrents of original world power and vast natural powers flew into Pan Yu's mouth.

"Delicious!" Pan Yu grinned, "Every one of you is a drinking straw for me to conveniently devour your worlds. Nothing can be more convenient than this."

The faces of Fuxi and the other strong human beings paled as

they fiercely glared at Pan Yu.

Chapter 1885: Join Hands in Desperation

What a monster this Pan Yu was!

Logically speaking, Yu Clan people were his descendants, and he should be protecting them. But, in Pan Yu's eyes, these powerful Yu Clan people were like the seeds that he had spread. These seeds infected countless worlds, then through them, Pan Yu could devour and absorb everything in those worlds!

Pan Yu was a pernicious source of infection. Devouring and destruction were his instincts. He devoured and destroyed all the worlds he touched to strengthen himself and raise his power. Wherever he reached, nothing but destruction would manifest. And that was the only meaning of his existence.

"People, if you can't run, why don't you fight with all your powers?" Si Wen Ming stood on the earth altar. Torrents of natural fortune had been flowing into the nine cauldrons while strands of glow wrapped around his body. His voice echoed through the entire Pan Gu Motherland, "He is the saint who created your world. But, if we are united as one, can't we kill a saint?"

Si Wen Ming's voice was like the first ray of the morning sun, illuminating the hopeless hearts of all these colony world saints. "This is Pan Gu world. Constant efforts bring success. If we combined our powers, how can we not have a chance to kill the saint and save our own lives?

Suddenly, thunder burst from Si Wen Ming's mouth as he growled, "Don't you want to fight back? Do you want to be slaughtered?"

Hearing him, the Yu Clan nobles who had tried to flee in all directions but were being dragged back by Pan Yu with a mighty power burst into thunderous roars. Yu Clan people were hypocritical, peacockish and evil; they never liked face-to-face battles, and loved to play dirty tricks. But, a cornered beast would

do something desperate, and so would these Yu Clan people. When their lives were threatened, they finally triggered the slight fighting spirit inside them!

They had just become saints with the help of the Praying and Sanctification altar. So, how could they be slaughtered like this?

"Kill!" Yu Meng turned back the first and flew at Pan Yu hysterically. Torrents of sand and raging flames were released from his eyes while a whole hundred suns rose from his head, merged into a sea of fire, and struck at Pan Yu.

"Fight!" Yu Hu rushed madly at Pan Yu while shedding tears. "Damn it, damn it, damn it...If I die here, my wife, my lovers, they might follow another guy! Ah, those bloody b*tches! They will certainly marry other men at the first chance they get! I swear that if I can make it back alive, I'll beat them!"

"My dear lovers...Oh, no, my weak boys, you useless things. If I die, how can you ever live?" A colony world noble named Yu Qian cried, "If I knew this, I would treat you stricter...If I die, my illegitimate children will certainly kill you for my wealth!"

Countless colony world nobles cried out loud and shouted out their greatest worries and regrets while pouncing on Pan Yu like flying moths darting to a fire. They came from millions of colony worlds, and had merged with all kinds of Dao of nature. They were all powerful, and their powers were unpredictable.

Tens of thousands of saint-level colony world nobles launched their moves, shredding the space above Pu Ban City. Dazzling lights flashed into Pan Gu world from Chaos and struck at Pan Yu like ferocious dragons.

When Saint Pan Gu created Pan Gu world with his axe, the world wasn't mature yet. The power of creation leaked out and attracted countless greedy Chaos monsters. Hence, those powerful Chaos creatures marched to Pan Gu world. Saint Pan Gu defended the world against all Chaos monsters all alone with an axe. And at this

moment, Pan Gu world looked almost the same as it was back then.

Pan Yu's face twitched. "These bad memories make me so uncomfortable...I created Pan Yu world, but I ended up getting injured severely, and nearly died. Twelve children were generated from me, but they tore apart my body, and turned my body into strange weapons." He murmured in a deep voice.

"They suppressed my indestructible soul and attempted to wear out my spirit with time, so they could share everything I had." Pan Yu continued, "Even though I managed to seal them too, but our mutual imprisonment...Dark sleep, such an unpleasant memory."

"You reminded me of these distasteful experiences, so you have to pay!" Pan Yu slowly spread his arms, and a giant dark swirl emerged between his hands. He looked at the countless colony world nobles who charged at him, then laughed with a dry voice, "Despair, cry, then just let me..."

Thud!

A, tens of thousands of miles long, colorful branch smashed violently on Pan Yu's forehead and it.

A tens of thousands of miles long wound was left on Pan Yu's head. Torrents of black blood flooded out and roared into Pan Gu Motherland like a tsunami.

Si Wen Ming stood on the altar as he pointed at the nine cauldrons. Following his resonate roar, the nine cauldrons quaked intensely vibrated all the natural stars and the earth meridians in Pan Gu Motherland. A strong shield rose from the nine cauldrons, soon covering the entire Pan Gu Motherland.

Pan Yu's black blood splashed on the enormous shield. Si Wen Ming moaned in pain and kneeled on the ground with softened legs. Blood spurted out of his eyes, nose, mouth, and ears. Even though the nine cauldrons had gathered the power of the world, he still couldn't take the pressure from Pan Yu's blood.

"Hit the target!" The smiling second master descended from the sky, with a fierceness hiding under his smile. The brightly glowing staff in his hand landed heavily on Pan Yu's erect eye and generated a thunderous sound. Pan Yu hurriedly closed his eye and threw out a slap.

The second master didn't manage to dodge, and was slapped away like a cannonball. A dense, warm mist and bright, golden light gushed out of his body while a series of bone-cracking noises could be heard from his body, sounding like popping corns. But, as the golden light and warm mists swirled, his body was healed.

"What are you waiting for? If you do nothing, you will die first!" The great master raised the colorful branch and struck at Pan Yu while hollering at those colony world saints who had been tremblingly gathering powers in the sky.

Yu Meng, Yu Hu, Yu Qian, and the other colony world nobles were desperate. They looked at Pan Yu, who now had a giant wound on his head, then forcibly boosted their courage and rushed at Pan Yu as hard as they could.

For saving their own lives and wealth, they forcibly drew the original powers of their worlds into their bodies to attack Pan Yu; they did that without any hesitation

As for how badly would that hurt their worlds...Which one of these panicking, desperate, and extremely selfish Yu Clan nobles would care?

Beautiful lights landed on Pan Yu. Following the thunderous explosive sounds, countless holes were left on Pan Yu's body, miles to tens of miles in radius. Giant amounts of black blood spurted out of his body.

Chapter 1886: No Solution

The golden bridge flashed across the space and brought Ji Hao and the others back from the starry void.

The space was chaotic. Because of the extreme fear and desperation, Yu Meng, Yu Hu, and the other colony world saints were draining the original powers of their worlds to generate powerful attacks to launch at Pan Yu.

Every time they attacked, the space of Pan Gu world would be turned into a mess.

Before, the structure of Pan Gu world space was especially sturdy, that not even a battle of saints could possibly cause such a serious damage to it. However, Priest Yun had canceled the restraint of the great Dao of Pan Gu world and opened the door for robbers. Since then, things gradually became uncontrollable.

Chaos thunders, fires, and tides blasted in the surroundings. Ji Hao let the Pan Gu bell float above his head. Priest Xuandu, Guangcheng, Po, and the other powerful ones all activated their defensive treasures as well. They combined their powers, but still couldn't keep their legs still in the disturbed space.

Ji Hao had a tough body, that protected him from the destructive, endless impact waves. But, as pure Qi cultivators, Xuandu, Guangcheng and his other brothers and sisters weren't even as strong as Senior Magi in physical terms. Even though they were protected by powerful treasures, blood had still been flowing out of their mouths, ears, nose, and eyes, and their internal organs were still badly shaken.

Fortunately, Yu Meng and the other colony world saints were targeting Pan Yu. If anyone had any other idea and seized this opportunity to give Ji Hao and his brothers and sisters a heavy strike, Ji Hao might survive, but his brothers and sisters would certainly suffer heavy casualties.

Po and the other senior disciples might be able to survive a saint-level strike, but no one could tell how many of their younger brothers and sisters would be erased from this world, both their bodies and souls.

"Brothers and sisters, if you don't have the three flowers above your heads and a pre-world supreme treasure, retreat!" Priest Xuandu suddenly growled out loud. A cloud of blood mist puffed out of his mouth, spreading to a long distance away along with his voice, "Go to my Shifu's dojo! You'll be safe there!"

The group of disciples hesitated shortly. A poor colony world saint was slapped into the sky by Pan Yu and bumped into Ji Hao's Pan Gu bell. A bell ring shredded the surrounding space, bouncing the saint back slantingly. The saint's body shattered a few disciples' light shields and crushed their bodies.

"Brothers! Retreat!" Ji Hao roared sonorously. The golden bridge transformed into a streak of golden light, swirling all of the relatively weaker priests up into the higher sky and disappearing into the starry void after a few flashes. Only Ji Hao, Po, Xuandu, Guangcheng, and the other few powerful ones were left in the sky.

Hundreds of loud popping noises suddenly resounded as hundreds of poor colony world saints were sent flying away by Pan Yu's fingers. Their bodies broke the space, being covered in wounds, while their blood splashed all over the sky.

The blood that contained the great Dao of countless worlds fell from the sky and surged across Pan Gu Motherland like a storm. The nine cauldrons floated above Pan Gu Motherland and raised thick rolling clouds to firmly hold off this heavy storm.

Starlight sparkled on the nine cauldrons, as spirit creatures, ghosts, animals, plants, all kinds of creatures flashed across their surfaces. The mist rose from the cauldrons and turned not countless swirls that absorbed the saints' blood and gradually turned it into pure and heavy strands of blood power, being sent

into the cauldrons.

The nine cauldrons shone brighter and brighter, and the power released from them grew greater and greater.

The Pan Gu bell floated above Ji Hao's head. The glow of the bell merged together with the lights of about ten pre-world treasures which belonged to Po, Xuandu, Guangcheng, and the other few powerful ones. With difficulty, they rushed to the middle of the battleground.

They saw the tens of thousands of miles tall Pan Yu standing in the air, waving his arms to slap countless colony world nobles away like slapping flies, making them vomit blood. His body remained unmoved.

From time to time, Pan Yu would point at an unlucky saint, turning him or her into a cloud of blood mist, then taking a deep breath towards it. Bizarre lights and shadows flashed across the blood mist, showing the others a beautiful world. As Pan Yu inhaled, the beautiful world in the blood mist suddenly collapsed towards a suddenly emerging black hole. Mountains, rivers, seas, billions of creatures... everything in this world fell into this black hole uncontrollably.

Torrents of pure natural powers erupted from the blood mist before Pan Yu's face. Million-mile-thick streams of natural powers flew ceaselessly into his mouth from the blood mist, being swallowed by him.

Countless saints attacked with all their powers, creating more and more wounds on Pan Yu's body. But, as Pan Yu inhaled deeply, a world collapsed and the world's original power flew into his body, healing his wounds quickly.

"Don't stop! If he lives, we will all die!" Yu Meng wielded a golden staff and threw a million-miles-wide sun at Pan Yu's head. "We fought hard to get here. Did we make all the efforts to be devoured by him and become his replenishments?"

Pan Yu chuckled. He raised a finger and shattered the sun, then wielded an arm and sent Yu Meng and over ten-thousand colony world saints around him flying backward with broken bones.

"I can feel your desperation, your fear, your sadness, your struggle!" While absorbing the original power of that collapsed world, Yu Meng murmured in a deep voice, "All your negative emotions are the best dressing. I can..."

Before he finished, the great master's colorful branch struck violently on the back of his neck, broke his skin, and exposed his black bones. But, as he breathed huge streams of the world's original power, the wounds began healing. Before the great master made the second strike, his wounds had healed completely.

The second master swung the glowing staff at Pan Yu's head, not restraining his power for this strike. A giant wound was left on Pan Yu's head, but it too healed within a second. Except for the splashing blood, not even a scar was left on Pan Yu's head.

"Spirit Wa, what kind of an opponent have you found us?!" The two masters' eye corners twitched intensely while they growled out hysterically, "We will remember this great gift from you. And we will remember to pay it back!"

Pan Yu smiled and turned his head. A black thunderbolt flashed out of his erect eye, striking at the great master's body.

A brightly shining golden pagoda spun up from the great master's head along with a cloud of purple mist. The dark thunderbolt struck on the pagoda and sent it, along with the great master, millions of miles away. Countless mountains were flattened by the pagoda and the great master's body.

Finally, Ji Hao came to Pan Yu, with the Pan Gu bell floating above his head. He wielded the Pan Gu sword and made a fierce sword move towards Pan Yu.

Chapter 1887: Great Sword

When Ji Hao made this sword move, everyone else was fighting with full power.

The space fell apart, and the Chaos power boiled.

Countless people surrounded Pan Yu and attacked again and again, like some headless flies flying around a mountain, attempting to tear it down with their fragile bodies!

Yu Meng, Yu Hu, and some other colony world saints didn't know how many times they had been slapped away by Pan Yu. They couldn't stop vomiting blood; their faces were ghastly pale and their powers unstable. They seemed to even directly fall from the level of saints that they had achieved not long ago.

They didn't remember how many times they had attacked Pan Yu or now many holes they left on his body, or how many of their friends died in his hands. Many familiar faces were gone, and some of their close friends had died, but Pan Yu continued floating in the air, unhurriedly waving his arms, as if nothing serious was happening.

Following a thunderous roar, Xing Tian raised his giant axe and charged at Pan Yu. Pan Yu flicked him away again with a finger. Millions of miles away, Xing Tian's body exploded into blood mist. But within a blink, the blood mist merged back into Xing Tian's body. Xing Tian charged again at Pan Yu, showing no fear to death. One more time, Pan Yu flicked him away.

Fuxi, Xuanyuan, Shennong, Suiren, and the other former emperors stood tremblingly on clouds as they looked at Pan Yu with pale faces. They had been through a lot. But still, an unreasonably powerful being like Pan Yu made them feel powerless and hopeless.

They couldn't break him, nor kill him. No matter how badly they

hurt him, he could recover momentarily by devouring a poor Yu Clan saint.

Emperor Xuanyuan had already taken the Xuanyuan sword back from Si Wen Ming. He made hundreds of sword strikes on Pan Yu with all his power, but failed to leave even a scar. His heart was shaken; that nearly indestructible and determined heart of sword was almost broken.

If the two masters, who were trapped in Pan Gu world by the natural fortune of the humankind, hadn't been struggling against Pan Yu, some of the group of former human emperors would have fallen long ago.

Yu Hu burst into a shrill scream, as he was turned into a cloud of blood mist by Pan Yu. The blood mist spread all over the sky. Pan Yu slightly opened his mouth and inhaled towards the blood. A metal world emerged from the blood mist. Everyone on the scene saw the metal creatures which were running about in that world.

A strand of pure original world power erupted from the blood mist and flew into Pan Yu's mouth. The metal world collapsed immediately, breaking into pieces. Countless metal creatures shrieked and cried while their bodies fell apart, turning into streams of natural powers that disappeared into the suddenly emerged black hole in the core of the world.

"Yu Hu!" Yu Meng and the other Yu Clan saints screamed. They shook their heads madly, splashing their cold sweat all over like a rain. Some of them shrieked hoarsely, turned around, and fled towards the outside of Pan Gu world with all their powers.

Heroes who were willing to fight to death could hardly be found among Yu Clan people. At this moment, abandoning their comrades and running was their natural instinct.

Pan Yu gave a sarcastic smile. While swallowing Yu Hu's Pan Jin world, he spread his hands and created a dark swirl to drag all the fleeing Yu Clan saints back to him. As same as before, they couldn't

run.

Thud!

A dazzling pagoda fell on Pan Yu's head, raising a cloud of purple mist.

Within the golden light, a torrent of black blood spurted up for tens of thousands of miles. The great master gripped the giant pagoda with both hands and struck on Pan Yu's head over and over again. But, Pan Yu merely rolled up his eye and cast a glimpse at the great master, before a dark thunderbolt flew out of that erect eye and sent the great maser flying away again.

The second master growled out loud. A golden lotus emerged under his feet while beams of golden light shone out of his body along with nicely scented mists. His body turned purely golden, quickly expanding to eight-hundred-thousand miles tall. Along with rumbling thunder, he became a four-faced, eight-armed golden giant. A raging fire burst from the eyes, nose, mouth, and ears of the four furious-looking faces. Each of the eight arms gripped a powerful weapon and swung at Pan Yu.

"The natural fortune of the humankind...If you want me to risk my life for you, support me!"

The second maser roared sonorously. As he waved a hand towards Pan Gu Motherland, a stream of natural fortune power roared up from the earth, flew into his eight weapons. The eight golden weapons suddenly burst with a dazzling light as they struck on Pan Yu's head like raindrops along with the second master's thunderous voice.

Black blood squirted out. This full strike from the second master broke the skin on Pan Yu's head, and even left a deep wound on his skull.

Pan Yu snorted coldly and raised his left hand. Along with a thunderous sound, six of the second master's eight arms were

blasted, while a half of his golden body was crushed. He stepped back quickly while vomiting blood.

Pan Yu's giant hand penetrated the space and reached to the second master. "I was going to save you for the last, but since you want to die so badly, I can just enjoy the banquet ahead of schedule. Hehe, I smell Chaos spirit plants from you...You have very rich original powers. Eating you must be good for me!"

Seeing that the second master was going to fall in Pan Yu's hands and Ji Hao's sword light was about to land on Pan Yu, the group of priests around Ji Hao all made their moves.

Priest Xuandu raised a Taiji pattern to shield the second master from Pan Yu's hand. Priest Guangcheng threw a giant seal, which was made from the small half of Buzhou Mountain, at Pan Yu's face. At the same time, Po raised both arms and sent over ten-thousand powerful treasures towards Pan Yu...

They all tried their best. While making the sword move, Ji Hao spread the pre-world magnetic life and death formation as fast as he could. The Pan Gu bell rang, and streams of Chaos power wove into towering mountains, descending on Pan Yu one after another.

Pan Yu slapped on the Taiji pattern, as a result of which, Xuandu's face paled immediately. His eyeballs nearly popped out of his eye sockets as he opened his mouth and spat a large mouthful of blood.

Clank!

Guangcheng's seal flew back and struck on his chest, denting it deeply. As same as Xuandu, he also vomited blood and flew backward.

Po looked at his treasures and suffered a heartache. Over ten-thousand supreme treasures and spirit treasures shattered on Pan Yu's body, but only a few bounced back and all struck on Po.

Within a second, the group of priests suffered a severe loss, and

only Ji Hao managed to tied Pan Yu firmly up with the invisible magnetic force field in the sword formation. The Chaos power mountains created by the Pan Gu bell bumped into Pan Yu's body in a row, slowing him down.

Sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow, everything-perish, all living beings reincarnate...

Ji Hao concentrated all his power and strength on this sword move, generating a million-miles-long streak of black sword light from the Pan Gu sword, which swept across Pan Yu's body.

The Pan Gu sword screamed while Pan Yu roared with rage. He couldn't believe his eyes. Ji Hao's sword light cut through his slim body, and broke a big half of his waist!

"Great sword!" Emperor Xuanyuan roared in a pleasant surprise.

Chapter 1888: Die Here

"This sword...must be mine" Finally, Pan Yu showed a trace of shock on his expressionless face, which previously looked like an entire piece of glass. He immediately turned back and looked at Ji Hao, while instinctively covering his almost completely cleaved waist with both hands.

Large amounts of black blood spurted out of the enormous wound. Pan Gu shook his upper body and widely opened his mouth to take a deep inhalation towards Yu Hu's blood. Within the blood mist, Pan Jin world collapsed thoroughly. After swallowing all of the blood mist, dark threads began reaching out of the wound on his waist.

Black blood threads wove together, and the wound began healing along with a sizzling noise.

But, a dark sword light lingered in the wound, shredding all the interweaving blood threads. So many people had combined their powers and tried, but failed to do any actual harm to Pan Yu. However, after being wounded by a Ji Hao with one sword move, Pan Yu actually couldn't heal himself within a short span!

Pan Yu couldn't hide the shock in his eyes. "This sword must be mine!" He emphasized.

Pan Yu stopped paying attention to the group of Yu Clan saints, who were flying all over the sky like flies. Instead, he slowly turned around and reached both hands out to Ji Hao, letting his blood flood out of the wound on his waist. Thick black clouds wrapped around his hands and released a terrifying devouring power.

Tens of Yu Clan saints accidentally got too close to Pan Yu, and ended up being swirled into the dark clouds. They screamed as they uncontrollably flew into Pan Yu's hands and exploded into a blood mist.

In the Chaos, tens of differently scaled worlds collapsed into tremendous natural power streams that flew into the black holes in the world cores, then being devoured by the dark clouds in Pan Yu's hands through a mysterious connection, and from far distances away.

This time, Pan Yu gave up on torturing them slowly and tasting them one by one. Instead, he started an efficient slaughter.

Along with the vast original world power, a giant amount of natural powers flew ceaselessly into Pan Yu's body, being absorbed by him. The wound on his waist healed inch by inch. Strong natural powers flashed through the black sword light inside his wound and gradually wore out the sharp sword intent. Afterward, the wound healed quicker and quicker.

Ji Hao drew back. He was smarter than trying to fight Pan Yu face to face.

Pan Yu fixed his erect eye on Ji Hao and chased after him with giant steps. Dense black clouds had been rising from this tens of thousands of miles tall body. His body corroded the space in Pan Gu world and left a dark trace behind, which could not be fixed in a while. Uncontrollably, countless crying and screaming Yu Clan saints followed behind Pan Yu and fell towards Ji Hao through this dark trace.

Some poor ones touched this dark and completely empty trace. In a moment, their spirit blood was drained, and their worlds collapsed into torrents of natural power that flew into Pan Yu's body.

Cries, begging, shrieks, and howls echoed through the entire world, while waves of attack landed on Pan Yu's body, broke the space, and quaked the entire starry void.

Ji Hao maintained the pre-world magnetic life and death sword formation with difficulty. The invisible magnetic force field washed against Pan Yu's body like tides and slowed him down as

much as possible, keeping him from catching up with Ji Hao.

But, Pan Yu was way too powerful, that once he moved, the entire sword formation was vibrated. The tremendous vibration force struck on Ji Hao's body and embryo of Dao through the connection between Ji Hao and the sword formation, bringing him an unbearable pain that disturbed his embryo of Dao and made his power unstable. Ji Hao also noticed that Pan Yu had been causing serious damages to Pan Gu world by moving his gigantic body.

Ji Hao's heart thumped. He suddenly rose high into the sky, prepared to bring Pan Yu out of Pan Gu world and fight him in the Chaos.

He kept flying up at his highest speed. He didn't know how long he took to reach above the sky, but before he rushed out of the natural screen of Pan Gu world, a figure suddenly showed up, blocking Ji Hao's way. That was Evil Yu Yu.

A faintly audible voice sounded around Ji Hao's ears, which was Evil Yu Yu talking to him, "Good disciple, do not leave Pan Gu world. Stall Pan Yu right here...I really didn't think that Fuxi and the others could forge a magical treasure like Praying and Sanctification altar, and turn all these non-humankind monsters into saints!"

"Pan Yu can destroy their worlds from here and absorb the original power of those worlds...But, through such long distances, he can't devour those worlds entirely. As long as he stays in Pan Gu world, over sixty percent of those worlds' original power will be absorbed by Pan Gu world."

Ji Hao's eyes immediately shone. "Shifu, what do you mean?" He looked at Evil Yu Yu and asked.

"Keep Pan Yu here and stall him. Let him do what he wants...Let those Yu Clan saints all die here." A frosty light shone out of Evil Yu Yu's eyes as he said, "That will bring you a tremendous natural reward...This is truly a pleasant surprise!"

Ji Hao turned back and glanced at Pan Yu, who was chasing behind him. He took a deep breath and made another sky-opening strike at Pan Yu.

Facing a sharp sword light, Pan Yu tilted his head to dodge. The tens of thousands of miles long sword light beam drilled into his left shoulder and came out from his right rib area. Pan Yu spat blood, raised both hands, and grabbed tens of poor Yu Clan saints, draining them within a couple of breaths.

"Master Ji Hao!" Yu Meng howled in desperation, "Help us! Kill this monster! How can our ancestor be such a scary monster?"

Ji Hao remained silent. He spread the sword formation as much as he could, then quickly merged his body into it.

Yu Meng, the other Yu Clan saints, and Pan Yu were all dragged into the sword formation. The two masters followed up and dove into the sword formation on their own initiatives. Po and the other priests roared out loud, rushing into the sword formation, along with Fuxi and the other powerful human beings, without any hesitation.

The sword power pierced into the sky. Countless people surrounded Pan Yu in the sword formation and attacked him ferociously. The space was shaking while those colony world nobles, who drained the natural fortune of their worlds and became saints with the help of the altar, were harvested and devoured by Pan Yu like wild grasses.

Pan Yu's giant hands followed behind Ji Hao. Ji Hao transformed into an extremely thin streak of light and flashed around Pan Yu's body. He gradually restrained the power of the Pan Gu sword and cut at the latter's hands over and over again.

Pan Yu cautiously dodged, avoiding touching the lights of the Pan Gu sword.

Ji Hao continued circling around Pan Yu while dense clouds of

dark mist wrapped the latter's body. Within the mist, large groups of Yu Clan saints fell silently.

Chapter 1889: Consumption

Pan Gu Motherland, on the old site of Buzhou Mountain...

After Ji Hao pulled out the broken Buzhou Mountain and forged it into the Pan Gu bell, a bottomless hole was left in this area. Because of Pan Gu Motherland's strong self-healing ability, this hole disappeared in months. By now, Ji Hao's Yao Mountain City towered in here.

Right under Yao Mountain City, in the core of Pan Gu Motherland, countless ancient poisonous fire bubbles had been squeezing and bumping against each other. Occasionally, a fire bubble exploded and sent a wave of purple and dark-red flame streaks bursting in all direction. The flames blasted and caused thunderous booms, seeming about to even tear the entire world apart.

By slightly touching this earth fire bubbles which were generated over billions of years, an ordinary man would immediately die, his body would vanish, and soul would perish.

Even a powerful being protected by pre-world supreme treasures or spirit treasures like Po could be hurt by an exploding fire bubble in this place if he were careless. He might suffer severe injuries, and even his foundation of Dao could be damaged.

Even a saint could be hurt if wrapped in this area. Deep in this sea of fire, earth fire bubbles have been exploding day and night. Over time, the poisonous fire would pollute the saint's body and affect his cultivation, even downgrading this saint.

Among numberless fire bubbles, Priest Yun and Priest Jun were confronting each other, tens of thousands of miles apart.

An enormous white disc was faintly visible behind Priest Jun's body. Priest Yun also had a disc behind him, in the color of gray, and was about ten percent smaller than Priest Jun's.

The two discs looked heavy like jade boards, and were both thickly covered in sparkling spell symbols. Three-thousand strands of mist were released from each disc, connected with the world and stabilizing Pan Gu Motherland. Every strand of mist was glowing with a dazzling light, giving out an inexhaustible power of Dao. If any ordinary man dared to cast a glance at any strand of mist, his soul would definitely be crushed under the tremendous power of Dao.

They were tens of thousands of miles apart, and neither of them had been making a move. They breathed slowly while looking at each other. Within every breath, a lotus would rise from each of their heads, flying towards the other one at lightning speed.

Their lotuses collided violently in the air, then vanished silently, without generating a spark of fire, any light, or the slightest sound. But, after each pair of lotuses vanished, the glow of the poisonous earth fire bubbles would dim a little, and the fire's temperature would drop slightly.

The battle between them seemed to be peaceful, but in fact, it was extremely dangerous.

Any slight exchange of moves that happened between them would directly cause the neutralization and consumptions of Pan Gu world's original power. The power contained in any of the lotuses which bumped against each other and vanished was as great as the entire cultivation of a saint!

Within every breath, an amount of power equal to the total power of two saints would vanish from Pan Gu world because of this battle between Priest Yun and Priest Jun!

This vanished power was like the blood shed by Pan Gu world. If this silent but heavy power consumption continued like this, the entire Pan Gu world could collapse because of an exhaustion of original power.

Again, a lotus rose from each of their heads. The two lotuses hit

against each other in the earth fire and then vanished quietly.

Priest Jun laughed abruptly, "Are you really gonna make this go on? Without your helpers, how can you possibly win?"

Shaking his head, Priest Jun laughed as well. "You're right. I'm not as good as you are. But, you're alone now. You can't ever seal me again. Back in the old days, if your three disciples, Spirit Wa, Donggong, Ximu, Netherworld Priest, Priest Mu, and Priest Hua didn't all help you, how could you ever seal me in the great Dao?"

Giving a long sigh, Priest Yun laughed delightfully, "Since then, I knew that I couldn't fight alone. So, the three 'Pengs' became my disciples, Priest Hu and Priest Hua 'accidentally' guided sky devils here, and the monsters from Pan Yu world have been intruding into this world."

"I planned and prepared for years. Today, I finally see the results. How many efforts did you plan to spend in order to deal with Pan Yu? Or, are you going to fight me till the end, regardless of the safely of Pan Gu world?"

"I just want to replace you, and become the only spirit of Pan Gu world. But Pan Yu is not like me. He wants to devour the entire Pan Gu world. He wants to destroy this world!" Priest Yun smiled brightly and continued, "So, based on what I know about you, you will save your greatest power for Pan Yu, won't you?"

"But, he's not so easy to deal with." Priest Yun gave a large grin and squeezed his eyes into a pair of curves as he said, "Or, are you preparing to go deal with Pan Yu after the winner is determined between us? Now, every exchange of our moves will consume the original power of Pan Gu world. Aren't you worried about over-consumption? Even if you can seal me again, will Pan Gu world have enough power left to fight against Pan Yu?"

Priest Jun frowned and remained silent. Three lotuses rose from his head in a row and struck at Priest Yun in a triangular formation.

Priest Yun carelessly waved a hand and sent out three lotuses to vanish together with Priest Jun's.

"We are well-matched in strength, and our powers are similar. You understand the great Dao of Pan Gu world deeper than I do, but you can't do anything to me, not alone...Are you really gonna let Pan Yu do whatever he wants?"

Priest Yun maintained the bright smile on his face as he threw both arms forward and created a large light screen. Through the screen, Priest Yun and Priest Jun saw Priest Dachi, Priest Qignwei, and Priest Yu Yu fighting intensely against the three 'Pengs' in Yu Yu's sword formation in the Chaos.

Shockingly, even with the help of Yu Yu's sword formation, Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, Priest Yu Yu were being forced back. Facing the three 'Pengs', they could barely breathe.

"These are just three clones. Your disciples created them when cutting the 'three corpses' out of their bodies. How can they ever win against the three good disciples of mine?" Asked Priest Yun proudly, "Where are the real three disciples of yours? Why don't they do a thing? Are they even abandoning their 'three corpses' clones?"

Priest Jun remained silent, while Priest Yun burst into laughter.

"Why am I so happy when seeing your helpless face? In the old days, in order to root the three 'Pengs' out, you taught people how to cut the 'three corpses' out...Shame, shame, that was such a profound and hard thing to do. How many people in the whole Pan Gu world managed to cut out the 'three corpses' with your technique?"

"With no other choice, you told the human emperor to destroy the ancient records, and wipe out the information about all ancient powerful beings."

"As long as human beings did not call the three 'Pengs' names, the

'three corpses' would stay asleep inside their bodies. As long as human beings did not know about Original Devil, their hearts would stay calm, and evil thoughts will never grow...This was actually a good plan. If human beings continued living a simple and natural life like they did in the ancient time, how could I ever get a chance to be free?"

"Sadly, sadly...Human beings can't always be so simple and honest, can they?"

Ten lotuses vanished in the earth fire in a row while Priest Yun's laughter even quaked the earth core.

Chapter 1890: Nothing Worse then Death

A black mist loomed on the entire Pan Gu Motherland.

The sun gave forth no more light, causing the world to become dark. Yu Clan saints vanished from the mist one after another. They and their worlds all collapsed amidst Pan Yu's greedy, endless devouring.

"You are derived from me, and you will eventually come back to me!" Pan Yu's deep laughter echoed across the whole Pan Gu world like a nightmare.

As Pan Yu devoured more and more Yu Clan saints and their worlds, his tens of thousands of miles tall body was shrinking. The more Yu Clan saints died, the more solid his body got.

Gradually, he shrank to about ten-thousand-meters tall. His entire body was wrapped in flowing black lights, as countless dazzling marks of Dao sparkled on his transparent, glass-like, dark skin. A deep buzzing noise was spreading from his body, and merely this buzzing noise was shaking Ji Hao's embryo of Dao and internal organs.

Waves of clear, strong black light roared in all directions like a tsunami.

The two masters, Fuxi, Shennong, Xuanyuan, Suiren, and the other former human emperors, even Ji Hao, Po, Xuandu, Guangcheng... Each time the black light swept across their bodies, everyone would suffer an unbearable pain, as their life-force would suddenly be drained by the black light. Their spirit blood was destabilized, and they couldn't even keep their legs still as they fell down from the sky one after another.

In the dark mist, Yu Meng and all the other Yu Clan saints had all vanished. With the help of the Praying and Sanctification altar, they became saints. But, before they could taste the highest power

of ruling the great Dao of a world, they were crushed like ants, thrown into mud, and erased from the universe.

Pan Yu quietly floated in the midair with his arms spread out. An enormous black hole had been spinning slowly before his chest. Inside his chest, the three suns and nine moons were vibrating, causing muffled rumbling clashes.

"Finally, all back?" Pan Yu raised his head. A dark beam of light shone out of his erect eye and pierced directly into the higher sky. A long, long while alter, he murmured with a deep voice, "Hmm, no... Pan Yu world had millions of portals that led to other worlds, but I have only killed about a hundred thousand saints here..."

"It seems that many, many, many descendants of mine have been waiting for me to bring them back. Their blood, flesh, souls, spirits... everything they have, including their worlds, are all mine!" Pan Yu laughed happily, "Every one of my descendants is the brightest lighthouse, a dazzling Chaos mark. I will find and reclaim them one by one!"

Waves of black light had been spreading in all directions. Wherever the dark light reached, all of the natural laws were twisted, broken, and devoured. Including the two masters, people on the scene weren't able to fly anymore. Everyone just stood on the ground with confusion as they looked at Pan Yu.

"You..." Pan Yu lowered his head and looked at Ji Hao and the others. Shaking his head, he hissed with laughter, "No, it's not the time to enjoy you yet. There are still some small desserts left. Shall I have them first?"

Pan Yu turned around and released two dark bolts of thunder from his erect eye.

One thunderbolt struck on the non-humankind camp which was located in the eastern side of Yao Mountain City, while the other one fell into the western non-humankind camp.

The hundreds of millions of miles squared camps vanished quietly. The warriors from countless worlds were suddenly frozen as a dark whirlwind spiraled up from the earth. Within a bright black light, their bodies turned into strands of black mist that rose into the sky and were swallowed by Pan Yu.

"As I thought, quantity can't replace quality." Pan Yu shook his head with dissatisfaction and said, "Flavorless, not good... The energy provided by the blood and flesh of all these creatures together wasn't even as good as one saint. But, this place is finally clean and quiet."

After chuckling, Pan Yu opened his mouth and made a deep inhalation. The Pan Yu world nobles' camp located in the northern side of Yao Mountain City suddenly disappeared amidst a dark wind. Countless Pan Yu world nobles shrieked before vanishing in the dark wind.

Pan Yu nodded in satisfaction, then turned to Liang Zhu City, "Little things, you're the only ones left in this world. Come on, come back to me. You are derived from me, so you should naturally come back to me. After finishing you, I will be enjoying this world."

As Pan Yu pointed at Liang Zhu City, a series of popping noise could be heard without an end. The heads of countless Yu Clan, Jia Clan, and Xiu Clan people exploded, then their bodies burst into blood mist and merged into bloodstreams, flying towards Pan Yu.

Yemo Luoye stood on top of the city wall as she gazed into the sky in the south, eyes filled with desperation.

Not only her, all alive non-humankind beings stood on the city wall, eyes fixed on the south. Nothing but Pan Yu's horrifying figure existed in their eyes. Even though it was hundreds of millions of miles away, Pan Yu's ten-thousand-meters-tall body filled up their sights. They could see him... They could only see him. His figure was like a glowing searing-iron, sinking deeply into

their eyes.

"How can this happen?" Yemo Luoye burst into hysterical streams, "Our Yu Dynasty..."

Following a muffled boom, all living beings in Liang Zhu City were wiped out. Including Yemo Luoye, numberless non-humankind beings became blood mist and flew to Pan Yu.

"Sister!" In Yao Mountain City, Yemo Shanye kneeled on the ground and cried herself hoarse. Sadness and desperation dominated her face.

All the Yu Clan, Jia Clan and Xiu Clan people who were kept captive by Ji Hao years ago cried out loud. They walked out of the houses that Ji Hao arranged for them, gazed at the north, and shed tears over their losses. Some of them even fell to the ground and twitched in desperation.

Through the special bloodline connections, these non-humankind captives in Yao Mountain City sensed the destruction of Pan Yu world, and the death of their families. They also felt the incoming disaster. Pan Yu, this legendary creator of Pan Yu world, was destroying everything he had created!

"The three suns and nine moons!" The only remaining non-humankind beings kneeled on the ground and desperately prayed to their spirit totems with dry voices.

"Here, more!" Pan Yu turned back and grinned at Yao Mountain City, then swung a hand at the city.

Feng Xing shielded Yemo Shanye. He pulled open the Yi bow and shot arrows at Pan Yu with all his power.

The arrows fell like a rain. The arrow lights tore apart the space, penetrated the dark mist, and fell on Pan Yu's body one after another. The arrows exploded on Pan Yu's body, but Feng Xing seemed to not be able to see them. He burned his spirit blood to boost the power of the Yi bow, risking his life to attack Pan Yu!

Yemo Shanye was behind him.

Even though she was a non-humankind girl...

Feng Xing laughed proudly, "She's my girl. If you want to kill her, I'll kill you...If I can't defeat you, nothing worse than death will happen!"

Chapter 1891: Together

In Yao Mountain City, numberless archers gazed at Feng Xing seriously.

In terms of art of archery, they might not be as good as Feng Xing, but they were not much worse either. They were all Eastern Wasteland elites. If they combined their powers, they would be stronger than Feng Xing by a hundred folds.

But, the bow held in Feng Xing's hands was the Yi bow, the greatest treasure of Eastern Wasteland.

Even Feng Xing failed to hurt Pan Yu...Seeing this, not even the proudest Eastern Wasteland archer dared to guarantee that he could do a harm to Pan Yu!

The arrows which had been flying out of Feng Xing's hands were not only arrows, but also the belief of Eastern Wasteland people, their spirits, their highest totem!

Countless Eastern Wasteland archers stared at Feng Xing's bow, their eyes burning with passion. Strands of pure and sharp faith power flew into the bow, and suddenly, a ten-thousand-meters-tall, especially strong figure with extra-long and muscular arms emerged behind Feng Xing.

The figure's hands were empty. He slightly lowered his head and raised both arms, as if pulling an invisible bow. A thunder blast across the sky, leaving a thin crack on the dark clouds which loomed on Yao Mountain City.

Following the figure's move, Feng Xing slowly pulled his bow open, with exactly the same movements. Streams of natural powers gathered towards the bow, along with the faith power of countless Eastern Wasteland archers. A dazzling, golden, giant arrow emerged on the bowstring!

"Kill!" Countless Eastern Wasteland roared in one voice. They

boosted their spirit blood and generated the strongest roar of their lives. Their blood boiled, and their faith power erupted like volcanos. At the moment, all their powers were connected with Feng Xing!

Shining dazzlingly, the enormous golden arrow transformed into a tens of thousands of meters long streak of golden light, momentarily flashed across hundreds of millions of miles, and struck at Pan Yu's chest.

In Yao Mountain City, including Feng Xing, all Eastern Wasteland archers vomited blood and fell powerlessly to the ground with softened limbs. This arrow strike nearly drained Feng Xing's life-force, also consuming a big half of the spirit blood of all Eastern Wasteland archers in Yao Mountain City.

Buzz!

A raging fire rose from Pan Yu's chest. The giant golden arrow shattered, and a trace of golden light flashed across Pan Yu's chest, then disappeared.

Pan Yu laughed. He slightly widened his mouth and let out dense clouds of dark mist, then said, "For this little woman...Interesting! You actually gathered the powers of so many people to attack me?"

Shaking his head slightly, Pan Yu continued with a deep voice, "Your world is interesting. You are actually united to fight against the enemy, aren't you? Such things, in Pan Yu world..."

Such things would never happen in Pan Yu world. Yu Clan nobles wouldn't trust anyone but themselves. All their selfishness came from Pan Yu. His goal was devouring anything to strengthen himself. He was an extremely selfish and ruthless being.

To Pan Yu, 'trust' was a way too luxurious and useless concept.

He didn't need to trust anyone anyway. He believed that everything around him would eventually be devoured by him, so why would he trust anyone?

"Why fight back? Why struggle? You are derived from me, and you should come back to me!" Pan Yu stared at Yemo Shanye and said, "You have been free for too long. Your existence is a mistake. Now, it's time to fix it."

A giant black hole suddenly emerged from Pan Yu's erect eye, as an invisible devouring power fiercely approached Yemo Shanye.

Yao Mountain City's defensive formation collapsed, and the heaven began shaking. According to Ji Hao's design, the entire Yao Mountain City was connected with earth meridians, natural stars, and the divine heaven and earth formation in the heaven.

Pan Yu intended to devour the non-humankind beings in Pan Yu world. Therefore, a direct conflict burst between his devouring power and Yao Mountain City!

The tremendous devouring power drowned the city like a flood, surging in all directions through the smooth magic shield of Yao Mountain City. Around the city, in the lava rivers, flowing sands, poisonous swamps, the blood sea, and every line of defense that Ji Hao designed, the bodies of countless warriors broke into pieces. Dragons and phoenixes were crushed, countless spirit creatures shrieked when vanishing, and numberless blood sea ghosts and half-dragon warriors were shredded by the devouring power.

Pan Yu was gulping. The devouring power peeled off Yao Mountain City's shield bit by bit. In the meanwhile, uncountable Yao Mountain City warriors had been swallowed by him.

Ao Hao, who called himself Ao Titian, became a cloud of blood mist along with tens of ancient dragon kings. Some proud phoenixes had their feathers fallen off and their bodies turned into ashes before they could fly away.

The shrimp and crab warriors under Shermie's command dove deeply into the blood sea. But, before they reached three-thousand-meters in depth, the blood sea was raised into the sky by the invisible devouring power and evaporated. Countless shrimp and

crab warriors cried, then exploded.

Large groups of spirit creatures under Wuzhi Qi and Yuanli's command had been screaming shrilly. Facing Pan Yu, they were completely defenseless. Even before they figured out what was happening, their souls perished...

'Crack'!

Along with a thunderous noise, the vast Yao Mountain City quaked. Countless thin cracks appeared on the ground, as the devouring power was trying to unroot the entire city and send it into Pan Yu's mouth.

The divine heaven and earth formation vibrated intensely, trying its best to keep Yao Mountain City from flying up. But, even the heaven was shaking, seeming to fall from the sky. Cracks appeared in many areas of the heaven, spurting raging fires and dense smokes.

On the city wall of Yao Mountain City, Yu Mu stood in front of the exhausted Feng Xing as he raised the Disease God Streamer high. He shook his head, gave Pan Yu a helpless bitter smile, then sprayed a mouthful of blood on the streamer.

The streamer immediately fell apart, transformed into the evilest disease curse, and struck at Pan Yu.

Pan Yu scornfully glanced at the streamer, then carelessly swallowed it!

Yu Mu burst into howls and began vomiting blood. His body shrank rapidly, as if being drained of spirit blood.

On the city wall, Taisi, who had always been a little silly, suddenly raised his head. His eyes glowed like luminous cat eyes as he seriously said to Shaosi, "The other day, I carefully counted my children. I now have one-thousand and two-hundred children. So, my bloodline will never die."

While chuckling, Taisi bit off a small half of his tongue and spat

it on the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book along with a large mouthful of blood, then thudded his forehead on the earth.

Shaosi gave a shrill scream. Her long black hair suddenly turned pale white as she cast a complicated spell, locked her fingers together, and pressed towards Pan Yu.

Chapter 1892: Netherworld Priest Fights

The moment Taisi put his forehead and palms on the ground, a blurry, gray figure rose from the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book. An evil and dark power erupted. For a very short span of time, this strong power even forced the Pan Yu's dark mist back for nearly a million miles.

On this blurry figure's face, a pair of light spots sparkled dimly. He stared at Pan Yu, then a voice echoed through the hearts of all Pan Yu Motherland creatures. The voice was resounding, weak, sounding like a cold gust of wind from hell, even seeming to freeze the internal organs of all living beings.

"Not...Pan Gu..." This gray figure sighed and collapsed inwards, becoming an extremely thin beam of arrow light that rolled up the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book and bumped at Pan Yu's chest.

Puff!

The grey arrow light penetrated Pan Yu's body, then disappeared without a trace. The Nailhead Seven Arrow Book was gone as well. Pan Yu trembled slightly, then lowered his head to look at his chest with confusion and surprise.

A dim gray light sparkled quickly on Pan Yu's chest.

Next, dark light spots began falling off from the edge of the gray light. Following slight explosive sounds, more and more dark light spots blasted on Pan Yu's chest, becoming strands of dark mist and dissipating.

Within a couple of breath, a three-hundred-meters-wide hole appeared on Pan Yu's chest. The three suns and nine moons vibrated intensely, letting out thunderous roars. They transformed into twelve dazzling light spheres that gathered near this wound, seeming to seize the chance and escape from Pan Yu.

"What a scary curse." Pan Yu murmured to himself with a low

voice, "He is dead, but his remaining original soul still had such a great power. I think in the old days, he was also a powerful dominator..." Clicking his tongue, Pan Yu continued, "If he had survived, he would be more powerful than the strongest few among the Chaos monsters who attacked me back when I created Pan Yu world, right?"

"But, this powerful being died in Pan Gu world. The creator of your world was really dreadful." Pan Yu raised his head. Dark thunderbolts dazzled in his erect eye while he laughed evilly, "But, he is also dead. I can't feel his power in this world...The origin of this world generated such a powerful world creator, it's..."

With excitement, Pan Yu even trembled slightly. "I will...take it!" He laughed with a deep, evil voice.

Pan Yu slowly raised both hands and then slapped on his own chest. Along with a thunderous boom, the three suns and nine moons screamed inside his chest. One sun and three moons exploded into strands of splendid light, merging into his body. After absorbing one sun and three moons, the wound on his chest healed almost instantly.

"You are so naughty. You are all derived from me. You are my descendants...You never tried to help me restore my power. On the contrary, you sealed and suppressed me, attempting to make me sleep forever!" Pan Yu lowered his head as he looked at the remaining two suns and six moons in his chest and smiled.

"But, what changed? You are derived from me, so you must come back to me. You will eventually give back what belongs to me!" Murmured Pan Yu, "You are representing the most important twelve original Dao in my body. How can I ever let you go?"

"All my descendants must merge back into me!" From a distance away, Pan Yu looked at Yemo Shanye, who was hiding behind Feng Xing, then smiled and continued, "Not even a little girl can run. So, how can you possibly run?"

Pan Yu reached out both his hands and wrapped Yao Mountain City up with an even stronger devouring power. Thousands of buildings quaked in the city. The bases of the defensive formations of these buildings vibrated intensely and generated blinding fiery lights and clouds of smoke.

Taisi fell feebly to the ground. With confusion and sadness, he gazed where the gray figure disappeared.

"Ah, our ancestor is gone. There is no chance to recover...Shaosi, we lost a lot this time." Taisi mumbled, "I lost the greatest treasure of our family. It was passed down from our ancestors. I can't face our ancestors now."

Shaosi's pale white hair fluttered in the air as she had already pressed her hands down towards Pan Yu.

The boundless black mist around Pan Yu's body quaked slightly. With surprise, he glanced around. Suddenly, he fixed his erect eye on Shaosi and asked, "What did you do? I felt that some things aren't..."

Before he finished, the exceptionally dense black mist around him turned a little thinner, and his power weakened slightly.

Shaosi's pale white hair instantly turned black and shiny again. Heir waist-length hair began growing rapidly. Within a second, her hair had grown to tens of thousands of miles long, fluttering behind her like a dark torrent.

Shaosi vomited blood. Next, her blood spurted out from every pore of hers.

She looted Pan Yu's natural tune with a natural-reversing magic. Torrents of natural fortune power flooded into her body. Shaosi had a mysterious ancient bloodline, but still, she couldn't take the measureless natural reward power from Pan Yu.

Both Shaosi's body and soul were nearly crushed by this natural reward power. She hurriedly glanced around, then clenched her

teeth and pointed at Ji Hao!

Ji Hao had transformed his body into a streak of light, and had been attacking Pan Yu with the Pan Gu sword. All of a sudden, a tremor went through his body and he felt a magical power flowing into his body from all directions. Neither his cultivation nor power improved, but somehow, he felt he had attained and inexhaustible extra strength. He hadn't grown stronger, not even by a little bit. But, he seriously felt that he could do anything he wanted!

"You... How can you possibly hurt me?" Pan Yu laughed in a deep voice, "This world will eventually be mine!"

Pan Yu clearly sensed the effect of Shaosi's natural-fortune-looting magic. His infinite natural fortune had been flowing into Ji Hao's body, bringing countless benefits to this little bug which had been flying around him.

Once again, Pan Yu concentrated his attention on Ji Hao. After all, Ji Hao had a sword that could easily cut his body open!

"Annoying ant!" Pan Yu murmured in a deep voice, "The sword should be mine!"

He snorted coldly, then swung a palm at Ji Hao. The surrounding space was broken, and the great Dao was twisted, while a devouring power condensed into invisible chains and chained Ji Hao in the air, disabling him from moving.

With shock, Ji Hao raised his head and looked at Pan Yu's descending palm. At this moment, a bronze gate opened behind Pan Yu's body. From the gate, a figure which was wrapped in a dense blood mist walked out with giant steps, then two beams of sword lights fiercely pierced into Pan Yu's body, along with a strong intent of killing that rose straight into the sky.

Chapter 1893: The Eighteen Hells

A quarter of an hour before Shaosi cast the spell, in the Netherworld...

The Netherworld was dark and misty. Everything in there was black or white. Shreds of shadows were fleeting in the misty air, leaving glistening traces in the air.

Surrounding a mountain which was located in the core of the Netherworld, countless skulls piled up layer by layer. The white, lustrous skulls were 'looking' at the sky, with streams of clear light quietly flowing out of their empty eye sockets.

Yet, the skull mountain didn't look evil, but sacred.

Among numberless white skulls, small gray flowers had been growing. The thumb-sized flowers swayed without being blown by any wind. The iron-blade-like petals tinkled against each other, producing a silvery sound.

From the endless, peaceful death, a soft but strong trace of life-force erupted. This skull mountain was the highest mountain in the netherworld. This place was filled with a magical power of Dao. Because of this towering mountain, the entire Netherworld was sacred.

A white figure suddenly broke the space and directly landed on top of this mountain. When this white figure descending from the air, blood sea, blade mountains, sword forests, boiling oil pots, bloody millstones, and other visions emerged around him one after another.

If this were an ordinary man, he would have been dragged into a bottomless abyss by these visions. But this white figure descended from the highest sky and conveniently made eighteen steps, dodging the eighteen layers of visions as if strolling, then easily came to the mountaintop.

He was wearing a snow-white robe, looking calm and bland. He was another clone of Yu Yu.

Unlike the warm and passionate red-robed Yu Yu, or the evil and brutal Evil Yu Yu, this white-robed Yu Yu seemed to be gentle and mild, giving a refreshing feeling.

He wasn't angry, neither anxious. Once he landed on the mountaintop, a warm and relaxed atmosphere was created.

"My friend, long time no see. How have you been?" The white-robed Yu Yu smilingly bowed to a giant black and white rock on the mountaintop and said, "You don't look well. Why did you isolate yourself in here?"

A thin crack appeared on the rock. A while later, the rock slowly cracked. As small rock pieces fell down the mountain, a priest in a blood-red robe could be seen quietly sitting on the mountaintop, coldly looking at the white-robed Yu Yu. A strong power could be sensed from this priest.

A long while later, this priest gave a sigh and said, "Of course, I'm not good. The door is right in front of me, but no matter how hard I try, I can't get in. It has been so many years. I've tried everything, but I failed. How can I be good?"

The white-robed Yu Yu smiled brightly and responded, "If you can't get in this door, why don't you choose another door? Plenty of doors exist in this world!"

"I don't want to do that. No door is as good as this one." The priest looked at the white-robed Yu Yu and said, "Ordinarily people see the others enjoying banquets everyday and question themselves for having poor foods. People like us have something in common with ordinary people after all."

The white-robed Yu Yu remained silent for a while, then took out a fist-sized jade disc and handed to the priest seriously.

The priest quivered intensely, as if being stung by a scorpion. He

immediately reached out his hands to the jade disc, but then hesitated and slowly took his hands back. "What is this?" He asked.

The white-robed Yu Yu smiled brighter and brighter as he said, "My friend, you know what it is. This is my Shifu sending the door that you have been trying to open straight to you. Now, you can walk in at any time you want...My friend, congratulations for attaining your great Dao!"

The priest frowned as he seriously stared at the small jade disc for a long white. At last, he slowly, tremblingly held it in his hands and asked, "What does your Shifu want me to do?"

The white-robed Yu Yu silently looked at the priest.

The priest pondered for a while, then nodded and smiled as he said, "Alright, I win some, I lose some. But eventually, I will win more than I will lose... Great!"

As he put his palms together, the jade disc transformed into eighteen bright light beams and slowly merged into his body. He slightly trembled and said, "This is it...I've found the path to the door, but I thought it was wrong...The truth has been told in one word, but how many years have I wasted?"

...

In Pan Gu Motherland, Ji Hao roared sonorously as he lunged the Pan Gu sword towards Pan Yu's chest, creating a purely dark streak of sword light.

Pan Yu knew how powerful Ji Hao's sword was. He quickly moved his fingers and shattered the space before Ji Hao's face layer by layer. The broken space recombined in an extremely weird way, forming a black, glistering crystal wall that stood in front of Ji Hao.

Clank!

The Pan Gu sword struck on the ten-thousand-miles-thick crystal wall. The crystal wall and the sword light collapsed

simultaneously. Shreds of sword light swept across Pan Yu's chest and broke his skin, but failed to cause him any actual harm.

"My powers are waking up!" Pan Yu grinned at Ji Hao and said, "Not only my power, but also the powers of all the Chaos monsters that I devoured in those days...I am recalling them all."

Ji Hao's sword strike failed to deliver any effect, so he immediately drew back. From the higher sky, twenty-four long spears condensed from pre-world metal power came down and accurately struck on the Pan Gu bell. Following the resounding bell rings, Ji Hao was sent over a hundred million miles away by twenty-four strong impact waves.

Right at this moment, the gate of the Netherworld opened. The priest in a blood-red robe marched out of the bronze gate and penetrated Pan Yu's body with a pair of fierce pre-world weapons.

"Damn you!" Pan Yu howled shrilly. Clearly, the pair of swords had made him suffer. He turned back glared at the priest and snarled.

"I am Netherworld. My friend, I need a favor from you!"

A cloud rose from Netherworld Priest's head. Netherworld Hierarch, the eighteen hells clone, and a clone that was wrapped in dark mists were sitting on the cloud with their legs crossed. Simultaneously, they opened their eyes and sent out a wave of black and white thunderbolts.

Pan Yu laughed with rage. Without casting a magic or using a special ability, he directly pressed a palm down on Netherworld Priest.

Along with a thunderous sound, Netherworld Priest let Pan Yu crush his body, without putting up any struggle.

On the cloud, Netherworld Priest's three cones exploded into pieces like shattering glass bottles. Pan Yu laughed triumphantly, but Netherworld Priest's voice came out of the bronze gate, "Thank

you, my friend. After you die, you will be invited to the eighteen hells of Pan Gu world to suffer forever."

The space quaked. The eighteen hells of Pan Gu world which existed since the world was created suddenly began shaking. In accordance with a mysterious sequence, the eighteen hells lined up vertically in the Netherworld.

Netherworld Priest's body collapsed and his soul merged with the eighteen hells, which were connected with the supreme great Dao. Netherworld Priest laughed out loud. With his laughter, he announced the rebirth of the eighteen hells and the Netherworld!

The pair of swords which stuck in Pan Yu's body suddenly fell apart, becoming eighteen streaks of sword light that left eighteen deep wounds on Pan Yu's body.

Chapter 1894: Wildly Beating Gongs and Drums

The Netherworld changed thoroughly. The eighteen hells sparkled dimly while slowly moving in the space.

Netherworld Priest's soul split up and gradually merged with the origins of the eighteen hells, while the great Dao of Pan Gu world boiled. Because of the strong spacequake, a big half of the dark mist above Pan Gu Motherland, which was released from Pan Yu's body, was dispelled, and the blue sky became visible again.

"My Dao... has been attained!" The world quaked as all living creatures worshipped the sky, while Netherworld's laughter echoed through the entire Netherworld.

In the Netherworld, a dazzling golden light descended along with dense purple mist. The white-robed Yu Yu stood on top of the highest mountain in Netherworld, as he sent out a beam of light from a fingertip. A flawless jade bottle floated above the light and swallowed all of the golden light and the purple mist.

Netherworld Priest had merged with the great Dao and attained the immortal, unbreakable result of Dao. Naturally, a measureless natural reward and natural fortune descended on him. But at this moment, the white-robed Yu Yu collected all the natural reward and natural fortune which belonged to Netherworld Priest, without leaving even a slight little bit.

Netherworld Priest made no objection.

On the altar in Pu Ban City, Evil Yu Yu quietly showed up beside Si Wen Ming. He took a jade disc out of his sleeve and said, "Human Emperor, this is an order from Spirit Wa. Please be generous."

Si Wen Ming was collecting the natural fortune which belonged to the humankind with the nine cauldrons, preparing to turn the

nine cauldrons into supreme natural fortune treasures to lay a solid foundation for Great Xia. Seeing Evil Yu Yu, Si Wen Ming frowned, then took over the jade disc from the former's hands and crumbled it.

A wave of light spots merged into Si Wen Ming's forehead. He remained silent for a while, then raised his head and looked at Pan Yu, who was wrapped in the vast black mist. "Are we really doing this? Are we, are we really incapable of defeating Pan Yu?"

Evil Yu Yu looked at Si Wen Ming expressionlessly, then sighed coldly and said, "If Priest Yun and the three 'Pengs' weren't involved in this, we could surely suppress him, then kill him slowly. However, however...Pan Yu is a world creator after all. He is at the level of Saint Pan Gu..."

"For the first time, the natural fortune and natural reward power of the humankind are united. In this way..." Si Wen Ming gave a bitter smile, then solemnly cupped his hands to Yu Yu, bowed slightly, and said, "The Great Xia..."

Evil Yu Yu remained silent for a while, then pointed at the sky, and responded, "The Great Xia shall build temples for Spirit Wa and worship her. Of course, I will be protecting you as well. In the future, even if things can't be entirely satisfactory to you, a branch of Great Xia will live forever.

Together, Si Wen Ming and Evil Yu Yu cast their eyes on Ji Hao, who was fighting against Pan Yu.

The eighteen beams of sword lights had been tearing Pan Yu's body, along with a strong power of reincarnation. Black blood splashed all over the sky, and even Pan Yu couldn't help but moan in pain. Netherworld Priest's pair of swords were pre-world supreme treasures, and were already greatly powerful. At the moment, the two swords had merged with the great Dao of reincarnation, which was generated back when the eighteen hells were created. Within a short span, the power of this pair of swords

had risen by a thousand folds.

Netherworld Priests had become the Hell. No one was controlling the pair of swords, but still, they managed to cause serious harm to Pan Yu.

Far away, the two masters who were hovering around with hesitation, pretending to put up a desperate fight against Pan Yu yet taking no step forward, had their eyes shining suddenly. The pair of swords were Netherworld Priest's spirit treasures! Netherworld priests kept a foothold in the Netherworld and awed the whole world with these swords!

They didn't think that Netherworld Priest would abandon his physical body to merge with his Dao, and leave his greatest treasure in Pan Yu's body!

Watching the eighteen dazzling sword lights flash around Pan Yu and leave more and deeper wounds on Pan Yu's body, the two masters laughed out loud, "These treasures are destined to belong to our sect!"

The two masters burst into sonorous roars. Thick clouds rose from their heads, within which, a golden pagoda was wrapped in a purple mist, glowing with a blinding golden light. A nine-story tower emitted splendid lights. They both transformed into multi-headed and armed shapes and charged at Pan Yu while leaving two streaks of light behind.

A colorful branch and a brightly shining staff smashed on Pan Yu's head violently. For the pair of swords that Netherworld Priest had 'abandoned', the two masters had put forth all their strength this time, even casting their most powerful magic.

The power of quietus was generated. From the vast quietus power, a thriving life-force rose straight into the sky. The two masters transformed into two streaks of golden light and flashed around Pan Yu. Pan Yu couldn't stop howling sas the golden lights left a series of giant holes on his body.

On the altar, Evil Yu Yu glimpsed at Pan Yu. A jade bottle was now held in his hand. Following a dragon roar, the natural fortune which belonged to the humankind and had flown into the nine cauldrons flooded into the jade bottle. A tremor went through Si Wen Ming's body, as blood oozed out of his eyes, mouth, nose, and ears.

Far away from Yao Mountain City, Master Spirit-slaughter quietly stood on a golden flower, with strands of faint colorful mist coiling around his body. Behind him, countless burry colorful figures had been sighing slightly. Their sighs sounded like beautiful melodies that echoed along with the sounds of uncountable musical instruments.

Wisps of golden light descended from the sky. Spirit Wa came to Master Spirit-Slaughter with a frown, her hands holding an exquisite jade bottle.

"Devil, in the future, you will have a place in Pan Yu world." Spirit Wa looked at Master-spirit slaughter with cold eyes while saying reluctantly. "Numberless cultivators will emerge from Pan Gu world. Each of them will go through a trial of the inner devil. You will be controlling the trial. If they can't pass, you can take their primordial spirits."

Master Spirit-slaughter paused in surprise. He gazed at Spirit Wa and said, "We are going to leave...Pan Gu world is like a deep pool, and we don't want to drown in here!"

With a weird, faint smile, Master Spirit-slaughter continued with a low voice, "This world is indeed fabulous. If we could stay, we wouldn't want to leave. But...It's terrifying. Not even we dare to offend Pan Yu. He devours everything, and he can even devour us..."

"If you are willing to give us all the marks and powers of Dao that you attained through devouring the souls of uncountable creatures from the universe, one part of the great Dao of Pan Gu world will

belong to you." Spirit Wa looked at him and said with a gentle voice.

In the meanwhile, two clones of Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei found Ao Bai, Qing Qiang, and the other leaders of the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind. After a series of negotiations, the dragon leaders and phoenix leaders all nodded with dark faces, then followed the words of Priest Dachi and Priest Qignwei with no other choice.

The jade bottle in Priest Dachi's hands drained the natural fortune of the dragon-kind, while Priest Qignwei was also holding a jade bottle, with which, he collected a vast natural fortune from the phoenix-kind.

Unlike human beings, who were chosen by the great Dao of Pan Gu world, the natural fortune of the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind was limited. After losing their natural fortune, all dragons and phoenixes felt their that hearts were empty. They trembled while a chill came creeping them over, as if a true disaster was arriving.

Chapter 1895: Reforge the Jade Disc

Ji Hao's whole body was refreshed, and his heart was never so etherealized.

Strange energy waves flooded out of the Pan Gu sword and flew into Ji Hao's body like glowing jade beads and pearls, inlaid in his body in accordance with a magical pattern.

He felt he was getting stronger and stronger, tougher and tougher. Along with every move he made, his strength grew greater and greater. However, as he became more and more powerful, the influence he made on the surrounding environment by wielding his sword turned minor and minor.

It seemed that his every movement fit the world perfectly. His sword was the world, and the world was his sword. Therefore, when he wielded his sword, the world followed it. When his sword landed on Pan Yu's body, the world smashed on Pan Yu's body as well. Naturally, Ji Hao's sword would no longer cause any harm and disturbance to the world.

This was a magical feeling, and Ji Hao had never felt better. For every move he made, he tried his best; every move he made was almost perfect.

Ji Hao didn't know where this feeling came from, but he felt it had something to do with the 'natural fortune' which had been flowing into his body.

Shaosi had such a dreadful power. With a secret magic, she created a tiny hole on Pan Yu's body and drew out thin strands of Pan Yu's natural fortune, then connected it with Ji Hao.

Pan Yu's natural fortune was vast. He was like a balloon which had a hole on it. The endless natural fortune flew into Ji Hao's body, making every move of his fit the great Dao of nature.

The two masters had transformed into two streaks of golden

light. While madly attacking Pan Yu, they each released three-thousand clones. Six-thousand golden, shining clones composed a tremendous great formation that trapped Pan Yu. Meanwhile, they tried everything they could to reach the eighteen beams of sword lights which had been cutting at Pan Yu.

The pair of pre-world supreme treasures had merged with the original Dao of the eighteen hells. The powers of these swords had broken a bottleneck and achieved a new high. This pair of pure killing treasures now had the qualification to serve as the greatest treasure of a sect. Of course, the two masters would claim that these treasures were 'destined' to belong to them!

Ji Hao gave a resonant roar. Along with a beam of sword light, he rushed up to Pan Yu and fully activated the pre-world magnetic life and death formation. The sword formation shrank, as its immense power was concentrated in the space tens of thousands of meters in radius. The sword formation squeezed Pan Yu and restrained him, tying him up, then launching a storm of attacks on him!

The Pan Gu sword vibrated, and the sonorous sword buzzes cracked the space.

Suddenly, a bottomless hole seemed to be added to the Pan Gu sword, which rapidly absorbed Pan Yu's natural fortune that had flown into Ji Hao's body. Ji Hao felt cold, as the measureless natural fortune was swallowed by the Pan Gu sword in a moment.

In the following moment, the devouring power of the Pan Gu sword directly drilled into Pan Yu's body through Shaosi's magic, and began extracting Pan Yu's natural fortune. Pan Yu immediately sensed something. He burst into raging roars and wielded both arms hurriedly, sending a wave of black thunderbolts towards Ji Hao.

A raging fire was raised from the Pan Gu bell, along with clouds of smoke. Destructive thunderbolts blasted in all directions and rang the bell thunderously. A green light flashed across the bell.

But, even under the protection of the Chaos power released from it, Ji Hao was still injured by the explosions. While shaking, he vomited blood.

Seeing Pan Yu lose his temper, Po and the other priests rushed up and combined their powers, casting all kinds of magics and activating all their treasures to create slight wounds on Pan Yu's skin.

Right at this moment, following the deafening clanks, the eighteen beams of sword lights suddenly flew towards Ji Hao. Corresponding with the Pan Gu sword, the eighteen dazzling sword lights suddenly transformed into eighteen enormous swords and hovered in the air, then towered over Ji Hao's sword formation.

Along with a thunderous sound, Ji Hao's pre-world magnetic life and force sword formation merged perfectly with the eighteen giant swords. The giant swords collapsed, then eighteen mysterious sword gates emerged from the sword formation.

The two masters paused briefly, then burst into furious roars. "Ji Hao kid, how dare you take the great treasures of our sect?"

Ji Hao paused in surprise as well. Suddenly, eighteen mysterious, connected sword gates were added to his sword formation. He clearly sensed that the power of the sword formation had risen by at least one hundred percent!

But, these eighteen sword gates were transformed from Netherworld Priest's spirit treasures...Whey would they choose Ji Hao?

Pan Yu's giant palms descended. The two masters were yelling at Ji Hao without noticing Pan Yu's moves. Along with a ferocious roar from Pan Yu, the two masters were sent flying away and vomited blood. Ninety percent of their six-thousand multi-headed and armed golden clones were crushed by Pan Yu, along with rumbling noises.

Ji Hao growled out loud. Seeing Pan Yu's indiscriminate attacks, he spread the sword formation and blocked his way.

Strands of sword power erupted from the eighteen sword gates. Being supported by the sword gates, the sword power from the Pan Gu sword was added with a vast killing power. The sword power strands struck on Pan Yu's body one after another, covering his body with wounds!

Pan Yu roared with a greater and greater rage. He suddenly raised a finger and shattered all the treasures which belonged to Po and the other priests. Except Ji Hao, all the others were sent flying away by him. They fell to the ground while vomiting blood, without being able to move anymore.

"Whatever... This will cause some damage to the origin of this world, but you little bugs are so annoying!" Pan Yu slowly stretched his body and murmured maliciously, "Let me unlock some of my power to clean you off!"

A dim black light shone out of Pan Yu's erect eye and momentarily swept across the entire world.

The space quaked immediately while the starlight poured down like a rain, being absorbed by Pan Yu's body. He actually started to devour the powers of the natural stars in Pan Gu world.

Deep in the starry void, under a small thatched cottage inside a sphere of purple mist, Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu sat facing each other. A, three-meters wide, blurry jade disc floated between them. Spirit fires had been spurting out from their eyes, nose, ears, and mouths to forge and carve the jade disc exquisitely.

Spirit Wa, Evil Yu Yu, the white-robed Yu Yu, and the few clones of Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei broke the space and arrived almost simultaneously, each holding a jade bottle. Without saying a word, they poured the contents of the jade bottles over the jade disc.

Strands of natural fortune, natural reward power, powers of Dao, marks of Dao...

Visible or invisible, measureless amounts of the most magical and indescribable things were poured out of the bottles, merging into this bright glowing jade disc, which seemed to lack a spirit.

When all the bottles were emptied, the jade disc suddenly let out a thunderous sound.

Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei and Yu Yu leaped up together, then burst into laughter, "With billions of years of efforts, we finally reforged it!"

They turned around and gazed at Pan Gu Motherland

Chapter 1896: The Request of the Mysterious Man

In the Chaos, inside Yu Yu's sword formation, Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu roared in one voice.

The inflexible sword formation was filled with sword power, but suddenly, it turned exceptionally lively, like a stone suddenly turned into a blooming flower. Measureless life-force surged out of the sword formation, making the four sword gates quake slightly. Gradually, sword lights wove into a colorful sea and drowned the three 'Pengs'.

The three 'Pengs' were surprised a little. As they prepared to figure out the reason of this sudden change of the sword formation, the tremendous sword intent erupted from the formation and left deep wounds on their bodies.

The three 'Pengs' growled with rage. Peng Ju threw a bright sky-measuring ruler forward and struck at the sea of sword light. Along with a clear crack, the sky-measuring ruler was shattered into thousands of pieces. Tens of beams of sword light rolled up along his arm and shredded his upper body.

With one strike, Peng Ju was injured severely. Not only his physical body was hurt, his cultivation was also downgraded. He almost fell from this mysterious level of saints.

"No time, go!" The three 'Pengs' each gave a resonant growl and suddenly transformed into three streaks of light, penetrating millions of layers of sword lights within a twinkling of an eye as they attempted to flee back to Pan Gu Motherland.

But, before they flew far enough, a sparkling jade disc emerged above their heads. The three streaks of light bumped into the dis and generated a thunderous noise. The light fell apart, then the three 'Pengs' showed their faces again, staring at the colorless,

small, and simple jade disc, with blood spurting out of their noses, mouths, eyes, and ears. They were dumbstruck.

"It...It shouldn't be here!" Peng Zhi screamed in a dry voice, "Pan Gu died. This jade disc... had collapsed along with him long ago!"

"Indeed. Pan Gu had two supreme treasures, an axe tgat destroyed everything, and a jade disc that created everything." Peng Ju yelled also with a dry voice, "The jade disc was powerful. Without it, Pan Gu would have been torn into pieces by those chaos monsters, no matter how strong he was. Sadly, Pan Gu died in the end. His physical body fell apart, and the jade disc shattered along with him..."

Along with the glistering purple mist, Priest Dachi, Qingwei, and Yu Yu descended. Their clones laughed, cupped their hands, and bowed to each other, then merged into the clouds above the heads of their true bodies while laughing.

Yu Yu pointed at the sword formation and slowly deactivated it, then smiled at the three 'Pengs' and said, "An ordinary man can patch a broken clay jar back together. With the right technique, he can fix it, or fire it into a new jar. The same thing can be done to the jade disc. The pieces were found, so we had a chance to reforge it.

Yu Yu raised his head and gave a long sigh, as if it pained him to look back into the past. "Now, it's finally reforged. Our so many years of efforts weren't wasted...It is to be regretted that this jade disc eventually lost its spirit. We don't know how many years it will take to grow a new spirit!"

In shock, the three 'Pengs' glanced at the jade disc, then they again transformed into three streaks of light suddenly and fled in three directions.

But they didn't make far either this time either. Along with a deep growl of Priest Dachi, a thunderbolt landed on the jade disc from his palm. As the blurry jade disc quaked slightly, three-

thousand, extremely thin strands of mist erupted from it and wove into a giant web. It then dropped and easily captured the three 'Pengs'. Before they could fight back, Priest Dachi wielded his hand, after which, the three 'Pengs' were swirled into the jade disc.

Clouds of mist rose from the jade disc as the defenseless three 'Pengs' were sealed deep in it. On the surface of the jade disc, the hazy figures of three priests emerged, being wrapped tightly in thunderbolts.

Priest Dachi, Qingwei, and Yu Yu burst into bright laughter. They pointed their fingers at one same direction and generated a stream of light, then held the jade disc and flew swiftly to Pan Gu Motherland. The jade disc emitted a beam of light to clear the way, allowing them to move at an exceptionally high speed. Within a second, they arrived at the sky above Pan Gu Motherland from the Chaos.

Ji Hao had spread his sword formation and tied Pan Yu up. Po and the others had combined their powers to attack Pan Yu as well.

Pan Yu was like a bloodthirsty beast who just woke up from a dream and cast all strange kinds of magic. Within a second, at least a thousand strange magic were cast by him. Energy waves flooded out like a tide and forced back Ji Hao and the others, making them vomit blood.

In this chaotic situation, the two masters were pretending to fight Pan Yu. Intentionally or unintentionally, their golden clones composed a great formation that trapped Ji Hao in it. Fifty to sixty percent of their attacks landed in Ji Hao's sword formation, raising a dazzling glow and clouds of mist, pushing him into a difficult position.

Priest Dachi, Qingwei, and Yu Yu glanced at each other, then slightly shook their heads as they cast a meaningful glimpse at the two masters. Without saying a word, they turned the jade disc over and released a beam of Chaos light to strike at Pan Yu's head. Along

with a thunderous sound, the entire Pan Gu world quaked intensely while a formidable power burst from the space, merged into the Chaos light, and struck on Pan Yu's body.

Pan Yu let out a shrill howl as his lower body was devastated by the Chaos light. Countless wounds appeared on his smooth, glass-like skin, with clouds of dark mist and streams of black blood spurting out of them.

In shock, he raised his head, stared at the jade disc. "How can such a powerful treasure exist in this world? It shouldn't be here!" He couldn't help but scream in a hoarse voice.

Before Pan Yu fought back, Priest Dachi and his brothers launched another strike. A wave of Chaos light descended and squeezed torrents of blood out of Pan Yu's body. After shedding of each stream of blood, his power would weaken by a little, and his confidence would dip much lower!

Ji Hao let out a long sigh of relief. He stood in his sword formation and watched Priest Dachi and his brothers while maintaining vigilance towards the two masters.

In his spiritual space, the mysterious man showed up quietly. Through Ji Hao's eyes, he silently gazed at the jade disc for a while, then abruptly began talking. It had been so many years, and the mysterious man hardly took the initiative to talk with Ji Hao.

"Little guy, I have a favor to ask you. It might take you a very long time. Are you willing to help?"

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows in surprise. "Eh? What is it? Just tell me. I will certainly help as long as I can."

The mysterious man remained silent for a short while, then slowly nodded and said, "It's not difficult, but time-consuming. And... Just see if other people around you are willing to do it too. If you promise to help, you can't eat your words afterward. Don't be like Priest Hua and Priest Mu...If I knew they'd be so shameless, I

would have taught them a good lesson in the old days..."

Ji Hao grinned. He raised his head and relaxedly watched Priest Dachi and his brothers beating Pan Yu!

The jade disc released waves of tremendous power and nearly suffocated Pan Yu. They were about to win. The greatest crisis of Pan Gu world was going to be solved for good!

Chapter 1897: Unexpected Twist

Earth core, in the vast expanse of ancient poisonous earth fire...

The battle between Priest Yun and Priest Jun was carrying on, seeming nowhere near ending ever.

Bright lights shone from their heads while the lotuses which contained measureless power bumped into each other one after another, vanishing quietly. Each time two lotuses collided with each other, the life-force of Pan Gu world would weaken by a little. Fortunately, Pan Yu started a massacre in Pan Gu world and killed numberless Yu Clan saints to devour the original power of countless worlds. Pan Gu world absorbed a tremendous amount of original world power. Therefore, it could afford this battle between Priest Yun and Priest Jun.

However, they were both tightly connected with Pan Gu world after all. Each time Pan Gu world took a loss, they would suffer a counterforce and be harmed as well. With the passage of time, their powers withered, and their faces were filled with tiredness.

Slowly, countless wrinkles emerged on the smooth and glowing faces of Priest Yun and Priest Jun. They became hunchbacked, their eyes turned sunken, and they looked like two exhausted old men.

But, the lights above their heads remained strong and bright. More lotuses had been drifting out of the lights, clashing against each other, and vanishing.

The earth fire bubbles in the surroundings exploded one after another, generating waves of energy which were strong enough to destroy natural stars. The energy waves spread in all directions and shook their bodies slightly, but failed to cause them any harm.

While fighting each other, they had been paying close attention to Pan Yu. When they saw Priest Dachi, Qingwei, and Yu Yu

activate the jade disc and suppress Pan Yu, Priest Jun laughed relaxedly, "What else can you say now?"

Priest Yun looked at Pan Yu with a frown. Pan Yu was already covered in wounds. Gradually, he had no power to fight back anymore, and could barely defend himself. Priest Yun chuckled and said, "You and your three disciples did make the long-term efforts, didn't you? You truly managed to reforge this jade disc... With this jade disc, your power can be nearly ninety percent as great as Pan Gu's. Sure, you can easily defeat Pan Yu."

Looking at Priest Yun, Priest Jun responded with a deep voice, "Not only for suppressing Pan Yu, the disc is also meant for you, the three 'Pengs', and..."

"For that idiot, Original Devil, right?" Priest Yun interrupted him. "Hmm, if you really wipe us all out for good, Pan Gu world will be under your sole control, and your spirit will be the world's spirit." Priest Yun clicked his tongue and continued, "So free and unfettered!"

Priest Yun shook his head and sighed sarcastically, "If you uncover all the secrets of this jade disc, you might be able to do what Pan Gu failed to do. Ahyaya... attaining the great Dao through pure strength, breaking all magic with pure strength... reaching straight to the world of eternity through all the barriers!"

Stomping a foot, Priest Yun said coldly, "You have merged with the great Dao of Pan Gu world. As long as Pan Gu world remains existing, you will never die...This world is powerful indeed, but it still has a chance to be destroyed. Therefore, this is not the true eternity..."

Clenching his teeth, Priest Yun carried on with his cold voice, "We can only learn from Pan Gu, to break all the chains with a true, supreme strength. Then we can truly be free, truly be..."

"Are you finished?" Priest Jun interrupted him," You don't need to say this, because I have already known it!"

Priest Yun remained silent for a while, then laughed out loud. While shaking his head, he said, "Alright, we know each other well, so why waste our time talking? But, you still underestimated me...Do you really think that you have guessed every plan of mine?"

Priest Yun burst into wild laughter. Suddenly, he leaped up and transformed into a cold light, then rushed up to Priest Jun and held him tight with both arms. "Now, let's see how your three disciples will die! Pan! Pan Gu's descendants, big deal? They will die when they should, won't they?" Priest Yun snarled.

A strange ripple spread out of Priest Yun's body as he shouted, "The contract has been signed. You shall take action now! Be careful about that jade disc, and remember this, we will evenly split everything!"

Priest Jun stared at Priest Yun with shock. He put forth his strength to struggle, then a thunderous noise could be heard. A terrifyingly strong shockwave burst from between them and spread in every direction, blasting countless earth fire bubbles, nearly crushing the earth core. However, Priest Jun failed to free himself from Priest Yun's arms.

"It's too late!" Priest Yun said blandly, "You spent billions of years to collect the pieces of the jade, then reforged it... But, I also made efforts. Even if I need to give away a share, I will replace you!"

"You want eternity, and I do too. We share the same origin, but we have different souls. We are different. Why do you have to be stronger than me? Why can't I be the stronger one?"

"Evil can never prevail over good!" Priest Jun coldly looked at Priest Yun.

Priest Yun laughed. He squinted at Priest Jun and said, "When I become the ancestor of Dao, I will be the 'good'...In years, you will become the representatives of evil. I will certainly make you go down in history as a symbol of infamy. You will be cursed and spat

on by every generation!"

The ripple released from Priest Yun's body spread swiftly and swept across the entire Pan Gu world within a twinkling of an eye, reaching to the far away Chaos.

A quarter of an hour later, three faintly perceptible powers suddenly emerged, easily penetrating the natural screen of Pan Gu world as they quietly approached Pan Gu Motherland.

Three figures floated above Pan Gu Motherland. The three figures were less than ten miles away from Priest Dachi, Qingwei, and Yu Yu, yet they failed to notice them.

But, Ji Hao was observing the jade disc and immediately saw the three figures. He raised his head, pointed at the three figures, and burst into screams, "Shifu, uncles..."

Before he could even say the words 'be careful', the three figures raised their hands simultaneously. Three differently colored Chaos thunderbolts silently transformed into torrents of lightning bolts and struck at Priest Dachi, Qingwei, and Yu Yu.

Dense clouds rolled above their heads. Actually, they made their reaction once they saw the shock on Ji Hao's face.

A Taiji pattern and an exquisite pagoda rose from Priest Dachi's head while a colorless long streamer and a dragon-tiger ruyi glowed above Priest Qingwei's head. Both of them shielded themselves with top-grade supreme treasures. Yu Yu raised his head in surprise and hurriedly swung a longsword at the sky. The sword was glowing with a misty green light.

Yu Yu didn't have powerful defensive treasures. All his treasures were sharp killing weapons. Facing the sudden attack, he had no choice but to fight back and launch a sword move with full power.

With a tremendous sound, Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei fell to the ground and vomited blood. Yu Yu's face turned ghastly pale as well. In the clouds above his head, the red-robed Yu Yu and Evil Yu

Yu were crushed.

Chapter 1898: Powerful Enemy

Thunderbolts fell like a rain.

The blurry thunderbolts contained a mysterious natural power, that every strike quaked the earth. Even the people who watched this from far away felt their internal organs were on fire and souls were shaken.

The thunderbolts penetrated the space and destroyed everything they touched. When the thunderbolts exploded, Pan Gu Motherland shook like a falling leaf in a strange wind. Even the natural stars seemed to fall from the sky.

Pan Yu raised his head and roared with a great rage, "How dare you grab food from my mouth?"

The Chaos power spread all over the world. The three blurry figures which floated in the air smiled sarcastically at Pan Yu, then concentrated the thunderbolts and covered him up. Countless bolts of thunder exploded on Pan Yu's body, broke his skin and muscles, and brought him am unbearable pain.

Priest Dachi and Priest Qingwei curled under their defensive treasures and couldn't stop vomiting blood. They had suffered tens of Chaos thunderbolts in a row. The foundations of their Dao were shaken; they both took severe losses, each losing billions of years of cultivation.

Yu Yu suffered the worst. He launched a sword strike against the Chaos thunderbolts from the three figures, but felt like a fragile piece of eggshells bumping into a rock. The Chaos thunderbolts merely touched him slightly, but managed to destroy two of his 'three corpse' clones, and harmed his foundation of Dao, severely injuring his body.

If one compared Yu Yu's foundation of Dao to an exquisite jade carving lotus, by now, it was covered in cracks, and could collapse

at any moment. If he weren't generated from Pan Gu's soul, and wasn't protected by Pan Gu world, his results of Dao would have been destroyed, and his soul would have perished because of what happened just now.

Yu Yu sat on the ground with his face paled, and blood flowing out of his eyes, nose, mouth, and ears. The white-robed Yu Yu was also injured badly. He gripped Yu Yu's spirit sword, which was glowing with a green misty light, then spread Yu Yu's sword formation to defend against the endless Chaos thunderbolts.

The two masters had their eyes on Ji Hao's sword formation. They weren't only attracted by the eighteen sword gates,

which were transformed from Netherworld Priest's spirit swords, but also wanted Ji Hao's Pan Gu bell and Pan Gu sword.

However, three mysterious enemies showed up suddenly and attacked Priest Dachi, Qingwei, and Yu Yu with a horrifying power. As Priest Dachi, Qingwei, and Yu Yu were injured seriously, the two masters quivered, suddenly took back all their golden clones, and determinedly charged at the three figures.

"If you die, we'll be in danger too...Our three friends, don't panic. We're helping!" The two masters roared in one voice. They rushed to Priest Dachi, Qingwei, and Yu Yu and activated the pagoda shrouded with a golden light and purple mist, as well as the tower which was shining splendidly, firmly shielding the severely wounded three.

Dazzling thunderbolts descended like a storm. Following a quick series of explosive sounds, the pagoda and the tower quaked, while streams of blood spurted out of the two masters' eyes, nose, mouths, and ears. They fell straight down from the air with their eyes unfocused.

"Great heaven...They are no weaker than Pan Yu!" Suffering a heavy strike, the two masters howled in pain. In terms of the absolute quantity of power, these suddenly emerged three enemies

were much weaker than Pan Yu. After all, Pan Yu had just devoured a giant number of Yu Clan saints and the origins of their worlds. Therefore, the power contained in his body was measureless.

However, in terms of the purity of power and the degree of integration between powers and souls, these three enemies were no weaker than Pan Yu. On the contrary, they were even slightly stronger! Pan Yu raised his power by devouring, due to which reason, his power was too heterogeneous. Unlike him, the three new enemies clearly attained their powers through severe cultivation, that made them extremely powerful!

The jade disc floated in the air and sparkled with Chaos lights. Without being controlled by Priest Dachi, Qingwei, and Yu Yu, this jade disc, which had lost its spirit and instincts, just floated in the air and didn't make any reaction to the three new enemies.

Yu Yu raised his head. He pointed at the jade disc and roared, "The last chance...now..."

Before he finished, hundreds of thunderbolts fell down and struck at him like raging dragons. The second master's tower collapsed, as countless pearls and other gemstones which were inlaid on the tower fell all over the ground like a pouring rain. The second master was nearly scorched. While vomiting blood, he fell straight down to the ground as his head bumped into Yu Yu's chest. Yu Yu was battered down, and could barely breathe.

"Emergency! Together!" Above Pu Ban City, Fuxi and the others burst into resonant shouts and rushed together to the jade disc, their bodies shining with a golden light.

"Interesting! Are these a group of 'priests' who merged with the original Dao with natural reward power?" In the air, one of the three enemies laughed, "Pan Gu's descendants actually took such a shortcut with natural reward power. Aren't they ashamed?

The talking figure swung a palm backward. Countless dark ice

crystals emerged from the air, immediately expanded into hundreds of black ice dragons, roaring in every direction. The ice dragons flashed across the space and penetrated the chests of Fuxi, Xuanyuan, Shennong, Suiren, and the other powerful human beings.

The group of strong human beings began spitting blood. Some of their bodies fell apart, as streams of golden light surged out of their bodies and became pure strands of natural power that merged back into the world.

More dark ice dragons dove down, seeming about to destroy them for good.

On the altar, Si Wen Ming suddenly burst into sonorous roars. The nine cauldrons emitted a dazzling light as they rose in a square formation and bumped into the formidable wave of dark ice dragons.

With a thunderous sound, countless black ice dragons exploded in the air while the nine cauldrons were sent flying tens of miles away. Si Wen Ming vomited blood as he drew back step by step and fell off the altar.

"So difficult...I really shouldn't have lent the natural fortune of our humankind." Si Wen Ming shook his head with a bitter smile, while helplessly looking at the sky. "I just lent it, and now a disaster happened...In the future, I have to tell the young ones...to not be nice, to not lend things."

Po, Guiling, Xuandu, Guangcheng, and the other few priests simultaneously transformed into golden lights and flew to the jade disc, but the Chaos thunderbolts swept across the sky. The three enemies clearly didn't take Po and his brothers and sisters seriously. They made a random move and injured them with the afterwinds of the Chaos thunderbolts, making them cough blood and fall heavily from the sky like stones.

"Pan Gu's descendants...hah! The three enemies laughed, "In the

old days, Pan Gu killed countless of our friends all alone, making their blood flow like rivers. I didn't think that Pan Gu's descendants would be so weak...What right have you to enjoy Pan Gu's world, which contains three-thousand great Dao?"

"Do it." One of the three shouted, "Except these weak human beings, wipe out all the other smart and cultivated beings...Among human beings, all that have attained embryo of Dao must die!"

Chapter 1899: Fix the Dao

The three enemies laughed and unhurriedly extracted Chaos power, creating more and more Chaos thunderbolts above their heads. They seemed to be very confident. Within the span of a few breaths, the sky above the entire Pan Gu Motherland was covered by water-tank-sized Chaos thunderbolts which dazzled and illuminated the world.

After the last wave of sudden attack, Priest Dachi, Qingwei, Yu Yu, and all the others were severely injured. At the moment, Pan Yu was the only one who still had the power to fight back.

The Chaos thunderbolts had still been pouring down on Pan Yu like tidewater. The three combined their powers and gave Pan Yu no breathing space.

Even though Pan Yu had just devoured a giant amount of power, he still needed many years to completely turn the original powers of all the worlds that he devoured into his own power. At the moment, facing the attacks from the three, he suffered a great pain. His was devastated; the two suns and nine moons inside him were broken into pieces, and the spirits of the two suns and nine moons were long gone.

"My three friends..." A leg of Pan Yu was broken by a bolt of thunder. He kneeled on the ground and shouted out loud, "You should have Pan Gu world. I just want to leave safely!"

The three burst into laughter. One of them pointed at Pan Yu and taunted, "Indeed, Pan Gu world is our prey. We have been watching this world for years. But my friend, you are as valuable as Pan Gu world! Your great Dao of devouring is marvelous, and we are all quite interested in it!"

While laughing, the three pulled out a blade, a sword, and a long spear. Each of the three weapons was giving out a suffocating pressure. They teleported themselves to Pan Yu and swung their

weapons at him. With shrill howls, Pan Yu was cut into tens of pieces. His black, glass-like body pieces trembled intensely in the air while his screams echoed across the entire Pan Yu world.

"Since it is so, I started this, and I will finish this. Let's fight!"

Black raging fires rose from Pan Yu's body parts. Streaks of dark flame wove together and created a burning black hole. Pan Yu was seriously infuriated, and also hopeless.

Everything had gone so well. He successfully unsealed himself, devoured the entire Pan Yu world, then arrived in Pan Gu world. In Pan Gu world, he devoured so many descendants of his who betrayed him. He was about to restore his power and reach a new high, but when he complacently prepared to dominate the whole Pan Gu world, these three suddenly showed up and destroyed his dream.

Other than devouring, destruction was the other half of Pan Yu's original great Dao.

He was born with a crazy desire, that while destroying the others, he also wanted to destroy himself. When the three injured him badly, the furious Pan Yu immediately wanted to die together with everyone else.

"I am derived from destruction, and I can rise again from destruction!:" Pan Yu snarled hysterically, "In the future, when I come back from destruction, I will certainly make you pay for what you have done to me today, a hundred times more...But, only if you survive!"

The black hole expanded rapidly as Chaos thunderbolts fell all over the sky. After devouring these Chaos thunderbolts, the black hole swelled like a balloon. Within a blink, it had grown a hundred times larger than Pan Gu Motherland!

As a disastrous devouring power was released from the black hole, everything in the world flew towards it uncontrollably.

The three exclaimed. Facing the desperate Pan Yu, they panicked. At their level, if one put up a desperate fight at all costs, he or she would be able to perish together with tens of enemies!

"Just take out our best treasures!" Growled one of the three, "After this battle, this world will be ours. The supreme great Dao, a hope of eternity, will all be right in front of us!"

The three roared in one voice. Beautiful light shone out of their bodies as quite a few oddly shaped, greatly powerful treasures flew out of their bodies and into Pan Yu's blackhole along with a deafening buzzing noise on their own initiatives.

"The ones who attacked Pan Gu and luckily survived? Where did you..." In the core of Pan Gu Motherland, Priest Jun looked at Priest Yun, whose arms were wrapped tightly around him, and asked.

He then shook his head and smiled, "It's meaningless to ask these questions now. You have planned for years. I knew that you have many plans, but I didn't think that you would take this step. You actually joined hands with them. Aren't you afraid that they might kill you as well?"

Priest Yun smiled at Priest Jun, then responded in a mild tone, "I'm not. Back then, they were wounded so badly by Pan Gu. They fled back to their own worlds and fell in never-ending sleep. They were dying, and without my help, they would never have woken up."

Taking a deep breath, Priest Yun continued blandly, "The three 'Pengs' never showed up in the mortal world all these years. What do you think they were doing? They traveled across the billions of worlds around Pan Gu world and finally found the only existing three lucky ones. I woke them up myself. Their souls are connected with mine; they depend on me for living. How can they kill me?"

"I will kill your three disciples first, then take their souls, recombine them into Pan Gu's soul, and send it into the jade disc,

turning it into the spirit of the disc. After that, the whole Pan Gu world will be under my control. Once I have uncovered all of the jade disc's secrets, I will definitely accomplish what Pan Gu failed to do!" Priest Yun grinned and continued blandly.

"Do you think you can do it?" Priest Jun laughed at him.

Priest Yun seriously nodded and said, "Of course, because I am cruller than Pan Gu...In fact, if he weren't Pan Gu, if it were Original Devil who dominated Pan Gu's body, he would have succeeded already, wouldn't he?"

Looking at Priest Jun, Priest Yun said in that mild tone, "We are keeping each other at bay. You can't do anything but watch your three disciples be slaughtered by my people, and watch me succeed. Don't worry, I will certainly kill you for good with the jade disc. Since then, I will be the only true spirit of Pan Gu world!"

Priest Jun pondered shortly, then smiled and said, "If everything goes as you planned, sure, you would have already succeeded this time. But, since an unexpected factor has been involved in, you don't get to make the final call. I don't know where Spirit Wa found this unexpected factor, but he is really an unexpected factor..."

A dazzling light erupted from Priest Jun's body and pierced into Priest Yun's body like countless blades and swords.

"Come on, the great Dao is breached. Let's fix it together...If my disciples win, I will surely be breaking out of the Dao...If those three win, you will eventually control the world...Let's see which one of us has the luck!"

Priest Yun cursed in rage, but before he could make a move, both he and Priest Jun transformed into a streak of clear light and disappeared into the world.

...

In the air, Ji Hao felt his whole body get warm. The tremendous

power from the three could no longer hinder him, and he could again freely control his body.

What was even greater, the jade disc flew to him, transformed into three-thousands strands of mist, and flew into his forehead.

Chapter 1900: The Final Strike

The three-thousand strands of mist flew into Ji Hao's body and shook his soul intensely. His embryo of Dao began falling apart silently, turning into thin wisps of mist that merged into his body.

Within a second, his soul and physical body had merged perfectly.

Streams of Chaos power were generated from every corner of his body, strong and never-ending. Ji Hao never felt so refreshed and clear-minded. He felt that only at this moment his body truly belonged to him, as if he was freed from a heavy chain and woken up from a nightmare.

The Pan Gu bell collapsed, transformed into a strong stream of Chaos power, and flew into Ji Hao's body.

The bell was a supreme treasure forged from Buzhou Mountain, which was Pan Gu's spine. After merging with the bell, Ji Hao felt strong heat flows surging inside his body, and a strong power boiled and roared inside him. The power was too strong, that he couldn't control it yet.

Ji Hao was suddenly enlightened. Defending himself with the Pan Gu bell was like putting the cart before the horse. Since he was cultivating his Pan Gu body, he should have merged the Pan Gu bell into his body long ago. He was the bell, and the bell was him. After merging with the bell, he, Ji Hao, had Saint Pan Gu's unbreakable spine!

"I still feel hacking people with an axe is better!" In Ji Hao's spiritual space, his embryo of Dao had fallen apart and his soul had merged with his physical body, leaving the mysterious man sitting in the middle with crossed legs, occupying the entire spiritual space.

"Axe, strong, potent. That's a weapon for a man...Things like

swords are a little girly!" The mysterious man said.

"Girly? Where did you learn this word?" Torrents of Chaos power coiled around Ji Hao's body while strands of mist surged out of his body and dispelled waves of Chaos thunderbolts which struck at him.

"Hmm, that is not important." The mysterious man slowly stood up and moved his feet, standing with a sturdy posture as he said, "Now, we should think about how to cut these three b*stards!"

Ji Hao slowly raised the Pan Gu sword. An extremely sharp sword intent erupted from the sword and next, all the Chaos thunderbolts which covered the entire Pan Gu Motherland were cut broken by extremely thin sword lights. The Chaos power leaked out, turning harmless.

Pan Yu's black hole was still expanding, and the three had been trying their best to deal with it. Seeing Ji Hao approach them step by step with his body wrapped in rolling Chaos power and a bright light, they all laughed out loud, "Doesn't Pan Gu world have warriors? Kid, how dare you?"

One of them carelessly waved a hand and generated shreds of dark-blue fire. The fire transformed into a wave of flame birds that dove down to Ji Hao.

The Pan Gu sword clanked. Ji Hao raised the sword and wiped out all the flame birds in the sky. The flame birds were crushed while wisps of blue fire lingered on the sword, but failed to do any harm to the sword.

The three frowned and turned to Ji Hao seriously.

Streams of Chaos power rose from the Pan Gu sword. It was a sword, but the Chaos power around it wove into a giant axe which was covered in faint patterns, releasing a despairing intent of killing.

"This is..." The three trembled intensely. This axe reminded

them of their worst nightmare, and also made them recall the old battleground which had blood flowing into oceans, and corpses flying all over the sky.

That giant, who was more frightful than all Chaos monsters, was holding this axe and slaughtering the Chaos monsters who attacked him.

"You can't be him!" Roared one of the three, "He died! He died for good! His souls split up into three. Look, those three! His body broke into countless pieces. It can't be wrong, can't be wrong!"

"You can't be him! You're so weak, but he was so strong!" Another one screamed, "You..."

Ji Hao raised the Pan Gu sword, as waves of sword intent swept across the sky and cleaned off all the Chaos thunderbolts.

"I'm afraid that I can't kill them!" Ji Hao said to the mysterious man, "You see, just now, I used all my power, even my sword formation. I can hurt Pan Yu, but I can't hurt his origin. I am too weak, and they are too powerful. If I can't hurt their origins, no matter how many times I cut them, the result would be the same!"

"Unless you have the power at their level!" The mysterious man laughed, "You don't have it now, but I can lend it to you..."

The mysterious man closed his eyes, and his long hair fluttered in the air.

Ji Hao closed his eyes too and raised the sword high.

Shaosi was still casting the secret magic. Through the invisible thin thread of natural fortune between Ji Hao and Pan Yu, Pan Yu's natural fortune had been flowing ceaselessly into Ji Hao's body. Behind Ji Hao, the mill of Dao emerged. Before, it was composed from the Dao of destruction and creature, with only two millstones. But now, it had three-thousand layers.

Some of the three-thousand millstones were spinning, slowly or fast, stably or disorderly, clockwise or anticlockwise, and some

were pausing. Clear beams of light wrapped around the mill. Once Ji Hao activated the mill of Dao, a ridiculous strong power suddenly came from the thin thread of natural fortune.

Ji Hao's every single cell was cheering at this moment, as his body greedily absorbed this power like a desert absorbing water from a rain. A thick Chaos power surged out of his body as he began growing taller and stronger bit by bit.

As Ji Hao's body was growing, Pan Yu's black hole shrank quickly.

Without being suppressed by the three, Pan Yu's black hole shrank faster and faster, while his screams sounded from it. He cursed and roared hysterically, murmuring in panic. No one understood what he was trying to say.

Ji Hao was growing inch by inch. Three-hundred meters, a thousand meters, ten-thousand meters...

At the same time, the three were drawing back, step by step. Their faces were filled with desperation, even though they couldn't believe their own eyes.

From Ji Hao, they sensed something that they feared the most. That power, which was more terrifying than a nightmare emerged and came back to this world bit by bit...

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man raised his right hand and swung it forward.

Ji Hao sighed slightly; he felt so clear-minded. Heavily, he swung the Pan Gu sword forward.

Sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-growl, everything-perish, all living beings reincarnate...

The five moves were combined, and the Pan Gu sword created a frosty beam of light which was sharp enough to tear everything in the world. Ji Hao's skin suddenly cracked, and blood spurted out of his wounds. The power of this strike had gone beyond the limits of

his physical body, that once he made the move, he had already injured himself.

Fortunately, Pan Yu's power was flowing into his body, fixing his injured body.

Blood flooded out of the bodies of the three as Ji Hao cut them into six pieces.

Next, Ji Hao cut again...Again and again and again. Slowly yet determinedly, Ji Hao swung the Pan Gu sword over and over again. At the moment, he was powerful enough to cut everything in the world.

This was the true combined move of the five... called 'Extinction'!

Chapter 1901: Go on A Long Journey

Early spring, the grasses were tall and the nightingales were flying in the air...

In farmlands, countless farmers worked hard to keep the crops growing. On grasslands, livestock were strolling in groups, looking like large clouds drifting over a green ocean. High up in the air, warriors mounted on fierce birds and flew across. The shrill screams of the mounts tore apart the clouds in the sky and made the children chuckle and chase on the ground.

Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming stood by a large riverside by side, gazing at the boats on the river. A fisherman put a hook into the water and caught a feet long large fish. The old fisherman shouted out loud, and he was nearly dragged into the water by this large struggling fish. A strong boy rushed up from behind, gripped the fish grills, and pulled this fish up to the boat, then knocked it out.

This boy was a peak-level Senior Magus, but judging by his young face, he was only about thirteen years old!

After the establishment of the Great Xia, the natural fortune of the humankind thrived. Within a couple of years, the population increased rapidly, and more and more talented ones emerged among the young generation. The comprehensive strength of the humankind was rising at a scarily high rate.

Especially after Ji Hao killed the three foreign world creators, their magical natural fortune powers merged with the humankind. Thus, the humankind rose even faster. The changes which happened in the past few years even shocked Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming!

"Uncle, don't blame me for throwing away my job. It's just...I owe somebody a favor, and need to return it!" Ji Hao lazily looked at Si Wen Ming while handing a large dragon skin scroll to him. "Here, the Magi Palace is going to divide into nine halls. This is the

organizational system, and the evaluation standard of Senior Magi based on the nine cauldron tests, as well as the power distribution between the human emperor and the Magi Palace, all in here."

"I racked my brain, uncle." Ji Hao pointed at his head and yelled at Si Wen Ming, "Do you think these were easy to come up with? Especially because, I'll leave, and so will the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind. The heaven..."

Ji Hao raised his head and glanced at the sky, then lowered his voice and said, "The heaven will be under the control of Donggong and Ximu, but all the star kings are Supreme Magi from our humankind. I've also put some of my thoughts in there for your reference!"

Si Wen Ming seriously took over the dragon skin scroll and sighed, "Are you really leaving? Aren't you going to stay and help me? We have a lot of work to do for Great Xia."

Ji Hao remained silent and then chuckled.

What could he do? Could he stay? But, he had promised the mysterious man! What the mysterious man asked Ji Hao to do wasn't difficult, but was extremely time-consuming, and needed luck. He made the promise, so he had to do it!

Looking at Ji Hao's smiling face, Si Wen Ming helplessly shook his head. He then raised his head and gazed into the sky. His eyes were sharp as a pair of swords, seeming to penetrate the sky. "Alright, you'll leave with a batch of people, and they will all be human beings. Many other splendid worlds exist outside Pan Gu world...When the situation in Great Xia is stabilized, I'll take a batch of people to travel outside the world as well."

"Uncle, what do you want to do?" Ji Hao looked at Si Wen Ming with surprise.

Si Wen Ming also chuckled and responded happily, "For our humankind, of course, I'll try my best to plant the flag of Great Xia

all over the universe."

Clang!

The Xuanyuan sword quaked intensely on Si Wen Ming's waist. An endless sword intent spread from it and made the Pan Gu sword buzz on Ji Hao's waist.

Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao each put a hand on the hilts of their swords to comfort these two combative fierce weapons.

Si Wen Ming smiled and continued, "Those non-humankind beings came into our world, so of course we can go out and explore too! In the future, Emperor Fuxi, Emperor Shennong, and Emperor Xuanyuan will be leading the humankind to guard Pan Gu world forever, while the others will travel with me!"

Ji Hao nodded.

Emperor Fuxi was wise, so he would be controlling the whole situation.

Emperor Shennong was mild and honest, and could win over people's hearts.

Emperor Xuanyuan was fierce and decisive, so he would conquer the world.

Under their joint leadership, Great Xia would be stabilized and the humankind would have no worries.

More importantly, after what happened years ago, Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, Priest Yu Yu, and the two masters all suffered severe injuries. By now, they had all closed their dojos to focus on their recovery.

Except for Spirit Wa, the group of powerful human beings who broke into the level of saints with the Praying and Sanctification altar were the strongest beings in Pan Gu world now, while Spirit Wa was the protector of Great Xia. What was to worry about?

Perhaps, in the future, alarming affairs would still happen. But in

the future...

When Si Wen Ming marched out of Pan Gu world with a human force, and when he led hundreds of millions of Supreme Magi to conquer countless worlds...who could predict the future?

Standing by the river, Ji Hao said a lot to Si Wen Ming. Ji Hao had been smiling faintly, but the expressions on Si Wen Ming's face changed constantly. Sometimes, he lowered his head and seemed to be lost in his thoughts; at other times, he took out pen and ink and wrote down what Ji Hao said on the dragon scroll.

Several days passed, and Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming stood by the river the whole time.

Abruptly, Man Man's happy voice could be heard from a distance away, "Ji Hao, Ji Hao, we've finished packing. I emptied my Abba's cellar, and also brought the best winemaker from Zhu Rong Family. Ayaya, and many other things, all prepared."

A gentle gust of wind blew across. Shaosi stood on a hill as she smilingly looked at Man Man rush towards Ji Hao. Her long hair fluttered in the air.

Seeing the cheerful and energetic Man Man, Si Wen Ming laughed. "I still remember the first time we met in Southern Wasteland...I never thought you would be the one who would save Pan Gu world!" He said.

Ji Hao let out a heavy sigh. Slapping on his own chest, he gave a bitter smile and said, "Pan Yu's black hole is sealed inside me, and the three 'Pengs' also fell asleep inside me, while the Original Devil is sealed in my heart as well. After saving Pan Gu world...I have devils all over my body. Think about this, I should really go away, in case these evil things wake up someday to cause troubles again!"

Si Wen Ming smiled as Man Man jumped into Ji Hao's arms.

Ji Hao put an arm around Man Man's shoulders and looked at Si Wen Ming, whose eyes were filled with worry. He laughed, "Uncle,

don't worry. When I... When I have fulfilled my promise, all Pan Yu had will become mine. By then, the three 'Pengs', Original Devil...Eventually, someone will handle them."

Si Wen Ming gave Ji Hao a meaningful glance, then slapped his shoulder hard and said, "In this case, travel safe!"

Ji Hao smiled. He clenched his fingers towards Pan Gu sword and caused a loud buzzing noise. A fist-sized blurry axe was dragged out of the sword by him. He handed this tiny axe to Si Wen Ming and said, "This is a small part of the origin of Saint Pan Gu's axe. He created Pan Gu world with this axe. Uncle, put it in the nine cauldrons, and let them nourish it. For building the Pan Gu Motherland shield or defending against enemies, it'll always be helpful."

"Feed it with lots of pre-world divine materials. Perhaps, in the future, Great Xia will have a great treasure to guard its natural fortune. It will be a good thing."

Patting Man Man's head, Ji Hao solemnly bowed to Si Wen Ming, then turned around and walked away with large steps, without glancing back.

Man Man chuckled and also bowed to Si Wen Ming, then hurriedly caught up with Ji Hao.

"Ji Hao, Ji Hao, are we going out to play? With so many people? Ah, are we going to be like those non-humankind beings? Are we going to many worlds, to fight many people and then occupy their territories and rob them?"

"Fighting wars is the most interesting thing to do...No one dares to fight me in Great Xia. It's really boring here. We should just go out to bully the daring ones! That'll be fun!"

"And, Pan Gu world is small. We've seen all of it already. We should go find some new and interesting things!"

Ji Hao walked to Shaosi, then took her hand with one hand and

Man Man's with the other. Then, the three of them walked away side by side.

"But Man Man, one day, you'll be missing Pan Gu world." Ji Hao's laughter could be heard from the wind. "At that time, don't cry...After all, I don't know when will we come back, or when we can come back. If we're lucky, this may take a hundred, or two hundred years... But if we are unlucky...Who knows? Really, no one can know."

Outside Pu Ban City, an enormous troop was waiting for Ji Hao.

Mr. Crow was leading a giant number of Gold Crow warriors.

Shermie was with a group of carefully selected water-kind elites.

Wuzhi Qi and Yuanli brought an army of spirit creatures.

Heng Luo, Stone, Treeman, and the other old friends of Ji Hao from Southern Wasteland mingled in the crowd. Heng Luo was sitting on a branch of Treeman, chewing fruits while throwing nuts towards Stone's head. Peels and nuts were thrown all over the ground by her.

Feng Xing stood aside, his face filled with calmness and happiness. He was holding hands with Yemo Shanye.

Yemo Shanye had a baby bump. She smiled gently as she rested a hand on her belly. Standing behind her with sour faces was the group of non-humankind beings who were taken captive by Ji Hao years ago, but then luckily survived under his protection.

Obviously, they didn't want to leave Pan Gu world with Ji Hao.

Pan Gu world was beautiful, rich, and peaceful, that people could now live in here with contentment. Who would be willing to abandon the good life and step into the vast Chaos, to again travel homelessly, without even knowing what would happen on the next day?

These non-humankind beings were used to good lives. Why

would they ever be willing to give up the rich life in Pan Gu world?

But, they were afraid of the powerful ones...

They glanced at Yu Mu, who stood aside and was smilingly supervising them. Then, they looked at Yi Di, who was pulling open his bow, and the muddleheaded Taisi, who yawned on the side...

Reluctantly, these non-humankind beings lowered their heads. None of them dared to say a thing!

After all, even Pan Yu was sealed by Ji Hao. What could they say? They clearly understood that Ji Hao would never leave them in Pan Gu world, which now belonged 'solely' to Great Xia.

Didn't the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind start moving? Except for the four dragon kings and four phoenix masters who would stay in Pan Gu world, the other main forces of the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind had each chosen a nearby world, and begun moving to and invading them!

Even the pure Pan Gu descendants dared not to compete against the humankind, but chose to leave Pan Gu world. So, what could these non-humankind beings possibly do but leave?

Large groups of people from Gold Crow Clan and Zhu Rong Family stood a distance away as they quietly looked at Ji Hao.

Zhu Rong, Ji Xia, Qingfu, and the other from Ji Hao's families and friends had been quietly looking at him. They knew that Ji Hao was leaving, but they didn't know why.

However, none of them made an objection. By now, every word or action from him could affect the entire Pan Gu world. Therefore, no one presented an objection, or tried to persuade Ji Hao to stay. After all, they knew that Ji Hao had a reason to do this.

Holding the hands of Shaosi and Man Man, Ji Hao walked slowly to his families and friends.

The three of them kneeled on the ground and kowtowed to Zhu Rong, Ji Xia, and Qingfu respectively. Ji Xia and Qingfu put hands on their heads, then prayed to the natural gods for them according to the Southern Wasteland tradition.

Zhu Rong directly transformed into a raging fire and danced an ancient ritual dance for Ji Hao, Man Man, and Shaosi. The dance was created by ancient gods for connecting with nature.

Strands of natural powers gathered towards Zhu Rong. Surrounding him, all Zhu Rong Family people and Gold Crow people began singing an old song.

...

The golden bridge and the East Emperor's chariot had merged into one. Controlled by Ji Hao's great power, the chariot expanded into a city, which was tens of thousands of miles wide. Carrying his followers and millions of unhappy non-humankind beings, the city disappeared into the Chaos.

Pan Gu world was right behind them. With the combined power from the chariot and the golden bridge, the city covered billions of miles in less than a second.

After a month of flying, Pan Gu world still looked tremendous from the city. It didn't become smaller in people's sights, not even by a little bit.

After the war against Pan Yu, Pan Gu world absorbed measureless original world power. Thus, Pan Gu world had started a rapid period of growth. Every day, Pan Gu world would expand for hundreds of millions of miles, and the entire world was becoming more and more beautiful.

Countless non-humankind beings stood on the edge of the city, looking at Pan Gu world while weeping endlessly.

They really couldn't understand this. With Ji Hao's power and all of the great contributions he had made, he should have stayed in

Pan Gu world, standing high above the masses to control everything. Why would he stupidly leave Pan Gu world for the Chaos with so many followers?

What was good about the Chaos? Only these non-humankind beings knew so clearly about the endless dangers and risks in the Chaos, and how boring and hazardous a long journey in the Chaos could be! In the non-humankind history, the route of every expedition journey was paved with corpses!

Suddenly, the chariot was stopped by a gentle power.

From a splendid colorful glow, Spirit Wa and Fuxi slowly came out, wriggling their long snake tails.

Ji Hao hurriedly walked up and solemnly bowed to them.

Fuxi smiled and nodded at him, her eyes filled with delight.

Spirit Wa slowly came to Ji Hao, then leaned forward and gazed into Ji Hao's eyes. Her eyes were sparkling like stars. She seemed to be able to see the silent, mysterious man through Ji Hao's eyes in his spiritual space.

"Go and come back as soon as possible...Find what you are looking for...After all, Pan Gu world only belongs to Pan Gu!"

Spirit Wa reached out a hand and gently patted Ji Hao's head.

As the colorful light flashed across the Chaos, Spirit Wa and Fuxi left quietly, just like how they showed up.

The East Emperor's chariot shone with a golden light and flew deep into the Chaos. Ji Hao stood on top of the chariot as he silently gazed at the surrounding Chaos tides.

"Alright, old man, we have now set sail...We are going to find a world embryo that is strong enough to contain this piece of your soul and allow you to grow again...Oh, we do need luck for that!"

"When do you think we can come back to Pan Gu world? By then, my Abba, Amma will be gone...I will meet my families from later

generations."

"I hope they can still remember my name till then!"

"Till then, even if my stories have become legends, I hope they can still remember my name!"

"I hope the bloodline of my family can still continue till then, and I hope the names of my families and my friends can still be glowing in the starry void of Pan Gu world, like the stars in the sky!"

Table of Contents

- The Magus Era
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 1801: Dragon and Devil Together
  - Chapter 1802: Dragon Mother's Story
  - Chapter 1803: Deep In the Chaos
  - Chapter 1804: The Jade Board With A Priest Sealed in It
  - Chapter 1805: A Man Who Lived for Booze And Meat
  - Chapter 1806: Tong Jiong's Three Treasures
  - Chapter 1807: The Three 'Pengs' Story
  - Chapter 1808: Tong Jiong's Guess
  - Chapter 1809: The Non-humankind Dispatches Troops
  - Chapter 1810: Associate With the Evils
  - Chapter 1811: Everyone Has A Plan
  - Chapter 1812: Shocking Encounter
  - Chapter 1813: Dragon Mother's Old Friends
  - Chapter 1814: Lazy Tong Jiong
  - Chapter 1815: Priest Sadness
  - Chapter 1816: Priest Sadness Cries
  - Chapter 1817: Besieged by Three
  - Chapter 1818: Tong Jiong's Suggestion
  - Chapter 1819: Heaven Master Tong Jiong
  - Chapter 1820: Free Tong Jiong
  - Chapter 1821: All Draw Back
  - Chapter 1822: Suddenly Turn Hostile
  - Chapter 1823: The Evil One
  - Chapter 1824: Peel It off from the Great Dao
  - Chapter 1825: Creating the Formation
  - Chapter 1826: Pre-world Magnetic Life and Death
  - Chapter 1827: Dragon Mother Returns
  - Chapter 1828: First Try
  - Chapter 1829: Cut the Treasure
  - Chapter 1830: The Sword Lights Break the Space
  - Chapter 1831: Shock Dragon Mother with the Sword
  - Chapter 1832: The Armies Reach Yao Mountain City

Chapter 1833: Supreme Dragon
Chapter 1834: Guards
Chapter 1835: Evil Yu Yu's Warning
Chapter 1836: The Beginning of Slaughter
Chapter 1837: Seeking Their Doom
Chapter 1838: Yu Meng Visits
Chapter 1839: Yu Meng's Suggestion
Chapter 1840: Tentative Attack
Chapter 1841: Seal the Camp
Chapter 1842: Emperor Xun's Awareness
Chapter 1843: Dragon Mother Comes Back
Chapter 1844: The Three Friends From Mount Skeleton
Chapter 1845: A Discussion About 'Commanders' Battle'
Chapter 1846: Tit For Tat
Chapter 1847: The Evil and the Devil Against Each Other
Chapter 1848: Ji Hao Watches the Fight
Chapter 1849: Fight to Death
Chapter 1850: Blacklist
Chapter 1851: Killing Each Other
Chapter 1852: Borrow A Knife, Butcher the Devils
Chapter 1853: Xing Tian Cuts the Devil
Chapter 1854: Kill the Devil Together
Chapter 1855: Wild Xing Tian
Chapter 1856: Keep Quite Out of Fear
Chapter 1857: The Devil Moves All Living Beings
Chapter 1858: The Three 'Pengs' Against The Original Devil
Chapter 1859: Old Stories
Chapter 1860: Priest Yun Talk to the Devil
Chapter 1861: Priest Yun Takes An Action
Chapter 1862: Tusks
Chapter 1863: Efforts
Chapter 1864: The Lost Holy Blood
Chapter 1865: The Suns and Moons Rise Together
Chapter 1866: The Cauldrons Guard the World
Chapter 1867: Yu Yu's Talisman
Chapter 1868: Trapped Saints
Chapter 1869: Raise the Cauldrons
Chapter 1870: The Three 'Pengs' Make a Surprise Attack
Chapter 1871: Dragon Mother Suddenly Attacks

Chapter 1872: Monsters
Chapter 1873: With Up with A Start
Chapter 1874: Eat Their Words
Chapter 1875: Twist the great Dao
Chapter 1876: Share A Bitter Hatred of the Enemy
Chapter 1877: All Make Efforts
Chapter 1878: Pan Yu
Chapter 1879: A Debt Needs to be Paid
Chapter 1880: Pray Together
Chapter 1881: The Great Xia of the Humankind
Chapter 1882: The Masters Trap Themselves
Chapter 1883: Pan Yu's Fierce Power
Chapter 1884: Suck
Chapter 1885: Join Hands in Desperation
Chapter 1886: No Solution
Chapter 1887: Great Sword
Chapter 1888: Die Here
Chapter 1889: Consumption
Chapter 1890: Nothing Worse then Death
Chapter 1891: Together
Chapter 1892: Netherworld Priest Fights
Chapter 1893: The Eighteen Hells
Chapter 1894: Wildly Beating Gongs and Drums
Chapter 1895: Reforge the Jade Disc
Chapter 1896: The Request of the Mysterious Man
Chapter 1897: Unexpected Twist
Chapter 1898: Powerful Enemy
Chapter 1899: Fix the Dao
Chapter 1900: The Final Strike
Chapter 1901: Go on A Long Journey